



/23, 07:55] Lynne: *A BLEEDING HEART: LALIMI*

I never thought life would be so difficult without my mother .yes I have a filthy rich dad but that's not what I want .I want love and protection from my dad.i want him to say you look beautiful my angel every morning when he is dropping me off at school.I want to celebrate all my birthdays with him.Sometimes I feel like my dad doesn't love me or is it because I remind him of my mother .So i was sent to a boarding school when i was five years old. And I am currently in grade 11 .No one from my family has ever visited me .Even on school holidays no one comes to fetch me .But I have made piece with that.I have raised my self .With the school expenses I wouldn't lie my father pays everything .He makes sure I have everything I need.But all of that doesn't matter to me .I just need love and affection from him.So when i was five year old i was told that my mother died when she was giving birth to me .So basically I was raised by my stepmother. She was such a sweet and loving lady .But I heard she died and dad now has a new wife and they have kids.Ever since I was a child I have been having nightmares. And they are always the

same .Some days I would dream of a woman wearing all black and asking me for directions caring a baby covered in blood .Some days I would dream of an old woman in a cage looking hungry and asking me to help her out of the cage she was in but when I try to reach to her I hear footsteps and a male saying she must be killed and the old women would say run run my beautiful angel because if he finds you here he will kill you and I would wake up sweating. I have only told my friend Nomhle about my so called nightmares. Sometimes when am seating alone I would feel the presence of that women from my dreams .

As soon as I have 5 followers I will start posting chapters.Please show some love

[06/23, 07:56] Lynne: INSERT 1

Lalimi's POV

As I was walking at the cemetery I saw a baby girl

crying. What's confusing about it is that it looked exactly like me .

Me: Hey why are you crying

(When I try to touch it .it suddenly turned into a snake .it tries to bite me and I ran away screaming for help)

Nomhle :Lali!Lali!Lali! Wake up ...are you okay

(And then I open my eyes)

Me: Oh my gosh ...I just had a dream ...And ...and it was a different one this time.

Nomhle: What was it about(asking concerned)

(When I try to recall the dream ...suddenly I feel a cold running down my spinal .And then it was lights on for me .Everything just turned dark like I am in a different world)

- After 2hours -

I was woken up by the sound of the machines.

When I open my eyes I am in the school's hospital.

Nomhle:Thanks god you are awake.How are you feeling now.

Me:I don't know exactly. I just don't know what's going on with me .

Nomhle :Don't you think maybe you need to see a professional regarding...

Me:What do you mean exactly (I asked with a bit of attitude since I was slowly getting worked up)

Nomhle:Friend you know I don't mean that ...I mean you can consult a psychologist regarding your situation.

Me: I would really appreciate it if you could just leave me alone .I need some time alone

Nomhle:But fr...

Me:Not now please

(Guys I don't mean to be rude but right now I am really confused about what is happening in my life. And I just can't deal with Nomhle right now.But tomorrow I think I have to apologize to her I think i was a bit rude to her)

•Mr Kane's POV•(Lali's dad)

Hey guys am sure y'll hate me now .Because am not a good father to Lali but I have my own personal reasons why I can't have her near me which you will soon find out as time goes on .So I am a well known and respected Businessman .I own both legal and illegal businesses internationally and am also very dangerous no one dares to mess with me .Regarding my late second wife .She had to die .Actually I had to kill her since she was starting to interfere in my personal businesses that doesn't include her .So I have three daughters (Zia,Ana and daisy) excluding Lali .That thing cannot be my daughter. And three sons (Layne,Tony and jase)you will know them as the time goes on .After I killed my second wife so I got married to this beautiful and loving women. She is not judgemental and she also abide by my rules .

(Was on a phone call with one of my suppliers)

Me :J e veux questions mon mécanicien soit livré aujourd'Hui, suis un je clair?(I want my merchandise delivered today am I clear?)

The guy:certainement monsieur...(definitely sir)

(And then I dropped the call)

-Enter my wife looking pale .I can tell by looking at her face that she was angry -

Me:Hey what's wrong my love?

Mrs Kane:I just received a call from Lali's principal.He said that Lali fell unconscious and she is in the school's hospital. But she has woken up

(I was sweating the moment she mentioned Lali's name.i was just praying it not that time yet)

Me:But ...but she is not yet 18 ...Her...

(My personal assistant enters)

Me:Erh ...my love we will talk later at home .I have an important meeting to go to.

Please like and comment

For more

Please show some love people

[06/23, 07:57] Lynne: Insert 2

Lali's POV

it is during the break time and I was waiting for nomhle by the taps because she went to the bathroom .Today I feel better than yesterday. Am sure y'll are wondering what race I am and why my name is Lalimi. So basically my mother was a coloured and Dad is white .So my mother told me that Lalimi was my grandmother's name .Oh here comes Nomhle.

Me:You took your time hey

(Smiling. But she just kept quiet. I guess she is still hurt.)

Me:erh...rh Nomhle I would like to apologize to you .For the way I was talking to you .And for pushing

you away whereas you care about me.

(She keeps quiet. Okay this is starting annoy me now. I was trying to be nice here and now she want me to beg her ass. Ay man she is really testing my patience. Before I snap at her let me just go.)

Nomhle:Wait...

(Right when i was about to leave)

Nomhle:I forgive you .We have been through worst I can't just let a minor argument separate us.I love you and care for you so please when you are going through alot don't push me away .you are like my sister. You are my only friend in my life .

(Okay ...so basically I was now in tears. She is the only one who gives me love,affection, care and support. When I came here she took care of me .when my family neglected me. So I just hugged her and we remained like that for some.)

Nomhle :Okay let go of me you cry baby

(We were now laughing)

Me:I love you

Nomhle:You know I love you more

Me:No...

Nomhle:That's not up for discussion...I L O V E Y O
U M O R E.

(She was shouting the "I love you "part .So I was
now in stitches.)

-The school bell rings and we go to for our lesson-

<At Mr KANE'S house >

Mr kane:mmh it smells nice here.What are you
cooking.

Mrs:My son's favourite meal .Since he is in matric
he needs all the pampering.

Mr kane:Lucky him ...pity me I don't have a mother
to cook for me (Sarcastically).

(Mrs Kane just basted into laughter)

Mrs:Oh please stop ...I can't breathe now .You such
a cry baby because yesterday we ate your favorite
meal.

Mr :erh let me go and freshen up. I need to check up on her in the warehouse

Mrs:You know I have a bad feel about this whole Lali fainting saga.

Mr:You shouldn't worry my love .And tomorrow I will be meeting with the father of a son that will marry her.

Mrs:That's great but she is not yet 18 and hasn't finished school.

Mr:Don't worry the day she finishes matric will be the day she gets married and out of our lives completely.

Mrs :Mhh ok

Mr:Okay let me go now.

Mrs :Please be careful my love that thing might harm you.

°in the girl's hostel °

Nomhle:Ay grade 11 is very stressful

Me:yeah hey am just glad tomorrow we are starting with the final exams .

Nomhle:Can I ask you something

Me:Sure

Nomhle:Mhh can ...can ...you like ...vis it my family and I for the December holidays ?

(I felt like crying .I just didn't know what to say .It will be more of my first time I leave this building since I came here.)

Nomhle:Am not trying to maybe...

Me:No don't worry am very happy...very happy .You know that I have never left this place .So it a big thing for me .I just can't wait

Nomhle:Pew...am glad you agreed.My mom can't wait .

(OK that was a bit weird why would her mother want to meet me .But anyways I just agreed for the sake of my friend I didn't want to turn her down)

Me:I think we have learned enough ...And am also feeling sleepy goodnight.

Nomhle:You don't even need to study ...You are so smart. Anyways goodnight.

Please like and comment

[06/23, 07:57] Lynne: Insert 3

At the Kanes

Kane's wife woke up and made breakfast for everyone and also setted the table.

Zia:Hey mom.

Ana:(just kiss her on the cheek)

Daisy:hey mom

Mrs Kane :Hello my darlings.

Layne:J hoo mom today am writing my first paper.J ust can't wait to finish and done with school.

Tony and jase:Lucky you ...we are still in grade 11 and we are extremely tired.

Mr Kane: Good morning family .

(They all greet him)

Tony: Erh dad I'll be going to some school called erh ...erh ...eish I forgot it name but for Physics and Maths Olympics.

Mr kane :mhh ...okay when?

Tony :I think when they are done with exams .But they are only writing for a one week

Mr Kane: You know am very proud of you .goodluck nail it okay.

Tony :Am going to win that obvious.

Mr kane: Good I have to go now ...have a good day everyone.

At Lali's school

There is an assembly since they will be starting their first paper.

The principal:I would like to greet everyone and wish them a good luck for their exams .Especially grade 12's this is your last year so you'll better nail it.I would also like to thank each and every learner in this school for performing well in their studies and for also respecting .So I would also like to let the grade 11's that since this week y'all finish exams so next week there is an Olympia that will take place in this school for maths and physics...

Every learner:LALI...LALI ...LALI.

(Ok so I was basically laughing my ass off.)

The principal:Yes I know Lali is the smartest but I want everyone to take part in it .There will be different schools coming here.Okay atleast I know that we have won already because I know Lali she is so intelligent. Okay learners y'll can go to the classes.

Nomhle:See am also a celebrity...just for being your friend.

Me:LMAO...stop it you are also a celebrity.Your beauty is on another level.

Nomhle:But you...you are a heat.

Me:Oh please stop it and let's go and nail that maths paper

>>>To be continued

[06/23, 07:57] Lynne: Continuation of INSERT
3

-It after school now they're done writing maths and biology-

•NOMHLE'S POV•

Hey guys so am sure y'll know me now.So basically

I am Lali's best friend actually sister. We have been friends for my entire life. I love her very much even though sometimes she is rude. So I told my mother about her dreams and she said she wants to see her. I didn't want to tell Lali that because she said I mustn't tell anyone about her dreams. I think maybe my mother might have a clue of what is the cause and they said they will take her to our pastor so he can pray for her.

Me: Hey Lali how was Biology... because I know you nailed maths?

Lali: It wasn't that hard but am going to get an A+.

Me: Mhh ...ok so what are we writing tomorrow?

Lali: Afrikaans, English and physics... so tomorrow school will start early. you know I just don't understand why they are rushing things this year or is it because of the Olympics.

Me: Maybe ...let's go and prepare for physics you know it not my things.

(She rolled her eyes)

Lali:Okay... but I am feeling lethargic today ...It like something is draining me. Anyways let's go so I can take a nap.

•At Kane's House •

(He just got back from the warehouse)

Kane:Hey everyone...Can I talk to you privately.

(Talking to his wife)

Mrs:Okaymhh Zia continue with the cooking I will be back just now.

(They are now in their bedroom)

Mrs :How did the meeting go with the Martinez(The family Lali is going to be wedded off to)

Mr:Everything went well but they want to see her .

Mrs :Mhh that a problem because we can't have her here especially near my babies...

Mr:But...

Mrs:No you know exactly what will happen if she comes here.(getting angry)I don't want to put the lives of my babies into danger and you know in two months time I will be giving birth .What you can do is ask her principal to send you her photo than you can show them.

Mr:That a good idea...let me call him right now.

•In the Martinez mansion •

Odin :Dad I really don't know why you want me to get married .

His dad:Next year you will be doing your last year in varsity...so I want you to be a man . am going to give you three of my business es if you agree to get married to their daughter and you know that they are very rich which will be good for us.

Odin :But dad I have a girlfriend and I love her so much.I don't want to break her heart I can't dad .

His dad:It either you get married to her or you will

get nothing.

Odin :But that unfair dad...

His dad:All your brothers have arranged wives and they are happy why can't you....hee

Odin :But dad...

His dad:it either you agree or I will disown you..

Odin :Okay fine dad I will get married to her if that makes you happy .

(He goes out bang the door hard)

•23:00pm•

At the girls hostel

Lali's POV

An old women:Please my child you have to hurry(crying)I can't anymore I can't...you need to rescue me before it too late .

Me:But...but I don't know what to do .

An old women :You know... you know. Be careful of
No...

(And than I woke up)

Nomhle:Lali are you okay ?

Me :(BE CAREFUL OF NO...)those words kept
playing in my head.

Nomhle :Lali are you okay ...talk to me
please.(crying)

I was still lost in thoughts and than I had a severe
headache .My heart beat increases than it was
lights only for me.

Nomhle's POV

I went out and called the helping aunt to help .We
took her to the school hospital and waited outside
the ward for her.It was now 3am and the doctor
came out.

Doctor:Can I have her parents number .

Nomhle:Erh ...erh she has no parents...they...they passed away am her only sister.

Doctor:Mhh okay ...so she had a panic attack what really happened to her.

Nomhle:Erh she had a...we were just playing and I pretended to die so she started to panick.

(I knew If I told the doctor the truth he would want to take her into a psychologist)

Doctor :Okay I will give her some tablets but please make sure this doesn't happen again.

Nomhle :It won't...can I see her?

Doctor:Sure ...she has woken up ...but she is not saying anything. She keeps looking around .

Nomhle:Okay let me just go to her.

Lali's POV .

what that old women said kept flooding in my mind and the fact that she said I must be careful of

Nomhle.why ?Because she is the only person that takes good care of me .And the fact that she said I know what I must do just drives me crazy.

Nomhle:Lali ...Lali

(I suddenly snapped out of my thoughts)

Me:Nomhle (I cried and extended my arms so she can hug me)

Nomhle:Everything will soon be alright don't worry(she kept brushing my back)

I really didn't understand when she said "Everything will soon be alright "

Me:Thanks for being my sister...thanks very much .

Nomhle:I will always be by your side and together we can fight what ever is bothering you .okay let go and prepare for school.

Me :Okay anyways am feeling abit better now.

(As we were walking I suddenly saw that old woman from my dream standing by the tree .She was

crying blood.i don't know but I felt my heart brake.I hold my chest as tears started to gash out of my eyes)

Nomhle:Hey Lali are okay ...why are your hands covered in blood?

(She said that suprised and I could see it in her eyes that she was scared.I looked at the tree that woman was standing by and she was no longer there . When I look at my hands the blood was no longer there)

Nomhle:WTF how is that possible... I saw it ...blood ...blood in your hands ...mom was true when she said you have....

(and then she kept quiet)

Me:I have what?

Nomhle:No...noth...nothing?

(I grabbed her in her upper arm very hard and am sure I left marks. I was extremely angry)

Me:ANSWER ME YOU SILLY FOOL WHAT DID YOUR MOM SAY?

Nomhle:You are hurting me ...she said nothing ..

Me:Oh I see you want to answer me the hard way.(I was dragging her towards the same tree that women was standing.I really wasn't my self and i didn't know what i was doing)

Nomhle:She said....she said you need to see a psychologist.

Me:Ooh so you and your family think an crasy? ..hee?...heee?.

Nomhle:No she ...she is worried about you...they really are.

(That made me come back to my senses.I than realised that I have hurt my bestie)

Me:Ohh my God you are bleeding ...am soo...sorry I wasn't my self am really sorry ...I don't know what really happened. (I was now crying)

(She attempted to leave but I grabbed her hand)

Me:Am very sorry friend. ..am really sorry please forgive me.

Nomhle:LALIMI please live me alone.

Me:Okay am sorry but please listen to me .Let me tell you what happened.

(She just rolled her eyes)

Me:ok ...so I had a dream again ...Some old women I must rescue her .When I said I don't know how to she said I know.

(She attempted to leave again)

Me:Lastly she said I must be careful of you .

(That caught her attention)

Nomhle:What that's lame ...that's insane why would I harm you I love you ...I love you with all my heart.

Me:I know ...I know and i love you too .I think that old women i responsible for what is happening to me .Next time when she visits my dreams am going to tell her to go and fuck herself.

(She laughed. ..wheew thanks god)

Nomhle:Stop it okay ...

Me:Am sorry ...very very sorry and I will do anything you want me to do .Even if you want me to see a

psychologist I will .

Nomhle:I forgive you ...are you serious about seeing a psychologist?

(I just laughed because she know I didn't mean that...I hate all the psychologist thingies)

Me:Okay I didn't mean it

Nomhle:Okay fine ...let's go it already late.

Please like and comment

[06/23, 07:57] Lynne: INSERT 4

4 days later and it is a Sunday.

Lali's POV

Nomhle:So friend are you ready for the tomorrow Olympia?

Me:Yes ...you know I was born ready (Than she

smile)

Nomhle: You know friend am very proud of you .Am sure where ever your mother is in heaven she is very proud of you. You are a blessing and any parent would like you to be their daughter...

Me :But not my dad

Nomhle: You don't need him in your fabulous life. Later on when you are finally a successful Radiologist oncologist he will realise his loss.

Me: Am really not sure if he will ever treat me like his daughter. But anyway as you said I don't need him in my FABULOUS life. I have spent almost my entire life without him .

Nomhle: exactly...now take your sleeping pills so you can rest .Tomorrow will be a long day for you.

Me: Thanks mommy (and then we busted up in to laughter)

Nomhle: J ust go and sleep please.

Me: Ohh before I forget when are your parents coming to fetch us?

Nomhle:As soon as the Olympics are finish.

Me:mhh okay.

•At the Kanes•

Kane is having a pillow talk with his wife

Mrs :So did you show them Lali's photo ?

Mr:Yes ...they liked her but her soon to be husband wasn't interested?

Mrs:We don't care about him ...As long as Lali will be out of our lives and the fact that as soon as they get married they will move to Germany is making me happy.

Mr:Yeah that really great.

Mrs :Let me sleep because I have to wake up early tomorrow and make sure Tony is not late for his Olympia

Mr:Okay goodnight my world (And he kissed her tummy)

TO be continued. >>>

This was an appreciation insert for 24 followers

Please like and comment.

Love y'll

[06/23, 07:58] Lynne: Continuation of Insert 4

*At an undisclosed location *

Kiara:Dad we have looked everywhere for her but we can't find her.

Dad:If y'll still want to live y'll better find her because if she finds us firstnc...nc...nc y'll know what will happen right.

Mike:yes dad we know ...what if she is dead ?

Dad:She is not dead ...As soon as she turns 18 her beast will start to react.So we better hurry because only 1 month is left for her to rule and take over the world .And remember if we get to her first am going to take all her powers like I did to her great grandmother. But it was a bad luck for me because that h** her mother made sure that I return the powers.I just hate her.

*At the girls hostel *

I was now walking faster.

A girl:Wait Lali ...Lali please wait ...Don't live this place until you turn 18 ...

I increased my speed.

A girl:Please look at me ...You need to prepare yourself something big is going to happen .You need to save her (Pointing at an old women)

Me:Please live me alone...what do y'll want from hee?(I was crying)I know nothing am just an

ordinary girl. I know nothing about helping inhuman people.

A girl :Look at me and tell me that straight to my face.

(I turn to look at her)

Me: WTF how come you look exactly like me
...please tell me who are you guys?

A girl: We have been trying to get to you for almost your life .we want to help you so that when the storm starts you are prepared. (She was starting to fade away)when you no longer see us you will miss us. Take this I know you are hungry.(she was giving me a raw liver .I wanted to freak out and run away but something kept pushing me to take it)

(I took it and was eating it slowly. It felt like it my first time eating something solid.)

Me: erhh....hey thanks...

(I looked around and she was no longer there)

I was woken up by an alarm.

Nomhle: Good morning sleepy head.

Me: (yawning) hey good morning.

Nomhle: Any nightmares?

Me: (stuttering) night... nightmares?... No I slept like a baby.

Nomhle: That's great now go and take a shower because breakfast will be served now.

Me: You can just go and have breakfast without me.
.Am not feeling like eating today.

(I was actually full .But I couldn't tell her that because she was gonna freak out)

Nomhle: But you have to eat .Isn't you will be writing...

Me: When am full my brain don't function perfectly...

(She just laughed)

Nomhle: My God you are crazy anyways go before you become late

(I went to take a bath .I looked my self at the mirror and my face was pale .)

Me:what is really happening to me. Why did I eat that .why God...I hope am not going mad .i think i really need to see a psychologist.

(I kept quiet.)

Me:Okay am not dreaming...am not dreaming right.(I washed my face with water)

A man: You are not . Remember denying who you are won't help you .It will only hurt people next to you. Remember Adila is short tempered and may harm your...

(And than he dis s appeared.Who is Adila?.What I have to do with her .)

(Right then Nomhle enters)

Nomhle:Lali are you okay ...who were you talking to ?

Me:No one I was just practicing the Ohm's law...You know it really confuse me and it carries alot of marks.

Nomhle:Oh but I thought I heard a man's voice. Anyway go and get dress ed before you become late.

(Some random guy bumps into me)

Me:WHAT'S WRONG WITH YOU...can't you see where you are going...hee?

The Guy:Am very sorry ...Can I ask where the grade 11 Olympics held at?

(Oh so this guy is here to compete let me teach him a lesson. Am going to give him wrong directions)

Me: Okay go straight then take your left then go into that long passage than the first room is where they are held.

The guy:Thanks very much beautiful goddess.

Me:Go or else you will be late and won't finish the test .

(LMAO that was fun.Let me go and start writing)

20mins later enter the very same guy .I wanted to laugh but couldn't. Anyways am gonna laugh at him after this .He smiled when our eyes met.Fool.

•At Kanés•

Mrs:When are we getting rid of that thing in your warehouse?

Mr:When the time is right and there is a friend of my that's want to see her.

Mrs :Do you trust him?

Mr:Yeah he said that she knows him and that he will only be taking what was taken from him.So after that we will kill her or should I say that monster.

Mrs:mhh okay when will that happen?

Mr: I think next year. Because he lives very far .

Mrs:Mhh okay ... God is really on our side .I can't believe we will be getting rid of Lali and well her mother.

Mr:Yeah hey ...we need to make sure that everything goes according to our plan ...

At Lali's School

I was basically laughing at him .

Me:Yhoo am going to die ...so how did you find your way to the hall.

The guy:I guess having a phone with Google really helped me .

Me:Oh ok ...So what's your name?

Tony :Tony and yours ?

Nomhle:Lali ...Lali .

Me:Oh I have to go my sister is calling me bye.

Nomhle:Mhh.okay so who is that guy you were talking to?

Me:His name is ..Ten...Tinny or Tony am not sure .

Nomhle:Mhh so what were y'll talking about

Me:I was just laughing at him. Because earlier on he bumped into me and asked for directions. And guess what...

Nomhle:What ?

(I was now laughing my ass off)

Me:I gave him wrong directions...

Nomhle :Gosh ...you are so wrong ...the poor guy shem ..

Me:He deserved it ...

Nomhle:So how was maths and life sciences?

Me:It was easy compared to the actual exam we wrote.

Nomhle:Mhh okay ...so when will the results come out?

Me:I think next year.

Nomhle:What is the price for a winner?

Me:An iPhone 11 ,Laptop and a Bursary

Nomhle:Ohh my God. ..am jealous.

Me :Anyways let go .Remember I still need to pack all my staff.

•At kanes•

Tony just arrived and he looks exhausted. Her

mother was watching TV.

Mrs:hey boy ...how was it?

Tony :It felt like I was just doing a revision.

Mrs:Mhh you know am very proud of you hey.

(She attempts to kiss him on his forehead but Tony quickly moves his face)

Tony :No mom stop.Am not a child anymore.

Mrs:Since when ...hee...you are still my little boy .

Tony:Ohh whatever mom(he said that going upstairs to his room)

•Tony's POV•

Okay guys am Tony .And am sure y'll know my mother .So basically my father died in a car accident .Mr Kane made sure that I don't miss him.Like he treats me the way he treats his other children and do everything for me.I would never trade him for anything. He makes sure I receive

good education and become successful in life. The best I can do is to make him proud .I wouldn't ask for another dad in my life .I would voluntary die for him and he also makes my mom happy .So since I came back I can't stop thinking about that girl I saw earlier. Her laughter ,her eyes and well her body shape .I can even live my girlfriend for her .She is something else .There is something about her but I really don't know what it is .I didn't even get her name .But I heard her sister calling her Lali .I just hope it her name .Let me search her on Facebook.

Please like and comment

Love y'll and thanks for the support y'll are giving me

[06/23, 07:58] Lynne: Insert 5

Lali's POV

Nomhle's parents came to fetch us. To be honest I don't like her stepdad. He has a dark aura. There is something unusual about him. Every time when our eyes meet his turn red and I just don't know why I am not freaked out about all that. So we arrived in this big mansion. It looks so beautiful and you can tell that they spent tons of money building it. Nomhle's mother has been quite since we arrived. Her eye is bruised and she is also limping. The way I see things I think her husband is responsible.

Nomhle's mom: Nomhle please show Lali around and also show her ...her bedroom.

Nomhle: Okay mom.

She showed me the bedroom and yes I love it. It is painted in grey and every thing has grey. So we were now just walking around the garden. They have a huge garden it even has trees and beautiful flowers.

Me:So tell me more about your family.

Nomhle:erh ...there's nothing to tell you about exactly just that my parents have been married for 4 years. Am the only child .So yeah that's all.

Me:So what happened to your biological father?

Nomhle:Mom said he denied me .She said I actually don't need him in my life anyway.

Me: ohh am so sorry about that.So how is your stepdad treating you?

Nomhle:Step...stepdad ...he ...he is good ...good to us.

(I could see that she was hiding something from me.But I didn't want to question her any further because she's going to suspect that I might have seen something)

Me:Mhh okay...Let's go inside am starting to feel cold.

Nomhle:Sure.

(We went inside and found Lali's mother watching TV and reading a bible)

Nomhle's mother: Come sit down Lali .I need to speak to you. Nomhle told me that you have been...(Nomhle started coughing hysterically)

Nomhle are you okay ?Go drink some water please (And then she went to the kitchen)

As I was saying she said ever since you were a child you have been having nightmares.

(At that very same time I felt very angry. I felt like my canines were growing I ran into the bathroom and looked at my self in the mirror. And yes my canines were longer than usual and my mouth was starting to bleed .I was extremely angry .I heard a knock on the door)

Nomhle: Lali please open up ...am really sorry I didn't mean to hurt you .I told my mother because I know she can keep a secret and she is also willing to help you regarding your nightmares.

(Guys it not like am overreacting but I don't want people to think am crazy. I wanted to come out but

couldn't.I ran a cold shower and set down .I sobbed until I was starting to feel cold when I touch my mouth I was back to normal.I closed the shower and dried my self.I wore my pjs and went down stairs .They were all having supper .I just took a seat and started dishing for my self since i was extremely hungry.)

Me:erh ...Mom I would like to apologize for the way I reacted earlier on.

N's mom:You don't have to apologize my darling .I understand ...alot is happening in your life so you have all the rights to react the way you did. I would like to ask you if do you mind to go to church with us tomorrow since it is a Sunday?

Me:A church?...I never been there but I will love to .

N's mom:Okay so tomorrow wake up early so we can go .

(Right after that a man with body guards enters .His face looks familiar but I don't know who he is.)

The man:Thanks mr Khumalo for letting me know
...Lali go and take your bag we are going.

Me:Wait who are you?

The man:Oh really you don't know me now ...I am
your sperm donor.

(That hit very hard and deep .The fact that he said
that .And also the fact that I couldn't recognize my
own father.I ran upstairs in tears and closed the
door. Suddenly the lights goes off .And room
become noisy. I hear different voices and I held my
head.J ust than a girl came through)

The girl:I see you are smart .Others have to reach
18 until they transform but with you ...nc ...nc...nc
.J ust so you know today is the last time we bother
you .But before we go I am going to tell you the
whole truth. So I am your twin sister ...I was killed
by your father.Our mom is still alive and I think it
impossible to save her now.She has been
imprisoned for 25 years.We have been trying to give
you clues but you chose to ignore us .So they have

already plotted her death. Remember if her powers land into evil hands our breed is doomed. Ohh and also your friend's stepdad is working with evil people. He is involved in some cult where they do sacrifices. So every time when your friend's mom fall pregnant she miscarry and she is always beaten up for that. He has raped your friend numerous times. But am not there. You need to find your mentor. I cannot tell you where he is but you are very far from him. You need to be strong. The moment you accept what you are it will be better for you.

Me:But what am I?why do I have strange dreams?

The girl:You are an Adila a beastwomen. You are the powerful creature in our breed.

Me:What?that can't be ...no ...no am not that

The girl:Remember the sooner you accept what you are the better. Also never forget you failed our mother ...you had time to save her ...now go with your father or else things are going to be worse for your friend's family and you.

(Just then she disappeared. There was a lot to digest right now. I just took my bags and went downstairs)

Dad: You surely took your time here...

(I just kept quiet and looked straight into Nomhle's stepdad eyes)

Me: (I said to myself) Am going to get you ... you bursted.

(On the way to wherever he was taking me to)

Mr Kane: Am going to book a hotel for you. And tomorrow you will have to tell me who gave you permission to go visit your friend. I can't teach you a lesson now because I have to take care of something.

(I wonder what he is talking about. We checked in... in some 5 star hotel. I took the key and went straight to a room he booked. I closed the door and started to unpack my things)

•At the warehouse •

Mr kane :Sorry to keep you waiting come this way.You said you are Mr?

"Mr Owen"

Mr kane:Okay so there she is ...Since yesterday she never transformed.

Mr Owen :mhh okay I see ...how long have you kept her here for ...

Mr kane :25 years...

Mr Owen:wow how did you manage to imprison the mighty Nora because several times I failed

Mr Kane :Right after she gave birth...

Mr Owen:Mhh I see ...so where is her daughter?

(mr kane was now annoyed by all the questions)

Mr kane:I don't know in the world who stole her from the hospital

Mr Owen :What ?How did that even happen?In which hospital she was given birth in?

Mr Kane :I can't remember exactly

Mr Owe :I will come back tomorrow to finish her
.Right now I have something important to take care
of.

Mr kane :Okay no problem.

•At the Khumalos•

Mr Khumalo:Nomhle go to your room I need to
speak to your mother ?

Nomhle:Okay

Mr khumalo:Okay what ?

Nomhle:Sir

Mr k:Good now go .

Mr K:listen here and listen very careful. I don't want
to see that girl ever in my house again .okay?

Mrs:okay.

Mrk:Good now go and prepare a bath for me .

(Mr k went to his office and was now lost in his
thoughts busy talking to himself)

MrK:I have never been so scared in my life.Something about that girl is dangerous and very powerful.When she is around I can't even use the spells I was taught by my master.i need to find out what is it that is up with her .

Mrs:Everything is fine now you can have your bath.

MrK:How many times I have told you to knock before you enter my office hee.

(He was now holding her in her upper arm and you could see he was hurting her.)

Mrs K:Am sorry it won't happen again...

•At the Kanes•

In their bedroom

Mrs:Did everything go according to our plan?

Mr:Not yet my love but tomorrow it happening.

Mrs:Okay .So how does that curse look like(lali)

Mr:She has really grown up ...I really cannot believe she is the same little girl that I dropped at her school 12 years back.

(Was starting to get annoyed)

Mrs:That's great. ..anyways goodnight I really had a long day.

Mrs KanesPOV

okay so I am mrs Kane .mother of Tony ,J ase and Zia .Ana and Layne are my husband's second wife .And Daisy is my husband's late brother daughter. I love them all anyway.So when Kane was still married to his wife we were having an affair until he got rid of her.So I angry when my husband was talking about Lali .It felt like he still care for her .So I think I have to fasten the process I need to make sure her mother is killed.Than I can deal with her .Since Tony came back he hasn't been the same Tony I know .I hope it not about girls.

Goodnight my lovie...

[06/23, 07:58] Lynne: INSERT 6

At the warehouse

Mr Owen and his children(Mike and Kiara) were getting ready while mr Kane was just standing by the door.

MrOwen:Erh ...Mr Kane please leave us for few hour .What we are about to do is very dangerous and we don't want you to get hurt.Killing a Stonestalker isn't an easy thing.

MrK:Okay let me just go and check up on my wife.(He exits)

Mr Owen and his children went in the basement .It was very dark and they switched the lights on.They went straight to the cage where Lali's mom was in.She was there lying down .Looking so lifeless. She couldn't even move her body and she was chained all over her body.She had black bags

around her eyes. When they came close to her .She raised her eyes and suddenly her body shook

MrOwen:Well ...well...well who knew that you will end up here .nc...nc...nc if only you didn't take all the powers I had I would spare your life. I was imprisoned because of you and my precious wife had to raise both my babies on her own .You ruined my life .I was so foolish to think that you loved me .You made me fall inlove with you so you can take back the powers I went through alot to get .You played being a superhero back than let's see what you can do right now .

(He took out a hydrochloric acid and spilled it on her leg.Her skin was slowly burning .He took out a lighter and burnt her more where he spilled the hydrochloric acid .The smell of her skin burning filled the whole basement .He suddenly placed ices on her leg so Lower the pain)

MrO:Mhh how was that ?...nice right

Lali's M:You know J ade ...I have been through worst for a whole 25 years so what you doing is nothing.

MrO:Ohh really ...(He took out a knife and peeled her burnt skin off.)

Lali's M:(she was now crying)What do you want from me ...what is it that I have done wrong to you?

MrO:You took away all the the powers I had .You tarnished my reputation. I was a respected man and everyone was scared of me .Now anyone thinks they can do anything to me

Lali's M:But the powers were not yours .YOU STOLE THEM.They belonged to my mother. I had to take them back and you were also not using them for good reasons. You killed all my family members ...What was I suppose to do?

MrO:Are you really asking me that hee...If you didn't take them we would have gotten married and ruled the whole world together.

L's M:Ohh please don't lie.If I didn't take them back you were going to kill me.

MrO:True...yes I was gonna kill .So since I was not able to kill you back then. Now I am going to kill you

.

L'sM:I don't care even if you kill me just now my daughter will find you. Am sure when she finds you she won't spare your old ass.I know she is out there looking for me .She knows that am going to die eventually and she has accepted that .She is now looking forward into finding you.

MrO:ohh really...I'm not scared of her as soon as I take your powers it won't be easy for her to kill me.So keep dreaming my love.(He was acting strong .The Lali issue really shook him)

L'sM:You will never change.You are still a coward.Why don't you just kill me and let my soul rest in peace?

MrO:Don't rush my love ...we are waiting for 00:00 so that your spirit will not come back and torture us.

Narrated

•In the meanwhile Lali was having stomach cramps. She was even struggling to breathe. Her heart was beating historically high. She was starting to vomit blood•

Lali:Help anybody ...help me please (No one heard her as there was a party going on downstairs in this hotel.she was crawling as she couldn't walk anymore)what's happening to me ...God please help me .Let me get the hotel cellphone and call Nomhle.(Suddenly her body shook and she was no longer able to move her body and she was now crying)Noooo...Nomhleee

In the meanwhile there were ten minutes left to be finally 00:00

MrO:Would you like to say your last prayer so that you can go to heaven .(she just kept quiet)

MrO:ohh so you no longer have mouth ...Isn't you were talking too much and saying you are not scared of death. Now that it is near you are quiet.

L'sM:ohh please ...Am going to say this for the last time...If you kill me now and take away all my powers I swear to my deceased daughter that you will never find peace in your life.You may be happy tomorrow that you have killed me and got what you wanted but never forget KARMA is a b***.

(It was now 00:00)

L'sM:(She was looking straight to Owen's children)You both don't have to be part of this. Don't follow your dad's footsteps because y'll going to die before it y'll time and die for something y'll don't know.

MrO :Enough...Mike come with the bottle that we going to capture her soul with ...You Kiara give me my sword I have been preparing for this day.

(He went straight to Lali's mother and stabbed her in her heart. She didn't even fight him as the chains were very heavy and very tight .She tried to transform but couldn't. She was now coughing blood and alot of blood was coming out of her nose.)

Lali's M: You...you may ...think you ...have won
...by...by killing me...but my daughter ...will ...will
come for you...She has too many...special powers
that no one in our family...has...has ever had ...so
...so I would ...advise you ...to r...run while you still
can...and when ...my daughter has...has found you
...please tell...her that...that I...I love her so much
...and you...your day is coming

(She died.Suddenly a thunderstorm was now
starting and it was now raining...They captured her
soul and Mr Owen swallowed it and suddenly lights
went off and on .His eyes were turning white and
his fangs were starting to come out.His skin
became rough and he suddenly roared and
collapsed. Kiara took out a bottle full of human
blood and slowly came close to the beast his father
has turned into .She poured it in it mouth and
suddenly it regained strength and was now
destroying everything around it .Kiara and Mike
went out and locked the basement .They called
their uncle Mondree who knows how to put it into
sleep.They waited for 3 hours than he arrived)

Mondree:Where is it...

(They showed him .He got in and went straight to it face and rubbed some sort of green liquid in it eyes and it was now calming down.He was slowly turning back to his body and than he fell unconscious.Mondree went out)

Mondree:Okay he is now fine...Mike help me take him to the car because he is still unconscious.

Kiara:Will he be alright?

Mo:He will don't worry princess.It just that the powers he got ...are too powerful whereas he is weak .I need to teach him everything about beasts.

(They went and took him to do car .Than drove off the hotel they booked)

Meanwhile Lali was slowly transforming.She was turning into a beast and her voice was becoming more deeper.She was struggling to talk and her mouth was bleeding. She suddenly felt a random shock in her heart than she transformed back to her

normal body .She felt a sharp pain in her heart .Her breathing rate increased and more blood was coming out of her mouth and noise .She suddenly felt nauseous and collapsed.

Please like and comment

[06/23, 07:58] Lynne: insert 7

☆At kanes ☆

Mr:How are you feeling now my love?

(He was asking concerned .As his wife had pains in her stomach)

Mrs:It better now.But I still have a slight pain .

Mr:Sorry my love...Tomorrow we will go and see a doctor and check how our babies are doing.

(Mr Kanes phone ring)

Mr:Hello

The caller:Hello sir you are speaking to Kiara. Mr Owen's daughter.

Mr:Ohh how can I help you?

Kiara:I wanted to let you know that everything that was supposed to be done is finally done.

Mr:Ohh that great ...did y'll take her body ?

Kiara:We left it there so that you can bury her.

Mr:okay that's not a problem ...so when am getting my money.

Kiara:As soon as dad wakes up ...He will call you.

Mr:ok that's great...

(And than he dropped the call)

Mrs:Who was calling ?..

Mr:Oh ...it was mr Owe's daughter.She was letting me know that everything is done and soon I will get my money.

Mrs:So what did they do to her body

Mr:They left it there so we can bury her. That's if

you don't have a problem with that?

Mrs:(she raised her eyebrow)No...not at all...So tomorrow after we see the doctor we have to buy a casket for her.So that at night we can bury her.Call the boys to clean the warehouse and her body .

Mr:okay ...I will call them in the morning.

-It is now in the morning-

At the Martinez

•Odin's POV•

So yeah. I am Odin mr Martinez son .Next year I will be doing my last year in Varsity. So in details I will be finally an Oncologist. I have a girlfriend and we have been together since high school .So my dad told me that he has arranged a wife for me.I only agreed because he said he is going to give me his three businesses . And one of the businesses include a private hospital .So as long as I will be

rich I don't have a problem. Anyway getting married to that girl won't affect or ruin my relationship with Avani. I don't even know how she looks when her dad was showing mom her picture I wasn't even interested anyway I don't care how she looks .So am on my way to see my girlfriend. I got into her penthouse and used the spare key I had .I went into her bedroom but she wasn't there so I decided to call her.

Avani:Ohh hey babe

Me:Hi my flower...I'm at your apartment but you are not here .

Avani:Yeah ...my father came to fetch me .He wants me to help mom with the preparations. Isn't I told you granny's birthday is around the corner.

Me:yeah you did ...but I was missing you hey .

Avani:Ncoo my boyfriend shem...I miss you too ...don't worry as soon as everything is set .I will come back .

Me:Okay cool.

Avani:I have to go now bye love ...I love you so so so much.

Me:I love you more .

(And than she dropped the call.i really miss my boo guys .Anyways let me go to gents and grab two or three bottles of beer)

•At the Khumalo's•

(Mrs Khumalo was busy making breakfast and her husband was already gone to work .Nomhle was still sleeping. Mrs K went to her bedroom to wake her up)

•Nomhle's POV•

(As I was still sleeping. The sun penetrated my eyes and I know my mom wants me to wake up)

Mrs K:Wake up...wake up my little princess. I made your favourite breakfast.

Me:No mom please let me sleep ...I will eat when i wake up .

Mrs K:I made pancakes,beacon and fried fish.

(No matter what people. Dark or blue I will never resist pancakes .I jumped and went straight to the bathroom to wash my face and brush my teeth.When I got back into my bedroom mom wasn't there anymore but my bed was made .I love her so much people.She is my world. If I had power I would just flee away with her to anywhere away from this monster .Who abuses her .So I decided to take a quick shower and wore my boyfriend Jean,white vest and push ins.I wish Lali had a phone hey .I really miss her .I wonder how she is doing .So I went downstairs to the kitchen and mother had already dished up for me.So I took my food and went to sit with her in the dining room. I started eating.)

MyM:So how is school.

Me:School is fine mom .But how are you?

(She stopped eating)

MyM:Me ...me...I'm...I'm fine.

Me:Mom please you need to tell me the truth...how is he treating you ?.I know everything but I want you to tell me.

(She just took her plate and went to the kitchen)

Me:mom you are not being fair please talk to me?

(She just went to her bedroom and locked her self in)

Me:Mom please open the door...I didn't mean to piss you off but please talk to me.(still nothing)

Okay fine, since you don't want to talk to me .Am going to pack all my clothes and leave this house forever. And you will never see me ag...(J ust before I could finish my sentence she opened the door)

MyM:Please don't talk like that ...Come in and I will tell you everything.

Me:Okay.

MyM:You know I don't even know how to face you .I feel so ashamed that I pretended to not believe you

.When you said he used to rape you .Am really sorry my love please forgive me.

Me:(I could feel tears threatening to come out)I forgave you long time ago .I know it wasn't your intention.

MyM:You know ...I regret everything...I wish I didn't get married to him .My lust and ambition for money had caused me so much pain.He beat me ,rape me and do whatever he wants to me.I have no say .I long wanted to kill myself but I thought of you.You need to study very hard my darling,go to varsity and get a well paying job and leave this country. That way you will find happiness and freedom.

Me:But what about you mom ...I would never leave you with that monster.

MyM:That only if I will still be alive my angel.But I doubt it .My days are now numbered in this cruel world. Every pain that is inflicted to me every single day will be the cause of my death .

Me:But mom ...can't we do something...like kill him?

MyM:I have tried killing him several times. I don't

even know how but he finds out .

Me:mmh.

MyM:He is something else my angel...Something I don't know that is very dangerous. That is why I want you out of this hell before it too late .Have you ever heard from Lali?

Me:No she doesn't have a phone .

MyM:Mhh ok ...I hope she is okay anyway let go and prepare for dinner.

Me:Okay mom.

MyM:Don't worry my love everything will soon be alright .Ever since I came here prayer has been my biggest weapon. Never forget to pray my love...God listens to everyone. I was also a sinner by putting both our lives into danger for money .

(We heard footsteps.i guess he is back)

Me:(whispering)We have to go...I think he is here.

•At the Kanes•

-Narrated-

Mrs Kane was busy bathing .Getting ready to go to the doctor .While she was bathing suddenly the room became dark .A Male figure was standing right in front of her .She tried to scream but couldn't. The male figure took out a white powder and blew it in her nose. Suddenly more blood was coming out of her vagina and then she collapsed.

MrKane:Love ...love we are getting late.(He went to the bathroom and found his wife lying down and she was building.)

No ...no please my love ...please breathe (He took her to the car and went to the hospital)

Nurse. ...nurse help ...please help.

The doctor:Hurry up...bring a stretcher ...

(They took her to do operation room)

Doc:Sir please wait outside for her...

MrK:No ...no I won't. ..you don't understand. ..she is my wife ,she is pregnant...twins ...twins doctor.

Doc:You are wasting time...please sit down and wait for her here.

(MrKane calmed himself down. And set on the chair .He waited for long until he felt asleep. It was now in the morning. He was woken up by the doctor)

MrK:Doctor. ..doctor how...how...how is my wife and kids ?

Doc:Your wife is out of danger but she is still in comma.

MrK:my babies ...how are my babies ?

Doc:Am sorry but it was already too late .you lost both your babies.

(He fell down to his knees. He felt like the world has come into an end.)

°mr. kane's POV°

I feel like I failed her and my babies.if maybe I came early to check her if she was done getting

ready this wouldn't have took place .I don't know how to face her .

Me:Why ...why God. ..what have I done wrong .Why would you take my babies ...why ?

(Eversince Lali and her mother came to our lives .our lives have been difficult. I know it either her mother or her that is responsible for this .Am going to teach her a lesson.Tony,Zia and jase came in running)

Zia:Dad ...dad why are you crying. ..where is mom. ..dad speak to us please. ..where is mom?

(She was now in tears .Honestly I didn't have time for this I just went to my car and drove to the hotel I booked Lali In.)

Me:I am going to kill her today ..

(After what felt like a whole day of driving I arrived .Parked my car and went straight to her room.i tried to open but it was locked. I knocked but still.i went to the receptionist and asked for a spare key . I went inside. To my surprise they was blood on the floor.I followed it .I found her lying in a pool of blood next

to a sofa .Right than I didn't know what to do.)

Me:What is really happening?

(I wanted to help her...but than what if she is tricking me and want to bite me.I just called the securities and they took her the hospital.i went to bar and ordered alot of alcohol. I really don't have strength to face all this .)

•At an undisclosed location •

The cult members were meeting.

MrK:here ...here are the little ones heart.

Their master:Good ...good very good .You both did a good work(implying to Mr khumalo and mrs Dube.They were dressed in black .So Mr khumalo used dark magic to make mrs Kane miscarry. They went and stole the babies from the hospital just before the babies were even bath.NB:If you guys remember. LAli had a dream where a woman was dressed in black caring a baby covered in blood)

Their master:mhh...twins...really good for the

Sobaba(A very big snake that feed on human blood.That makes them all rich)but there is something dangerous that these babies had brought. I can't really see what ...anyways let me go and feed him.

•At the Khumalo's •

-Mrs K's POV-

I was seating on the bed reading my bible.He came dressed in all black and his hands was covered in blood .I just kept my bible under my pillow because he hate it .I didn't even ask him anything. I just switched off the side lamp and closed my eyes.I heard water running .okay so he is taking a bath .I wonder who he just killed. I feel sorry for the family that has just lost a loved one .I closed my eyes and silently prayed.

Him:You know I hate that so please stop it .

(But ...but ...but I was praying silently. God how did he know.what have I gotten myself into .)

Me:Am sorry... Do you want me to warm your food .

Him:What did you cook?

Me:Stir fry.

Him:Okay I want spinach and wors

Me:But...okay I will make it.

(I went to the kitchen and started making the spinach. Nomhle came down stares)

Nomhle:Let me help you ...

Me:No it fine my dear . I will manage go and sleep.

Nomhle:no mom it fine I will help .anyway am not feeling sleepy today.

Me:okay ...if you insist.

(We started singing our favourite song Umusa by Lebo Sengobela)

•At the hospital •

Mr kane came back very drunk and demanded to see his wife

Tony:Dad please. ..please let's go home.Mom will be fine and we will all see her tomorrow.

MrK:Okay atleast can I see my babies ...okay ?

I just want to touch their soft skin for the last time and also name them.(He was now in tears)

J ase:Erhe...(he looked at Tony and they both nodded)You will see them tomorrow. It already late.

MrK:no

J ase:Dad please stop doing this to yourself. Mom would be very disappointed if she were to see you behaving like this. Let's go now(They took him to the car and J ase drove.)

Please like and comment

Another insert will be posted later.

[06/23, 07:58] Lynne: insert 8

It has been a week since lali and Mrs kane have been in a coma.Mr kane has been living in the hospital so that when his wife wakes up finds him there.Mr Owen paid him his money and even gave him an extra amount. He buried Lali's mother at the cemetery.

•Mr kane POV•

Me:(He was talking to his wife)You are selfish now my love.it been a whole week and there's still no change .We are suppose to be going through this together. Please don't do me like this .The children need you .They miss you very much.You really need to wake up.Ever since you went into a coma my life have been a mess.i even stopped going to the office.You mean the world to me .I feel empty without you my love .Our babies bodies were stolen. I don't even know who would do such thing .I would say It Lali but she is also in a coma.i can't do this

anymore...i really need you...i tried to look at the cameras but they shown nothing .i really don't know what is going on...But maybe i think it Karma ...I haven't been good to Lali ...But it was n't my intention after I saw what her mother can turn into ...i started to hate her ...But right now I regret every bad I have done.Killing my second wife.i think God is really punishing me.

•Mrs Kane's POV•

I was in a very beautiful and quite place .I was with my late father.

MyF:You know ...you need to wake up before it too late.There are dark spirits roaming around here that we can't see.They going to capture your soul and use it to do evil things.

Me:That can I ask you something?

MyF:Sure

Me:Does my husband's daughter have anything to

do with this?

MyF:I really don't know my baby...what i can tell you is ...Some dark magic was used.

Me:But dad who would do that to me?

MyF:It not even your...he just wanted to...

(Suddenly every place turns dark .People were now running)

Me:Dad ...dad what's going on?

MyF:Go ...go ...go my dear...please go that way every one needs you .

(Right than i felt like the sun was penetrating my eyes and my throat was very dry. I opened my eyes)

Me:Water... water

MrK:Baby ...baby...oh thanks God you are awake ...water...water ...you said you want water...oky

(He gave me water. My God he looks like a hobo and wonder who he left our babies with.He went and called the doctor.)

Doc:Oky sir please leave us...so we can do check

ups on her.

MrK:Okay

《MrKane POV》

I felt like jumping to her and kiss her all over her body for dear life.I really missed my wife people. I was just incomplete without her .Here is a problem.

How am I going to tell her that she miscarried.

Worst of it all someone stole them.i really need to find that person .And I swear to God when I find him am going to kill him/her.But who could it be.Mr Owen?...but he would never do that to me after I have helped so much .Anyways the doctor came out

Me:How is her health doctor?

Doc:She is perfectly fine ...we can even discharge her now if you want .

Me:okay ...where can I sign the discharging form?

Doc :I will bring them to you ...oh before I forget there is something I need to tell ...can we go to my office?

(Okay that sounds serious.)

Doc:So Mr Kane your wife will never be able to carry a baby for a full 9 months cause.Her uterus is destroyed which is what allows for a development of the foetus

(I felt like killing my self right at this spot .Why this now why ?How am I going to tell her all this .Because if I don't and she finds out am going to be in deep shit.)

Doc:But that's not the end of the world for the both of. you'll can still have babies through surrogate and other ways of making it .

MrK:That's not a problem doc but ...how am I going to tell her...

Doc:let me just give you a piece of advice...tell her...actually please tell her she deserves to know it her body anyway...After you have told her everything take her to a psychologist...Because I

know she won't be open to ...she needs someone to talk to so she can pass this tragedy that has took place.

MrK:It going to be difficult...

Doc:And please be with her every step of her way ...let her grief and distress in her own way .Even if she drinks wine let her ...I know I shouldn't be saying that ...But she has been through so much she needs to ...like really. Same thing happened to my wife and i didn't let her do what she wanted when she was going through alot...She eventually tried to kill herself ...what I mean is let her be ...if she wants to not to share a bedroom with you let her be ...But never leave her ...show her that you sympathize with her and that you support her.

Mrk:Thanks Doc I think I know what to do now...

Doc:Ohh ...I heard that the young lady who was admitted here ...she is your daughter...

MrK:yes she is ...

Doc:She is still in coma and we really didnt find what is wrong with her...I think you have to decide

what must be done...Do we switch the machines off or wait a little

MrK:No no don't switch them off(Mr Martinez would kill me ...we have already finalized our deal what is left is for them to get married)

Doc:Oaky ...here are the discharging forms

(I signed them .)

Doc:Okay you can now go and take your wife

(I went straight to her ward she was just staring into space.i took her hand)

Me:thanks...thanks my love ...for waking up thank you very much...

Her:I missed you ...anyway please go and shave ...You will scare my babies...anyway where are they I really want to see them.

Me:They ...they are ...they are at home with ...with others..

Her :I can't wait to see them ...when am I being

discharged?

Me:ri...right now ...we can go

Her:ohh ...let me take my things..are you alright why are you sweating in this cold..

Me:Sweating?...it no...nothing ...Am good ...

(I took our bags and put them in our car than we drove off)

Me:Can we grab something from Macdonald...

Her:but I really need to see my babies...

Me:Don't worry my love you have all your life to be with them (lying to her was really breaking me...Her eyes are full of joy ...she can't wait to touch her babies...but which babies my lord ...which exactly. ..the ones that you took them away from us)

Her:Are you okay ...my do you have tears in your eyes...is everything okay

Me:yeah sure...everything is fine ...i just can't believe you are here with me (I kissed her cheek)

Her:And I gave you two precious pearls

Me:Let me go and order?

~ Mrs Kane~

I could see in my husband's eyes that something is bothering him.I just hope he didn't cheat on me.He wouldn't dare me go.Whereas I just gave him two babies...hee...he can't even look me straight into my eyes. When we get home am going to ask him.i have been trying to remember what really happened on that day .To my surprise I remember nothing ...nothing at all.what my father told me really scared me.i hope it was not Lali because of it her...I swear to the almighty God amma kill her.my husband got back and he set down.We weren't even looking at each other.Something is not right here.

Me:Are you okay?

Him:Yes ...I told you earlier...HOW MANY TIMES ARE YOU GOING TO ASK ME THE VERY SAME QUESTIONS?HEE?

(Now everyone was looking at us.I really don't know what I have done wrong .i just wanted to know if he

is really fine.it seems he is very angry.our order came and I just took my food and started to dig it .I am very hungry)

Him:I am sorry...am very sorry for shouting at you.
(I,just kept quiet)

Him:Am very sorry it just that my mind is occupied...Alot has happened while you were still in coma

(God he cheated)

Me:I,know ...you cheated on me.

(He raised his eyebrow)

Him:What?I would never do that to you .You know I love you wholeheartedly. I would never do that.

(Phew...What a relief. ..I thought he cheated...I could see it in his eyes that he really meant what he said .But still something is really bothering him.Anyway it was getting too late .We finished our food and went straight home)

~ Odin's POV~

I was just chilling with my babe...we were just watching a movie and having little conversation.

Me:What would you do if I asked you to marry me?

Avani:My God...I would just and kiss the stars... you know babe I really love you. I really wish that some day we can get married and have babies.you are my ride or die...I would die for you.Anyway why are you asking me that?

Me:No it nothing ...I just wanted to know ...if maybe like I go to Germany when I finish my studies would you come with me?

Avani:Yes ofcourse...Away from our both families.
..I would kill for that to happen.

(She really loves me guys .I will never break her heart. She is my everything. I will soon need to tell about my plan)

Avani:You know babe(she was yawning)Am feeling sleepy now.

Me:Let's go and sleep am also tired.

(I switched off the TV and went to confirm that all

windows and doors are closed.i took her bridal style and placed her on top off the bed.We started to kiss so passionately. She was not undressing me and I was doing the same .she layed with her back and I went straight down to my sacred place. I kissed her thighs and went straight to muff her.She was busy moaning. And that drove me crazy and I fastened my pace.She orgasmed and her body shook.i cleaned her with my tongue and went straight to her face .I kissed her making her taste her self.i love her so much people. She is my life and am not able to look at any woman but her.She is something else. Different from other girls.i kissed her for dear life and put my thingy into her .I went slowly into her .She wa busy calling my name so nicely and increased my pace.The rest is history)

~ At the Kanes ~

Mr and mrs Kane just got back and all her children hugged her They were very happy to see her.

Mrs:Okay ...okay please let me go now I want to see

my babies.

(The whole room went silent)

MrK:Love can we talk in our bedroom.

Mrs:No .I want to see my babies first

Mrk:You will my love but first let talk .it very urgent.

Mrs:Okay and you better tell me what is bothering you .

(They went upstairs . MrKane locked the door and they set on the bed)

Mrk:mhh(He was clearing his throat)

You know I love you right?(she nodded)I love you with all my life .If anyone tries to separate us I would kill that pers on with my hands .So what am about to tell please don't blame your self it was bound happen.Do you remember what happened that night(She nodded no)Okay so I took you to the hospital as you were bleeding historically. I waited for long outside the operation room.Until the doctor came and wake me up .He told me that you were out of danger but you were still in coma.

Mrs:Okay?

Mrk:But ...but he said it was already too late. ..So our babies didn't make it.

Mrs:(She was now in tears)WHAT?...no ...no that's not possible. You said my babies are here

Mrk:I had to lie to you babe...please forgive me

Mrs :Why? ...why me God?...So can I atleast see their bodies.

Mrk:They ...they were stolen my love...stolen from the hospital. ..

Mrs.:What that's insane. ..who would do that ?

MrK:I don't know my love but am still looking for that person .The doctor also told me that you will never be able to carry a baby for full nine months.

Mrs:God why ...why me ?.what have I done to .it was first my babies now this.i know who is responsible and am going to kill her to .

Mrk:Who ?

Mrs:Lali ...I know she is responsible for all this.Am

sure she is revenging for her mother's death. And please don't stop me I need to deal with her once and for all.

Mrk:But how my love...she didn't even know her mother was alive. Worst of it all she is also in a coma.

Mrs:What ?(She held her head. As she was starting to remember what really happened to her. Suddenly she had a headache)

MrK:Love?Are you okay?What's going on .

(She than fainted.MrK called the doctor.The doctor arrived and checked her up.)

Doc:Her blood pressure is very high. I think she is stressed. She needs to rest .Please give her some time .

Mrk:Okay doc thanks very much .J ase please walk him out.

(Mr Kane was just looking at his wife.And suddenly he felt asleep.)

It was now in the morning .

Mrk:Good morning my love .I brought you breakfast.
How are you feeling right now.

Mrs:Better .I remembered what happened on that
night.

MrK:What happened?

Mrs:While I was bathing lights started flinging. And
than the room became dark.When I tried to see
what was really happening. I saw a Male figure
standing right in front of me.i tried to scream but
couldn't. My voice wasn't coming out right than I
felt a liquid going down my legs and I knew I was
bleeding. Suddenly it blew a white powder in my
eyes and was bleeding historically and than I
collapsed.

(MrK didn't know what to say or do .He just kept
quiet)

Mrs:it was not Lali ...Some dark spirit has fallen
upon us ...we need to be careful.Please call mrs
Khumalo and tell her about what happened to Lali.i
feel like she deserves to know.

■Mrs Khumalo's POV■

She just received a call from Mr Kane .Telling her about Lali's condition.

Me:Nomhle we need to go and see Lali.I think she needs our prayer.

Nomhle:He won't allow us to go .

Me:He is going for a week out of the country for some work .I heard him talking to a phone.

Nomhle:Okay so when is he leaving?

Me:Today...he booked a late flight .So we will visit lali tomorrow. I wonder what happened to her.

Nomhle:I just hope it doesn't have to do with her nightmares.

Me:All we can do is to pray for her ...she is really young ...She still have life ahead of her.

Nomhle:Yeah hey.

Please like and comment

Have a blessed Sunday everyone

[06/23, 07:59] Lynne: INSERT 9

(Not edited)

☆Mrs Kane POV☆

To be honest I am not not feeling well physically and emotionally. I have been lying to my husband that am doing fine. He really tries to make me forget about everything but I can't. I just can't. And the fact that I won't be able to carry any baby for nine months. just breaks my heart. I feel like a guitar with no strings and also shattered. I know when the time goes on My husband will want a second wife. I know how man are and I won't even blame him if he decides to.I know I will be heart broken but I can't stop him from building a big and warm family. Wasn't it enough to kill my babies that they decided

to steal them ...Why?...Why me God?...I know I haven't been a good human being but I don't deserve all this pain ...my babies God...why ?I didn't even get a chance to hold them nor see them

.Almighty you should have just took Lali instead of my babies .Since she is the black sheep of the family. She doesn't deserve to live my lord.Ever since she was born she has been a problem or should I say a curse.All that has happened to me has really made me weak and I don't think I will be able to just forget and move on.

Mr kane POV

Yes I am at work but I really can't concentrate. I feel very guilty about everything that happened. And the fact that I can't find the people who were responsible. I feel like a weak loser. I feel like now people won't respect me like they did before. I think someone is using my weakness to get me of which is my family.But who could it be because if I

remember clearly none of my enemies are alive besides my older brother. Whom I don't know where in the world he is . I hope it not him ...i really hope he is not back for revenge but he would never do that...he really doesn't want to kill me because if he wanted to he would have killed me long time ago. But who would dare me and mess with my family. Everyone is not safe now. I think I have to increase the security at home. All of my children will now be home schooled. Going home just stresses me more. My wife God. she is not herself. She has now lost weight. The saddest part of it all is that when I ask her she just say she is fine. She only answers what I ask her. I really miss my bubble, beautiful and always smiling wife. Even the kids are starting to get affected. They now stay in their rooms and only come downstairs to take food and go back to their rooms . I just hope this tragedy that happened in our home won't affect their studies and when the time goes on everything will go back as it was.

>>In the meanwhile Mrs Khumalo and Nomhle were on their way to visit Lali in the hospital. They arrived and went to the receptionist. They asked where they can find her ward. A nurse came through and insisted to show them .<<

Nomhle:Ohh my God...my bestfriend (Her tears were threatening to come out)Just look at how innocent and beautiful she looks. Mom I really miss her. Especially when she would just snap at me for nothing. And when we would gossip about other people. I feel like I am the one responsible for this ...

Mrs K:No my love ...don't blame yourself

Nomhle:No...no mom...if I didn't ask her to visit me all of this wouldn't have happened...but mom why would your husband not want my one and only bestie to visit me...hee?Something is really fishy here...I wonder what happened to her...I hope her dad is not responsible for all this because if she doesn't make it ...I swear on my life I will make his like a living hell...

Mrs K:But why would her dad do that?

Nomhle:They blame her for all the misfortune and bad things that they had encompassed. They call her a black sheep of the family and a curse. Atleast in the comma she is resting. She has been through so much her life has been really tough.

(A nurse came in)

Nurse:Excuse me mam...but the visiting hours are over.

Mrs K:Okay thanks for letting us know but can you please give us two minutes more...

Nurse:Am sorry but I can't

Mrs K:We just want to pray for her and than we can leave.

Nurse:Okay but please make it quick because it against the rule.(and than she went out)

Mrs k:Okay let's close our eyes and pray for her my child...let hold her hands...Father I come to you as your child . God I have been through alot but with your goodness and glory I managed to overcome

my troubles. God I kneel before you and please you to show your glory and greatness...please God save your child .She has been through so much .She has experienced difficulties in her life.She is still young my Lord ...She still have dreams to fulfill. She has been through so much for a young woman she is.Ever since she was a child my Lord she has never found peace ...My lord you took her mother when she was very young...now why this ?...why my lord?...God here is your temple please guide it soul and bring it back to her body...Almighty God let your spirit dwell in her body and fight whatever evil is being formed against her...Fight her battles my lord and also make her dad find a space in his heart to love her and treat her like his own .In the name of God and his son Amen.

Nomhle:Amen.

<<And than they went back home>>

•Mr Kane POV•

I was now back from the office. I am really tired. I think I should start working here at home. All the lights were switched off. I guess everyone is sleeping let me just go and grab few drinks from the bar in town. I went there ordered a bottle of whiskey and ices . I then went to look for an empty table. And I found it .it was at the back no one will bother me .I will just sit here and have my peace. They were playing a really soft music. I set down than the waiter came through with my order.

The waiter.If you need something else feel free to ask.

Me:Okay thank very much.

(As I was sitting .Lost in my thoughts a very beautiful and well dressed woman came and sit right in front of me .I couldn't even utter a single word. I could see her moving her yummy,juicy and pink lips but I just didn't know what she was saying .She looked very irritated or annoyed which is what

made her even cuter. A waiter came to my table)

The waiter: Is everything okay here sir?

Me: What? ..no...no nothing is wrong?

The waiter: Than why are you shouting Mam?

The Lady :You know if this asshole didn't park his car too close to my ...I wouldn't be this angry. ..I can't open the driver's door because of his car .What irritates me more is that he is not saying anything.

(For the very first time in my life since I was born. I have never been insulted by a women .What's strange is that I am just quiet unable to put her in her place)

Me: EhhhI am really sorry let me go and move it(WHAT ?what did I just say. Me ? Apologize to a rude women .Is it because of her beauty that is making me this vulnerable. Or is this whiskey am drinking. It's starting to make me drunk.)

The Lady :Hurry up ...

(I went out and parked my car where there was no cars parked)

The Lady :Thanks.

(I just kept quiet and attempted to leave but she touch my hand.I felt a shock like someone was burning me using electricity. My heart beat increased.i held my chest)

The lady :Sir ...are you alright?...do you need something?

Me:Wa...wat...water please.

(I was now balancing by the wall.She went into the bar to ask for water.)

The Lady :Here drink the water.

(I drank the water I was now feeling better. She helped me up)

Me:Thanks very much i am feeling well now.

The Lady :...ohh...Anyway I wanted to apologize for

the way I spoke to you. Something heartbreaking happened to me.

Me:Care to share?

The Lady :Sure we can grab a few drinks.

(We went inside. And set where I was sitting. I couldn't take my eyes of her .She really has a good body shape.She looks a bit younger than me)

Me:So what's your name?

The Lady: Michaela ...but they call me kayla.

Me:Mhh I see...so where are you from?

Kyla:From Australia.

Me:My God...what's brings you here in Gauteng?

Kayla:(she looked down and I could see tears form in her eyes.i held her hands.Oo...she had a ring in her finger.okay that's means she is married.i slowly removed my stupid hands from hers)

Me:Talk to me what happened. ..you can trust me

Kayla:So i have been married to my husband for a whole 10 fucking years.So basically I found out he

has been cheating with my stepsister and that they are expecting a baby.

(She suddenly cried. I didn't know what to do .I just went to sit next to her and made her lie on my chest)

Me:He doesn't deserve you ...you are too beautiful to worry about a man who doesn't value precious things .If I was him I would always celebrate you and love you eternally. You are a rare diamond. That one cannot find easily. (Okay I don't know why I am saying all these things .But really when she cried I felt my heart brake into pieces.Who would cheat on this cute and sweet soul though. Some many don't know the value of a wife until she is gone.Right than my phone rang)

Me:mhh...mhh(I was clearing my throat . It was my wife calling .I wonder what she wants now. Like really I am tired of begging her ass to be open to me.)

Her:Where are you?

Me:I am coming.

(And than I dropped my call)

Me:Erhh ...Kayla I have to go now (I called the waiter and paid for the bill)...it was really nice to meet you .

Kayla:Thanks ...thank you very much for your comforting words. Safe journey.

Me:You too ...

(I went straight to my car and drove.ohhShit I forgot to ask for her numbers .I went back to the bar but her car was no longer there.I felt like shooting my self right now.Anyway I took my heart broken ass and drove back home)

Please like and comment

[06/23, 07:59] Lynne: insert 10

>>At the Kane's house<<

Mr kane just arrived. His wife was sitting in the

dining room watching TV and having a glass of red wine.

Mrs K: Ohhh you are back ... (she was on her way to hug him. Just when she was about to hug him a different perfume hit her nostrils.)

Mrs K: So where have you been ... Because you always come home early?

(Mr K just kept quiet and went upstairs. She followed him)

Mrs K: Are you going to answer me or not?

Mr: YOU KNOW WHAT ... I AM TIRED OF YOU ... I AM JUST TIRED. AM I A CHILD NOW THAT I HAVE TO REPORT TO YOU WHEN I AM GOING SOMEWHERE? ... HEE?

-His wife just kept quiet

Mrs K: OKAY SO THIS IS HOW THINGS ARE GOING TO BE FROM NOW ON? ... HEE? .. YOU GOING TO COME HOME LATE AND TELL ME SHIT ? ... HEE? ... YOU HAVE BEEN BUSY WITH YOUR

WHORES...AND FORGOT THAT YOU HAVE A WIFE THAT I JUST LOST HER BABIES AND WON'T BE ABLE TO HAVE ONE HER?.

MR:(he said calmly)you listen to me carefully...you don't talk to me like you are speaking to your friend...you heard me?(she just nodded as he was giving her an intimidating eye)now leave me alone...I am very tired...I had a long day .

(He just went to the bathroom and took a shower)

Mrs Kane POV

I just don't know what to say .I don't know how to feel .My husband has never talked to me like that.i am really heart broken .I never thought he would cheat on me.okay I knew that he will eventually cheat but not this soon .He is the one at fault but he is busy shouting at me . I might have also disrespected him but I did it out of anger .Like any woman would be if her husband cheated. Is it my fault that I won't be able to carry a baby?...no .so

why must I suffer. Why would God punish me like this. Just when he is suppose to support me he is busy whoring around. I have supported him in every step he took. After so long we have been married he decides to cheat now just when I need him the most.

It was now in the morning. Lali's condition was still the same . The doctor has now decided to switch off the supporting machines . They are just waiting for the go ahead from Mr Kane . The hospital has been trying to call him but his phone is switched off.

《At an undisclosed area 》

"Lali you really have learned so much in a short period. Some take them a year to understand and be able to use their powers . You have learnt how to defend your self and how to fight your enemy. I have also taught you how to put your beast to sleep. You must also be able to control your anger . Because your anger can be your most downfall. You

must also find it in your heart to forgive your dad . "

Lali,"no ...no ...I would never forgive him . For goodness sake he killed my mom. He killed her... All my life I thought I was the one responsible for her death. I have been blaming myself...That if I wasn't conceived she would be alive . He took her away from he . My whole life has been empty. No one has cared for me besides my bestfriend. "

-"you know there is something strange about your bestfriend. Later in life she will make bad decisions that will put her mother's life and hers in danger. She will turn against you and team up with your enemy "

Lali,"ohh please stop it...she would never do that I know for sure... She is so kind , loving and caring. She is the reason i am alive. They were days when I would feel like killing myself. She would stop me and encourage me to live. I know her from top to bottom. She loves me so much ...she would never

do something that can put my life into danger. "

- "mhh I see ...when it happens don't say I didn't tell you . You know you have to leave now before you are trapped here for your entire life"

Lali," that would be great...It so refreshing and quite here. I would kill to live here with you . I don't feel like leaving ...Going back to the evil and cruel world.
"

- "ohh before I forget... your first target is that evil cult ...they are really evil they want to wipe out all your family members. I think they want to take all your father's businesses and houses . You need to hurry up before it too late . Let me give you a piece of advice...If you loose your family members please I beg you don't blame yourself because it will make you vulnerable and your enemies will defeat you easily . There is a man that took your mother's powers. He is a very cruel and dangerous human

being. So whatever you do be careful. Don't tell anyone or show anyone what you are . Not even your friend. I am glad I have taught to not feed on blood ."

Lali,"but why though?"

-"you know Lali ...If a very powerful. Beast feeds on blood especially on human blood . It can become dangerous and uncontrollable. It can even harm it family members but not it children. "

Lali," ohh I see"

-"good ...You really need to find the man that took your mother's power because he will destroy us ... All the beasts... "

Lali," how did my family become beasts?"

- " it all started by your great great great great great father(Ellis) and mother(Dora). So basically they met when they were very young . They were both from poor families. So Dora was working as a Domestic worker . She was working for white people. Whereas Ellis was a garden boy of Dora's Madam friend. They lived in the same area but they never noticed one another. One silly night Dora was off to the bus station. When a batch of man came her way and were trying to force themselves on her. They wanted to rape her . But our heroic Ellis came through and fought them . That's when they started their friendship. One day they confessed love they have for each other. But back in those days relationships were not allowed so they kept it undercover. So there was a letter that came through to their community that they will be removed from it since it was during apartheid. So they made a plan to escape at night. But unfortunately they couldn't as Dora's mom was critically ill. So they went to a wizard to give them

something that can help them . That even if they separate but they will be able to find each other . But unfortunately the wizard was so cruel and evil so it gave them a curse of being beasts. The curse was given to its mother so it passed it on to them . They knew nothing about it . So they were very glad . After some years they did find each other since a beast cannot leave without its chosen one. After sometime they discovered that they were actually beasts. They went to every wizards and witches to ask for help . But none of them helped them . Because they also didn't know that beasts,werewolves and vampires do exist. So they were like that for the rest of their lives . So this beastial thingy was passed from one generation to another. They searched the whole world for someone who can teach them about this beast thingy .And yes they found me . I taught them everything that I have also taught you . So they started using their powers for good purposes . They protected their family . "

Lali,"wow ... I really don't know what to say "

-"what I can tell is... I have helped your family so much regarding their beasts. But I have never met someone like you and a beast like you . You are the most powerful beast that has ever existed in life . And your babies will also have their beasts both girls and boys . Ohh before I forget your chosen one is out there . But unfortunately he is from the enemies of the beasts of which are the werewolves. But I think your relationship with him will change everything. Will change the mentality of hating each other for no reason. "

Lali," what if I fall inlove with someone else? ...What If he is already married ?"

-"yes that can happen but you can never have babies with someone who is not your chosen one. Remember he is chosen for you by the gods of the beasts. "

Lali," but how would I tell that this is my chosen one "

-"have you ever fallen inlove with anyone "

Lali,"no ...but i have had a silly crush on someone...does that mean he is my chosen one?"

>he laughed*

-"no he Is not ...you know when you meet your chosen one your beast will react especially when y'll are sexually intimate. You will see . After you see or touch him . You will start to feel his pain and anger. He will also feel yours. Once you both meet you will never be able to live without each other. They will be troubles and temptations like all married couple . But never live one another. Even if y'll divorce...there is something that will bring y'll

together. ..of which is your son... your first child will be a son ...Very cute , loving, brave and charming son . He will also be very powerful. "

>she was laughing

Lali,"my God... I don't see my self having a baby nor a husband... And what if my so called "CHOSEN ONE" Is an evil and cold person. "

- " you see it or not ...but you will eventually have babies and a husband. ..it just that not now . Regarding that ...it cannot be changed ."

Lali," mhh poor me...so as a beast am I able to like believe in God?"

- " don't be silly ... you are also a human being you are not a demon...and remember God doesn't judge.

As the bible say , "The fear of you and the dread of you shall be upon every beast of the earth and upon every bird of the heavens. " ...In order to be able to defeat your enemies you also need God in that process. ..I know beasts are powerful and staff but God is above all the living thing on the earth. "

Lali, "Okay I see..."

- "is there anything else I must clarify before you leave? Because you will never be able to see me again. ..unless you face death when it not your time yet "

Lali, " nothing I guess. ..thank you very much for everything you have done for me ...I think I am now ready to overcome any distractions and difficulties that can come on my way. "

- "i was only doing what I was bound to do .

Anyways be safe and always remember that everything you do we are watching and guiding you . "

>> they hugged each <<

- " until we meet again "

Lali," good bye ...I will never forget you "

~ in the meanwhile Mr Kane ,Mrs Kane , Mrs Khumalo and Nomhle were in Lali's ward .They were called so say their last good byes as they say when someone is in comma they can here you. ~

Nomhle: why ?...why Lali ?...why would you leave me like this ?...we have ...

~ suddenly the machines made sound . Lali opened her eyes slowly. Her first impression she made was to smile. Mrs Kane just rolled her eyes. ~

Nomhle: WHAT ?(She was overwhelmed ...she jumped into her friend and hugged her for dear life.) I missed you ...I really missed you my love...(She was now In tears)i thought you were leaving me forever. ..but i knew you would never do that to me .

Lali: i missed you too. .. can you now let me breathe and stop being a cry baby ... I am back now ...So strong like i never was ...i am back to fight whatever is coming on my way (She said that looking exactly at her father and step mother's eyes. They swallowed very hard)

Mrs Khumalo: Anyway let's thank God for the goodness he has just done.

Lali: Mom (addressing mrs Khumalo) Can I pray this time around. (Everyone was surprised. They just didn't know what to say . Mr and Mrs Kane just popped their eyes)

Mrs Khumalo: yes sure you can my darling.

Lali : In the name of God and his Son ... Father I would like to thank you for everything you have done for me ... thank you for raising and protecting me . Without you I wouldn't be here. You gave me a second chance to live . If it wasn't for you I would be dead by now . Father I ask you to continue doing good in my life and my family . Please God make them believe in your word and forgive all their sins. And also be with my mother and sister (Mrs Khumalo and Nomhle) please protect them and grant them with many more years to live . Father I pray that their hearts remain pure as they are and never change . Father please be with my father and whatever he is going through. Show your goodness to him too so he can believe in your name and do good things. I pray God that some day in his heart he finds a place to love and care for me. But God I don't judge him we all do things unwillingly ...things we don't know hurt other people's feelings.

Also be with my stepmother. ..I pray that whatever she is going through she can overcome it . Amen.

(The room was dead silent. Everyone didn't know what to say. They were just surprised that Lali can actually pray . The doctor came and broke the silence)

Doc: erhh ...everyone please leave the room so that we can check her up ?

MrsKhum:okay when will she be discharged?

Doc: we can tell after we are done .

(They were all now sitting on the chairs outside. Few hours later the doctor came out)

Doc: there is nothing wrong with her actually you can just take her home right now.

Mr Kane: Please discharge her tomorrow. .. my wife and I have something to discuss. (They just went to their car and went off)

Mrs Khumalo: eyhh. ..I wish I can just take her home with us ...

Nomhle: me too ...hey

Mrskhumalo: Anyway let's go and say good bye to her so we can get home before that monster gets angry.

(They went into the ward Lali was coming out of the bathroom getting dress. She just dropped everything she was doing and went to hug them)

Lali: I missed you both my favs...

MrsKhumalo: we missed you more

Nomhle:we really did...

MrsKhumalo: Anyway we have to go ... we will see you tomorrow.

Lali: okay thank you very much ...be safe

(They went)

Lali's POV

I feel so unique. I feel like I am born again. Finally I have an understanding of what I am. And the training really helped me because i just can't stand being in the same room as Mr kane. I really love Mrs Khumalo and Nomhle. I don't know why everyone keep telling be that Nomhle will backstab me . They are nice people. If she didn't have an evil stepdad I would ask her mother to adopt me .Because I know dad and his wife want nothing to do with me . So I think I have a task to do to see whether i am strong enough. I have to deal with all that weak old asses members of that evil cult. Than after i will know my soon to be mother is safe . She is very nice .

>>At the Kane house household. Mrs and Mrs Kane were in their bedroom having a discussion.

Mrk : So what's next ...what do we do now?

Mrs K:ohh now you ask me ...it your house you can do whatever you like right...you can come home at whatever time you like and ch...

MrK : don't even talk about something you not sure of. ..I really don't want your sick drama now... we are suppose to be discussing this Lali issue.

Mrsk:Regarding that ...I really think all this time we have been wrong . Lali is really not like her mother... she is human like us ...Did you see how she prayed... She really touched my soul .I think that is why we have been facing difficulties. It Is because we were mistreating her whereas she is so innocent.

MrK: yeah I think so too .so tomorrow we will have a big family dinner. So we can introduce her to all her siblings.

Mrs k:s ure .

Please like and comment

Hope y'll are doing well . Remember guys in everything you are doing put God first . in whatever difficult circumstances you are facing just tell your lord . He listens. ..he really does. I am sure of that because I was also caught up in a difficult situation but with God's name and glory I managed to overcome it

Love your

Admin

[06/23, 07:59] Lynne: INSERT 11

It was early in the morning . Mrs kane was preparing breakfast for everyone. They all gathered around the table as she was already done. She served everyone and than sat next to her favourite daughter Zia. It was very quiet only the forks and knives were making noise. Suddenly Mr kane

cleared his throat and everyone stopped and looked at him .

MrK: Erhh ...Love did you tell them ?

Mrsk:What?(pretending she doesn't know)

MrK:Erh ...erh ab...about L...

Mrsk:No I didn't...you must tell them ...she is your daughter not mine right?...
(and than she stood up and went to the kitchen)

(Now the children were all confused)

Layne: What's up pops ?

Mrk: So ...emm... I want y'll to meet my daughter this evening.

Ana:What ? Your daughter?...from where ?

Mrk:(He was starting to get angry) I have nothing to explain to you. What you need to know is that this evening y'll are meeting her. (He stood)And you Ana(pointing at her) Don't ever question me? (She just kept quiet)Do you here me ?(She nodded) Good

and lastly y'll better be nice to her. (He took his briefcase and went to his car and drove off)

Ana: wow! I have never seen dad like that ...

Daisy: What is really happening here? Mom left the table now dad just snapped at you...

Ana: You know ...I can feel it in my blood that this girl is going to replace us ..

Zia: That will never happen under my watch... We need to put her into her place .

Layne: y'll are mad for real ...y'all are grown up now to behave like this ...anyway let me leave y'll I need to check up my girl.

(Tony and jase also left them)

Zia: We need to make them support us in this ... we can't just be replaced by a random girl who claims to be our sister. You know I have a bad feeling with this whole thing . Maybe she is not dad's daughter. Her mom is just pushing her because we are rich ...I just can't wait to meet her.

•Mrs Kane POV•

To be honest I'm not really happy that Lali will be staying with us . I was only pretending to my husband . I just didn't want to argue with him . Since the day he saw Lali it like he has developed some bond with her. He has started to care for her and I don't want to be in the middle of that . I am also worried that he will be reminded of Lali's mother . He loved her ...he really did . I really have no choice but to be nice to Lali . Because I know how man are ...If you treat their second born daughter ill....nc ...nc...nc . He can even divorce you . So basically I have no choice but to like Lali . My phone rang and when I checked the caller ID it was not saved I wonder who is this..

Me:Hello

Guy's voice : Hello am I talking to the owner of t....

Me: yes how can I help you ?

Guy's voice : So I am talking to Gloria?

(WHAT? Only one person knows this name and that is Mike...I cleared my throat)

Me: Erhh ...who am I talking to?

Guy: Wow really? People do change ... you have forgotten me ?

(It hit him ...I wonder what he wants)

Me: WHAT DO YOU WANT MIKE ?...I am sure you didn't call me to ...

Mike : you know ...I just knew you were going to remember me ...(he laughed sarcastically) I used to give it to you good right ? I'm sure you have been missing me ... but don't worry love ...I am back ...back for good and you better tell me when I can meet you right now before I come there myself.

Me: WHAT?no ...no there's no need for that ...but first tell me what you want?

Mike : ohh please I can't talk about something so important through the phone . You must make a plan to meet me today at 8pm at the Blue Moons.

Me: but ...(tititi ...silly fool he just dropped it . But what does he want God...I hope he doesn't know the truth. I hope that bitch Yolane hasn't told him the truth. Let me call her .

"Yolane's phone hello"

Me: Is this Yolane?

"Yes how may I help you "

Me : it's Gloria (whispering the Gloria part

Yol:What? You still alive? Bu...

Me: But what ?...what hee?(yol just kept quiet)

Yol: but...I thought Mike killed you

Me: ohh so you told him?

Yol: I'm sorry friend I had to... It was either I tell him or I die ?

Me: He wouldn't have killed you ...he is not that strong so you thought telling him that Ana and Layne are his will make the situation better...you know what if he dares to try something stupid that

can ruin my marriage...I am coming after you .

Yol: ohh please...Threatening me won't stop him .
He is close ...very close to you now and he is no longer the Mike you know ... He is now full of darkness and hatred you can't fool him like you did.
And i know i am the only person who understands you better. And who has supported you from the start so you can't. ...you just can't touch me . I am the only friend you have ever had and I know I was wrong to tell him but he would have killed me .

Me: ohh please don't tell me about that toothless dog ... all he does is to speak and speak but do nothing ...you know he said he wants to meet me today .

Yol: be careful ...he is very dangerous ... So how are things there.

Me: hectic...I thought turning him against Lali's mother was going to make my life easier.

Yol: what's wrong?

Me: You know we have been facing difficulties lately and worst part he is cheating on me .

Yol:What?Who? Ayy you must be joking ... who dares to cheat on you ...

Me: I think I must now show him my actual self...because this softness is making him want to control me .

Yol: So where's the girl?

Me: (she laughed sarcastically) guess what ?

Yol : what?

Me: from now on she will be living with us . So dear husband has decided that . He has now started to care for her.

Yol: that's a problem...you need to get rid of her.

Me: how though...killing her will make my husband turn against me and I don't want that I am still enjoying his wealth.

Yol: my God...so you will live with her?

Me:sure I have no choice... but for now I need to focus on this Mike issue.

Yol : mhh I see... anyway I have to go.

Me:bye

Lali's POV

I wonder what they have decided to do . I am sure they are sending me back to school. I guess I will spend my entire holidays there. I was just busy reading a novel and a nurse came in

Nurse: The driver has been waiting for you mem outside.

Me: me mem ? Since when and what driver are you talking about?

Nurse: I think your father must have sent him.

Me:but...but why? Anyways thank you .

(I took all my belongings and went out . And yes a grown gentlemen was waiting outside)

The gentlemen: I am Aben and from now onwards i will be your driver.

Me: what? But ...

Aben: you can ask whatever you want on the way
...we are already late and sir is waiting for you .

Me: But where?

Aben: you will see .

(I went out and yes a Mercedes Benz was parked.
He hurried and opened the door for me . Okay . I
went in . I am my dad did not ask him to do this . I
am sure my father did not ask him to do this . I am
sure he is going to tell me that I am permanently
and legally dis owned. I am never allowed to see or
call him dad . Anyways I don't he was never my
father at first. Atleast today I will get a chance to
ask him if mrs Khumalo can adopt me . I am sure he
will say even now she can take you .Anyways the
driver took another road going to town .)

Me: erhm ...er...if I may ask where exactly are you
taking me .

Aben : don't worry mem you will see when we get
there .

Me: please you are really embarrassing me when you call me mem whereas I am younger than you . My name is Lalimi but you can call me Lali.

Aben: okay mem Lali

Me: my God. ..just Lali ...L A L I

Aben: okay. ..okay you don't need to shout get you . So how old are you Lali?

Me: too grown...

(We both laughed)

Aben: come on ...like for real how old are you?

Me: will be turning eighteen on the 1st of January. So basically I am seventeen. And how old are you?

Aben: you don't ask an adult that my dear

Me: okay fine (I pouted and pretended to be sulking)

Aben: okay k (he was laughing) please stop it ...I am 28 years old .

Me: ohh k and If i may ask ...than how come you are a driver.

Aben: I am not actually a driver. I am your bodyguard (WTF I said that to my self). I was trained . In details i was working at the military. So since your father is a very wealthy man he needs our protection. I won't lie . He is paying us the tripled amount of what we were getting paid .

Me: wow that's good.

Aben: Especially me ...since I am the princess's bodyguard.

Me: who is that?

Aben : you obviously (and than he smiled revealing his cute dimples)

Me: how I wish (and than I looked down. Suddenly he parked the car outside a very exquisite restaurant. I have never been to a place like this okay. I wonder what am I really doing here . I just hope he didn't bring me here just to sell me off . Haa you will never know that man is cruel and very heartless. Aben went to the side of my door and opened it.)

Me: you really shouldn't have . I know how to open a

door for my self .

Aben: please mem ...ohh I forgot Lali please don't interfere with how I work.

Me:okay your choice (I raised both my hands)

Aben: so let's go this way .

(I followed him . We went inside it was a bit crowded. We took a lift to upstairs. Okay we went in to some place with only a table of two . A very polite music was playing. I was starting to be scared now . What has this old man planned now . I did a shot prayer. I really hope he is not selling me off. Aben pulled a chair for me to sit down .)

Me: thank you...(he was about to live)can i ask?(he nodded)what am I really doing here.

Aben:I don't know too ... I was just given instructions to take you here.

Me: mhh I see .

Aben: okay bye I have to go now... you will go with your father after this .

Me:sure.

(2 hours passed. I was even feeling sleepy. I get it now . He just wanted to dump me here so he will never see me . I hate him.-now tears were threatening to come out - he should have just dropped me at some orphanage. Just then he came wearing a suit. Shem my dad is handsome not bad.He took a sit and I slowly wiped a tear that was about to come out but pretended that I was sleeping. So I was stretching my arms and wiping my face.)

Him : ermmm ...I am sorry to keep you waiting. Have you ordered something yet .

(WTF ...DID HE J UST SAY SORRY. I just nodded No ...I was still surprised)

Him:okay ...so what would you like to eat ?.

Me:(gosh ...why would he ask me that ...I don't even know the menu of this restaurant. Nxx I hate him) Aa burger would be fine .

Him:okay (he typed something on his i phone iPad) something to drink?

Me: A ...a...a Lemon juice will be fine

Him:(he smiled a little. ..What ?.what's going on he has never been nice to me .Today is a really strange day.) wow just like your mom

(I wanted to stand up and swear on him . How could he mention my mom . Where else he killed her nxx. Anyways let me calm down before something terrible happens)

Him: done ...(two waitresses came and served us our food)

Me : Thank you . Can I bless the food .

Him:s ure

Me: Thank you lord for the food . Please bless the hand that made it and our food Amen .

Him : Amen ...(he started eating .okay I also started eating . He kept taking glances of me . Anyways I took my burger with both hands and started eating. Gosh I have never had something so delicious,tasty,juicy. ..lol ...I just can't describe it . It sauce was dripping on my hands and mouth . So I finished it and licked my fingers than wiped my mouth . He has even stopped eating he was busy

looking at me .)

Him: Do you want another one .

Me: I would love it (he typed to his phone and yes there's my burger. I did the same thing and God. ..I was very full . I took a sip of lemon juice ...mhh just how I like it cold and sour. He finished his food)

Him : you know I used to come with your mom here . Every month we would come here and she would also order a burger and a lemon juice. (Ohh please stop with the pretense. As if you cared for her) her small was to die for . When she is angry. ..she was more beautiful (nxx so why did you kill her ...I said to my self) I loved her I really did (I could feel anger and my skin was becoming rough a little)

Me: I'm sure you didn't bring me here so we can talk about her .(I managed to calm down)

Him: yeah. ..so basically I wanted to apologize to you . For the way I have been absent to your life . For the way I have isolated and treated you bad . I am really sorry but I am willing to change . From now on I will be a good father to you . I want to fix

whatever I have wronged you with . I want to be part of your life ,care for you and become a best dad in the whole world. I just want you to find a place to your heart to forgive me . I know it won't be easy but please we can take things slow . I am not pressurizing you . You can think about it .(I attempted to live)

Please don't do that ... I already feel like shit and if you leave right now I will never forgive myself .(okay guys I just didn't know what to do and how to feel . I was just emotionless . I never thought this day will ever happen. I don't want to lie I feel like hugging him for dear life and cry on his shoulder . But I can't ...I just can't...) please my beautiful daughter. ..please sit down so we can talk. I would really appreciate it if you could just talk to me . You can do anything...even if you want to slap me it fine or throw punches on me ...I deserve it ...I really do (I just kept quiet . Holding my tears from falling) please say something. ... okay it fine (he called two bouncers in . I wonder what's he's up to) okay I want y'll to hit me ... do whatever y'll do to someone

who doesn't follow this place's terms and conditions. (What is he mad)

The bouncers: No sir we can't ...we really can't

Him: please do it for me I will pay you ... please if you don't do it than I would never be able to forgive myself. (They went closer to him and started throwing punches and slaps on him . He deserves it . Shame he thought I was going to stop him or them nxx. They continued until he fell down)

Them: Can we go now sir?

Him: no ... co ...continue (he was bleeding. Okay guys now I feel bad . Yes he killed my mom but he is also my father people. I can't let him die)

Me: please. ..please stop (I was now in tears. They helped him get up and I just threw my self to his arms and sobbed. He kept rubbing my back and apologising. God it felt like a dream come true. I finally feel protected. I have now felt the warmth of my father's arms .)

Me:(moved out of his grip) i forgive you ... from the bottom of my heart . But please don't push things .

We just need to take things slowly. I also need to adjust .

Him : i have a request?

Me:yes

Him: i want you to meet your siblings (my God that a big step . What if they don't like me ...mnxx anyway I don't care they can go to hell ... it my time now to have a daddy lol .)

Me: sure there's no problem .

(He took his car keys and we drove off. I was woken up by him .)

Him: we have arrived. (I got out of the car)

Me: wait. ..where are we?

Him: ohh I forgot to tell you...I bought a new house after your mother died(mnx ...say it say it...after you killed her . You really wanted nothing to do with her . You even bought a new house just to forget about her wow.i said to my self)

Me: tomorrow. ..can I go visit the house I grew up in ?

Him : sure ...but I'm sure it full of dust yo..

Me: no it fine ...I won't stay long. ..just want to relive the moments when I was a child .

Him : okay no problem Aben will take you there ...let's go inside I'm sure everyone is waiting for you inside. (We went in . My God. ..it like I was entering a heaven. The design on the walls my God ...the furniture. ..ceiling. ..)

Mrs K:Ohh hey love (love ?love where ...oh please. ..these people really like pretending.)

Dad:<<finally I can say dad

Dad:so everyone. ..this is Lalimi my daughter. She is the same age as Ana ... So Lali dear meet everyone.

(They all came and introduced them selves)

Girl1: I am Ana

Girl 2:Daisy

Girl 3: Zia

Me : Nice to meet you all ...As Dad said I am Lali .(wow it felt so nice to call him dad . And than what's with the girls attitude)

A guy: I am J ase ...how are you ?

Me: i am good and you

J ase: good too ...Lali right?

Me: sure

J ase: you are really beautiful...if you weren't my sister I would have asked you out.

(We laughed)

Me:good thing I am your sis.

Guy: Layne. ..what's up?

Me : Good and you

Guy : good too ...it seems like we will be fighting alot ...hey

Me:(confused. ..whereas everyone was laughing. I guess I didn't get the joke)

Layne : every boy will like you to be their girlfriend.

Me: (God I was now laughing my ass off ...I never thought of that) what? Y'll are exaggerating now.

Layne : we are really not ...have you seen yourself on the mirror. ..you are fire.

A guy : enough. ..it my turn now (okay that voice sounds familiar. ...Oh gosh is it Teny...Towd...or whatever but i do remember him)

Him: He...(he stopped and looked exactly into my eyes . Okay that was weird)

Him: you?...how ? ...what? ...pops?(you could see he was really confused)

Me: yes ...you remember me (and than we laughed)

Him: sure how can I forget a girl who sto....I mean who made me a fool(we continued to laugh)my God small world ...i never thought i will see you again .

Me: me too ...i even forgot your name (i could see it in his heart that he was disappointed. ..but why ?)

Me: so you're again.

Him:Ton...

Me: TonyTony I now remember you (he smiled my God I think I have weird brothers)

Him: and you're?

Me: Lali ...

Him: nice to meet you ...can I hug you?

Me : sure why not?(he hugged me for dear life .like his life depended on me. He finally let go)

J ase&Tony : We also want hugs (God we group hugged)

Mrs K: enough boys ... I'm sure you are hungry and tired dear let's go this way so you can eat.

Me: I am really sorry Mem but I am very full ...I just need to bath so I can sleep.(She raised her eyebrow.)

Her: okay dear ...Ana please show her the guest room.

Dad: excuse me ? ...Lali my let's go my dear . so I can show you your room . So that tomorrow i can call someone who can design it the way you like .

Me: sure.

.(we went upstairs . He opened a room that has new bedding and furniture and yet he wants me to change it)

Dad: don't the designer will make it the way you want it.

Me: no dad ...you really shouldn't waste money it fine like this.

Dad: what?don't fool around. ..I am your dad and you will listen to me

Me: yes sir ...Can I sleep now

Dad: sure ...good night.

(And than he went out .I locked the door . Okay it's very huge . But I like it anyway. Will finally have a bedroom of my dreams. I went to the bath ...my God. ..I can't wait to have a bubble bath and sip on some coffee while watching the screen on the wall . Ohh there's a shower too . I went out and there was another door. I opened it . My God. ...I don't even know what's it called ... it a wardrobe no ...no it an

en-suite no...no I don't know ...But it is decided there's place for shoes and another one is for the clothes. Wow I can't wait to fill it with my clothes. Anyways I am sleepy now let me take a bath. I really miss my friend eish I don't even have a phone ...maybe tomorrow I will check up on them .Maybe i may find something that could link where I could find where that evil cult hold it meetings.

Please like and comment

Love y'll

Sorry if there are any errors . I am really exhausted

[06/23, 08:00] Lynne: Insert 12

Not edited

Lali's POV

I slept like a baby . I woke in the morning. I Went to bath and brush my teeth. After I was done I dried my body and went to the bedroom. I took out my boyfriend ripped J ean, white skirt and push ins . I took a small bag and putted my jacket in . My hair was a bit messy so I tied it into a messy bun . I went down stairs. Everyone was still asleep so I went outside. Aben wasn't there . So I decided to go and make breakfast for everyone. I made soft porridge using . I took the bowls and started to set the table . I saw mrs kane coming down stairs.

MrsK: (she was yawning and stretching her arms)
God ...what's wrong with you ? ...You are busy making noise but you know exactly that we are still sleeping.

Me: erhh ...sorry I thought I could just make breakfast for everyone since I was already awake.

Mrsk: Breakfast?what breakfast? Let me see ...(she went to the kitchen and opened the pot full of

porridge. She suddenly laughed sarcastically) So this is what you made? You call this breakfast?...listen here girly ...I want you to throw away this shit you made and you clean all this mess you have just made. Lastly don't ever...ever again touch my pots . I don't want you in my kitchen am I clear?(I just kept quiet) Answer me ...am I clear?(I just nodded) good . Hurry hurry up and clear this mess you have made in a minute everyone will be here .

Me:sure

Mrsk:When I come back I don't want to see this (Pointing on the porridge I made . She than went out . Clearly this woman doesn't know me . I am going to show her that i am not scared of her . I just continued with whatever i was doing and placed the pot full of the porridge on the table. I took suger, lemon , butter and peanut butter. I placed everything than waited for everyone to come down . They all came down beside Tony . They all looked at me surprised.)

Me: erhh ...good morning everyone ...i made

breakfast.

Zayn: wow that's so cool . Please dish for me first (I started dishing for everyone . Dad and his wife also came down)

Jase: Hey pops check this out ... Lali made breakfast for everyone.

Dad: really...can't wait to taste it .

(I dished for him . The way Mrs Kane was absent I am sure she wanted to finish me right at this moment. I think it going to be alot of fun staying here.)

Zayn: wow I have never had porridge before. Mom I think you must make it more often .

Jase : yes she should .(I finished my porridge first.)

Me: erhh dad can I go now .

Dad: Sure ...Aben must be waiting for you right outside . (There was something not right . He was so cold . But when he came down he was fine why now . I wonder what's eating him or Is it the fact that i made breakfast) ohh before i forget...here take

this (It was a black card. My goood. Okay) From now on it will be yours. (Everyone was now looking at us) The pin is your birth year. (I swear I wanted to cry . I just went to him and hugged him)

Me: Thank you very much...

Dad: Please don't thank me . I am your father. I'm only doing my duty as your father.

Me: thanks very much .

Dad: Buy everything you want there is no limit. And please get your self a new phone .(he gave me his business card) please save my number. If you have a problem. Oh before I forget the designer won't be able to come today. It can only come tomorrow.

Me : thanks very much . There is no problem. Bye everyone.

J ase: bye sis .

I went out and yes Aben was already waiting for me . He opened the door for me .

Me: I told you not to open the door for me though.

Aben: And I told you to not interfere in my job .

(Fool. I just went in . He drove off)

Me: So did my dad tell where you are taking me .

Aben : Yes he did . He also said I must not leave you alone there .

Me: mhh ...I see .

(It was a very peaceful drive. I was just looking outside the window. Admiring the trees. Until I decided to look on the car mirror . To my surprise Aben was busy staring on me .)

Me: What?

Aben: What?

Me: Why are you drooling over me ?(and than we laughed)

Aben: I am not . I was just looking at God's creation. Can I tell you something?

Me: sure go on

Aben: you are beautiful.

Me: I know (I laughed)

Aben: ohh really.

Me: yeah...my boyfriend always tell me that .

Aben:(his facial expression changed)B...boyfriend?...you have a boyfriend?

Me: Yes I do .

Aben: Wow ...i am so stupid.. why i didn't think of that . Why would a beautiful lady like you be single. So what's his name?

Me: ay...why are you asking me his name ?

Aben: I just want to know him . I want to know the person that is dating my boss's daughter.

Me: unfortunately I can't tell you... I am sorry .what about you . Do you have a girlfriend?

Aben: I had one but he cheated so we broke up .

Me: sorry

Aben: but I have saw someone.

Me: hoo...hoo la la you go guy .

Aben: Yeah. She is so beautiful. She has a cute smile and so friendly. She has a good heart too . She has a body to die for . She has a small waist , wide hips , round ass and her legs ...mhh God.

Me:Lol ...you really have fallen inlove . So have you asked her out ?

Aben : no ...I am scared to ask her out.

Me: lol ...unlike you ...don't be scared talk to her .

Aben : I don't think the time is right .

Me: time for what?

Aben: anyway we have arrived.

(I went out and yes indeed. I looked at the outside of the house. I looked at the green grass I used to play ball on .)

Me: please wait outside for me . I just want to get inside alone.

Aben: sure .I you have a problem call me .

Me: sure.(I took my bag and went straight in . The door was not locked.)

Everything was covered in dust. I first went to the kitchen. It just reminds me of the woman who raised me . She used to bake every Friday. Her cakes was very delicious and made out of love . She used to ask me to help her when making cakes . I touched the oven suddenly my tears started to fall down. I than went to the bedroom they shared . I went to the wardrobe and opened it . Her clothes were still there . I took the pink two piece suit she was wearing on my third birthday. I touched it and sobbed on it .

Aben : Lali we ha...What's wrong?(he went closer to me)talk to me what's wrong.

Me: (I wiped my tears) it's nothing .

Aben : (He set on the floor next to me) You can talk to me . I don't have a problem.

Me: Actually I was just missing my stepmother.

Aben: ohh ...I'm so sorry (He made me lie on his shoulder and started brushing my back. I just cried more .) Let it all out so you can heal.(We remained like that for some time . Until I was alright. He wiped

my tears.) my God you look more cute when you are crying. (I just smiled)

Me: ohh please stop . Let's go now I'm alright.

(We in the car and drove off) can I pass by my friend's house.

Aben : sure give me the directions.

(I went to sit in front so I can direct him . We drove for some time until we arrived.)

Me : There (Pointing at the gate.)

Aben : okay please don't take long it already late .

Me : sure

(I rang the bell . A security guard escorted me to the house. I went to the house Mrs Khumalo was busy reading her bible while Nomhle was busy watching TV)

Me: hello! hello !

Nomhle: (she just jumped on top of me) my God friend...it been a while since I haven't seen you.

Where have you been .(I went to hug mrs Khumalo)

Me: how are you ma?

Mrsk: I'm fine my dear how are you.

Me: I'm fine too .

Nomhle: so tell me friend ...where you staying at .

Me: you won't believe what happened. The day I was discharged my father sent a driver to take me to some restaurant he booked. I went there . It was very beautiful and was playing a very soft music . I waited for him. Suspense was killing me . I thought that maybe he was selling me off to some men . To my surprise he wanted to apologize. He apologized for everything he did to me and also for being absent in my whole life . He even said if I don't forgive him he will hurt himself.

Nomhle: What?

Me: yes . He called the bouncers to hit him . They punched him for dear life he even fell . He was also bleeding. So that's when I saw that he really meant what he said . And we hugged so we are now working on having a father to daughter relationship.

Nomhle : Wow ...do you trust him though ?

Me: Yes ...I could even see through his eyes that he was really sorry .

Nomhle: wow I'm happy for you friend. Finally God has answered your prayers

Me: yeah this morning he gave me a black card (I showed them) he said it is mine and that I must keep it . He even said there is no limit.

Nomhle: wow ...I am so jealous right now .

Me: oh dear don't be ... so tomorrow I will fetch you so we can go to the mall . I need to buy my self some new clothes.

Nomhle: wow ...really?(I nodded) I can't wait .

Me: erhh can I go use the bathroom?

Nomhle: let me show you .

Me: don't worry I know. I have been here so I know where it is . (I went upstairs. I peeped on every room . I than had a man speaking . I suppose it mr Khumalo . He was busy on the phone . I eavesdropped the conversation he was having)

Mr khumalo: It must happen on Thursday. I cannot wait. I need his retailing business fast. My businesses are not operating well .

"Me too we need to see Zimbali today"

Mr Khumalo: yeah. I can't loose what I have worked so hard for . Even if he wants me to wipe the whole family out . I could do that in a minute. (I suddenly touched the door a little.)

Mr Khumalo: erh ... I will call you later I have to go .(I rushed downstairs and said my goodbyes. I went to the car and we drove off)

Aben : is everything alright?

Me: yeah. ..sure ...please drive faster.

Aben : okay. (We than arrived.)

Me : Thanks very much for your patience and time .

Aben: anytime my princess (I than hugged him than went inside)

Aben's POV

Okay hey guys . I'm sure y'll know me now . So basically I have been working for Mr Kane for about 3 years now . He is a very good boss. But I would never do something that can make him angry. I have seen him murdering people. So I would never mess up with him . About Lali . There is something about her . And I think I have fallen inlove with her . When she was crying I wanted to just kiss her . She is so perfect. I lied to her when I said there is someone I have fallen inlove with . It is her that I'm inlove with . When she hugged me . I wanted to pin her on the car and kiss her for dear life . I wanted to hold on to her . I have really developed real feelings over her. I am just scared to ask her out . As we are not to date any of my boss's daughters . He would kill me .

Mrs Kane POV

I was so angry in the morning. How could Lali be

this rude. I need to teach her a lesson that she will never forget. She doesn't know who she is messing with . While I was still lost in my mind a message came through reading as follow:

" I SEE YOU DIDN'T MAKE A PLAN TO MEET ME .
DON'T BOTHER BECAUSE I'M AT YOUR DOOR
RIGHT NOW "

Suddenly I felt scared I rushed down stairs as the door bell was ringing. I opened it with my eyes popped out.

Lali: Erhh ...hey mom . Are you okay?

Me: I'm. ..I'm fine ...did ...did you perhaps see someone when you were coming in ?

Lali: No ...there was no one besides me . Is e everything okay?

Me: Yeah. ..yeah ...Ohh before I forget. ..what you did this morning made me angry . You don't follow my orders nor respect me .

Lali: sorry to disturb you ... but I do respect you . It just that what you asked me to do was just to much. I made that porridge with some love so ..(she was still talking when I threw a hot slap across her face . Everyone came down running. Just than my husband came in shit)

MrK: love what's going on here?(he went to her and noticed that she was crying. Little bitch.)what? LAli ?why are you crying my baby?

(She just ran upstairs and locked her self in)

MrK: What did you do ?(he was now holding my upper arm very painfully)

Me: I did nothing

Mrk: THAN WHY SHE WAS CRYING?(I just kept quiet)ANSWER ME DAMMIT.

me: please my husband. ..not infront of the kids.

Mrk: I DON'T CARE ...SPEAK WOMEN .

Me: Lali was disrespecting me . She was calling me names . I was only trying to be nice to her . She said I will never be a mother to her .

Mrk: What ? Lali would never do that.

Me: That is why I didn't want to tell you ...you were not going to believe me .(I took my car keys and drove out . Phew let me call this fool Mike)

Mike: ohh Gloria...I see my message scared you . It was nothing if you don't listen to me nor take my orders. (He whistled)you going to be in deep shit with your husband.

Me: can you stop speaking rubbish and tell me where I can meet you .

Mike: I will send you the location right now .

(He dropped the call and sent it . It was of the restaurant. I drove there and covered my face with a doek and went inside the restaurant. I saw him sitting at the table at the back and went to him)

Mike: I'm glad you came . Do you want something to drink ?

Me: I'm not here to have a drink with you. J ust tell me what you want so I can go

Mike: don't rush dear Gloria (he called a

waiter)Please give me the oldest whiskey you have .

Me: since when do you afford whiskeys?(he laughed a little . Than the waiter came back with two glasses and ices. He poured for himself and me)sure

Mike: so how are my children?(I swallowed hard and took a sip .)

Me: what?wh...what children?

Mike: I'm going to ask you one last time. How are my children?

Me: they ...they are fine (he really is scary and Intimidating)

Mike: So when I am meeting them ?

Me: S...Soon ...I still need to tell them the truth first.

Mike: Okay I see .

Lali's POV

When I went upstairs i was very angry . So I decided to lock myself inside before I hurt her. I was really worried about what I heard Mr Khumalo saying . I wonder whose company he wants to take . I didn't even get any solid clue . That can atleast show me where they are holding their meetings. I suddenly heard a knock. I wonder who is that?

Me: Who's that?

"It ...it me Tony"

Me: what do you want Tony ?

Tony : please Lali ...(I opened the door for him and locked it again.)

Tony : How are you feeling?

Me: I'm fine.

Tony: I'm sorry for what my mother did to you .

Me: you don't have to ...

Tony: I'm really sorry. Sometimes I ask myself that why she is always so mean . She is so evil . If i had an ability to choose a mother. I would choose another woman.

Me: don't speak like that . She raised you and made sure you be a better person in future.

Tony: Can I ask something?

Me: sure

Tony: Where is your mother?

Me: I don't have a mother. (I looked down) my mother was ki...she died when she was giving birth to me . So I was raised by a stepmother. She was a very nice person. She eventually died too . At that time my father wanted nothing to do with me . He sent me to a boarding school. So I basically grew up there .

Tony : I'm sorry to hear that.

Me: yeah so that's my life . But I'm grateful that he is now trying to fix things .

Tony : I see . I also lost my father when I was young . But your dad has been there for me . He treated me like his own son. I'm really grateful to have him in my life .

Me : mhh . Anyways ...so next year you doing matric?

Tony: yeah and you

Me: me too .so what's are going to study ?

Tony : I'm not sure yet...but I like medicine. You?

Me: I also want to be in the medicine faculties. I want to do Radiologist Oncologist.

Tony: mhh i see. You know i like spending time with you .

Me: me too . You are cool and it is very easy to talk to you .

Tony : same as you . Anyways let's go and have supper.

Me: sure. I'm very hungry.

(We went down stairs. Everyone was already there eating but Mrs Kane wasn't there. I took my sit and started to dish for her . I started eating.)

Dad: Lali you need to apologize to your mother.

Me: For what?

Dad: For disrespecting her .

Me: What? Who said I disrespected her?

Dad: I'm not going to have this conversation with you. And please don't play dumb with me .

Me:(I laughed a little)but I did nothing.

Dad: Listen hear Lali . If you are going to live under my roof you going to follow my orders.

Me: but I did nothing wrong.

Dad: YOU DO NOT SPEAK WHILE I'M SPEAKING.
OKAY?.I know I have been a bad father but I still have a right to reprimand you .I know both your mothers passed on but you can not expect my wife to be like them . You can't compare her with them
.(That hit hard . I just felt anger build)

Me: okay fine ...if that's what you want me to do . I will do it (I went to my bedroom and locked it . After that I cried.)

Tony's POV

When mom slapped Lali . I felt anger build up. I felt like strangling her to death. I think every day I see Lali I gain more feelings towards her. I wish I can just go to her room right now and comfort her. I had a really good time with her . She is very cute . I think I must ask her out one of this days . Yeah I know she is my sister. But not biological so I can date her .

please like and share

Be safe

[06/23, 08:01] Lynne: Insert 13

Not edited

Mr Kane's POV

It was now very late and my wife is not yet home . I have been trying to call her but she is not answering

her phone. I think Lali really triggered her anger . A call from Mr Martinez came through.

Me : Hello

Him: ohh hey ...how are you?

Me: I'm good ...why are you calling me at this time ?

Him: There's nothing wrong . I just wanted to ask you . If you don't mind can we go out tomorrow for some drinks . Soon we will be in laws so it would be better if we start now to gain a good relationship between us.

Me: ohh about that there has been a change of plan ...

Him: What do you mean by that?

(My wife came in smelling alcohol)

Me: erhh we will discuss it tomorrow when we meet. We will meet at Blue Moons by 3pm. But I will call you tomorrow to confirm.

Him: okay ...I will wait for your call (I dropped it)

(I went straight to my wife and grabbed her on her upper arm)

Me: is this the time to ...

Her: ohh please ...Don't irritate me with that TIME shit . You used to come at this time but I never said anything to you . You cheated on me and when I asked you . You attempted to man handle me .

Me: You know what I'm not going to talk to you while you in this state. Because everything you are saying. You are saying it out off alcohol.

Her: oh really. Dont worry dear husband. I know truth hurts.

(I went back to bed)

Her: oh...before you sleep . I will not stay here and be disrespected by your daughter. Never . My own children respect me . They worship the ground I walk on .

Him: About that . She said she will apologize. I am also sorry on her behalf.

(She went to the bathroom and than I heard water

running. She than came back and went straight to bed.)

It was now in the morning.

Mrs Kane's POV

Yoh...I really had a great time with Mike yesterday. We had drinks and took our little party to the hotel . That's when things got out of control. He started kissing me so passionately until I gave in to the kiss. Things led to another until we had sex. It was a great sex indeed I really missed him . I haven't had such sex in a while as my husband and I have been having troubles. Every moment I spent with Mike made me realize that I actually still love him. He said today he wants to take me out again. But I don't think I will be able to go . I woke up and went to the kitchen to prepare breakfast for everyone and made ice coffee for my self . I had a really bad headache it like a truck drove through my head.

After I was done I set the table. I was feeling a bit better now this coffee really helped me . Everyone was now on the table and Lali wasn't.

Me: Zia please go and call Lali and tell her breakfast is ready.

Zia:but mo...

Me: J ust go please.

(She came back with her . She was still in her Pjs.)

Lali: Goodmorning everyone.

(She took her sit and started dishing for herself. My husband cleared her throat. Than Lali looked at him .)

Lali:ohh. Erh ...Mrs...Mom I would like to apologize for yesterday. (She was looking straight into my eyes and that sent chills in my spine.)I was very rude to you.

Me: erh ...you didn't have to .

Lali: No I'm really sorry .

Me: okay I forgive you my dear.

(Than we all started eating. J ames came in . He is gay and a designer. He is the one who designed this whole house.)

J ames: Hey !Hey! Darlings. (He kissed all of our cheeks.)the moment I saw your husband's message I dropped everything and came . So what's my job this time .

MrK : J ames meet my daughter Lalimi . Lali dear this is the designer I told you about.

J ames : Hey girl. (He kissed both her cheeks.)

Lali: Hello (smiling)

J ames: You look breathe taking . Finally in this house there's someone beautiful. (Everyone laughed.)

Ana: what do you mean by that .(she was getting worked up)

J ames: Like girl ...have you seen yourself on the mirror. You look like your mother shitted on you when she was giving birth. (Everyone was now in

stitches.)

Ana: Mom you know what...(Her face was now pale.
My poor daughter.)

James: Wow ...your mother is also laughing. But
she is also...

Me: Don't...

-everyone was laughing except for Mrs Kane and
her daughter Ana.

James: Anyway guys don't take me serious. Y'll
know I like joking. But babes you are indeed
beautiful.

- referring to Lali.

James:Anyways! Let's go .(He grabbed Lali and
they walked upstairs.)

Lali's POV

James:So please show me your room.

(-I showed him .)

James : So while I'm busy doing measurements please look for a design you will like. (He handed me his I pad. I was busy scrolling and was caught by a floral dusty pink design. It was on the walls and the bedding set matched it . The bathroom also had this theme . I think I like it .)

Me: I like this one.

(He just busted into laughter.)

James : oh please stop . You are not just beautiful you are funny too .

Me: But why are you laughing.

James: This is my grandmother's design. It the first design I did after i graduated. I'm not saying it ugly but girl . It's just too old for you. You are still young . Choose another one please or you can ask your sisters to help you.

Me: (I laughed a little) Can you please just do something that you think is nice . You can do anything. I'm really not good in this things.

James : okay doll . Let me take a pic of you .

Me: but why?

James : please stop questioning me and show your cute and flawless smile.

(I giggled.)

James: now please .

(I smiled than he took alot of pictures. After a picture he would ask me to change a pause. I wonder what he's going to do with my pictures.)

James: okay done . I have to go now and buy all the things I will need.

Me: The money ?

James: your dad knows how I operate don't worry .
(he was halfway to the door)Tomorrow when I come please be dressed.

(I laughed and threw a pillow at him . He is such a mood . I wouldn't mind to spend time with him. I took a quick bath and went to look for something to wear. I took out a black ripped jean and a white plain Tshirt. I went out and Aben was already

waiting for me . I went to him .)

Me: Hey how are you ?(he kept quiet . I waved on his face)HELLO.

Aben: Hey ...How are you ?

Me: I'm good .

Aben: you ...you look beautiful.

Me: thanks (he stood there and stared at me)can we go now.

Aben : sure .(we drove off and went to pick Nomhle up . We were now on the way to the mall . We arrived)

Me: Aben are you coming with us?

Aben: Nop ...please call me when you both are done (he gave me a card that has his number.)

Me: okay sure .(he went back to the car and drove off .)

Nomhle: mhh someone has a boyfriend.

Me: what? Don't be silly he is my driver.

Nomhle: ohh really. But drivers don't stare at passengers.

Me: Oh stop it. We are just friends.

Nomhle : hope so . He is cute though. His smile,dimples and muscles.

Me: God help your child . What's wrong with you . Let's go .(We first went to I phone shop .)

Nomhle: Friend what are we doing here . Did you see the label of this shop ?

Me: Yes I did I PHONE so what? (I pulled her hand .)pick one you like.

Nomhle: no friend I'm fine .

Me: Please stop and choose one you like .

Nomhle: Like for real . I'm fine with my Samsung S10 .

Me: alright if you say so .(I went and looked at the i phone 11 pro . I must say i like it . I called the assisting lady to help me .)

Nomhle: My God friend . I phone 11 pro . what are

you a millionaire's daughter.

Me: no babes a TRILLIONAIRE 'S daughter. (And than I smiled.)

The Lady : Which colour you like.

Me: Grey please. Are pouches also sold here?

The lady : yes .

Me: Okay can I also have an Adidas one .

The Lady : okay .(She tested it to make sure It does not have any problem . I put on a pouch and took some Pics with my friend. We pay and than I put it safe in my bag .)

The lady : Thank you for shopping.

Nomhle: Wow girl I'm jealous.

Me: Isn't I asked you?

Nomhle: I'm fine ...but yooh.

Me: We now going to buy ourselves clothes. (We went to every store . We bought clothes in every store . We even bought matching sneakers and tracksuits.)

Me: do you have airtime so we can call Aben to take this clothes.

Nomhle: Sure .(we called him . He came and we took our clothes to the car)

Aben: Must I take them home ?

Me: no ...I really don't trust my sisters (we laughed a little.)

Aben: okay madam. Y'll bought the whole mall . I hope you bought something for me too .

Me: How could I forget you . My bestie. (I lied)

I will give it to you when we going home.

Aben : sure.

(He than went away)

Me: let's go to the jewelry shop. I need to buy him something.

Nomhle: okay sure .

(We went to sterns)

Me: Which is the most expensive watch here?

(The lady showed me)okay please can I buy it .

The lady : wow you really love the person you
buying it for .

Me: he is my friend.

The lady : mhh I hope so .

(I paid and left)

Me: okay let's go and buy something to eat now .
I'm really hungry.

(We went to McDonalds and ordered burgers and
milkshakes. Our order came through than we
started eating.)

Nomhle: You know friend. Thank you for everything.
Today was a very good day . I had alot of fun with
you .

Me: you don't need to thank me . We are sisters
right. God we are bad kids . We bought nothing for
our mom.

Nomhle: she won't mind.

Me: ohh please. After we are done we will go and

buy her a necklace. (We went to a jewelry shop and bought and very beautiful necklace her Mrs Khumalo. I also decided to buy a tie for my dad .)

Me: please call Aben again. It late now we have to go .

(Aben arrived. I was sleeping on the way . We dropped Nomhle than went home)

Aben : Wakey ...wakey . we have arrived.

(He called the other securities to help with my things. I handed him his gift .)

Aben : Wow Lali thank you very much. (He kissed me on my forehead.)

Me: Goodnight.

(I went in and everyone was watching TV.)

J ase: Wow are all of those your clothes.

Me: yes (I giggled)

J ase: Wow girls. I hope you bought something for us too .

Me: No I didn't. Because some day I would like to

go out with y'll.

J ase: Ncoo. We love you sis .

Me: sure can I go now . I'm really tired .

(I went to my bedroom. I had to jump to my bed .my room was very full because of the things I bought. I went and took a quick shower and went straight to bed. I will unpack everything tomorrow.)

(It was now in the morning I was still in my pjs . I went downstairs to have breakfast. I brought a small paper bag that has the tie I bought for dad .)

Me: Goodmorning everyone. (My siblings were staring on my hand)

Me: What's wrong guys?

Zayn:Lali is that an iPhone 11 ?

Me: nah it I phone 11 pro

Zayn: wow that's so cool . Mom I've been wanting to buy it . Dad can I?

Dad: Sure if you want it . We can go and buy it now if you want .

Jase and Tony : Us too dad.

Dad: Sure . I will fetch y'll afternoon. Lali please get ready too .

Me: okay dad . I got you something. (I handed him his gift.)

Dad: wow thanks my dear . No one from my children has ever bought anything. Thanks very much .(we hugged .we than finished eating. The girls left the table and went to their bedrooms)

Me: erhh guy ? Can y'll kinder help me pack my clothes in the wardrobe.

Jase: don't even have to ask . Let's go .what time is James coming ?

Me: I don't know exactly.

(Speaking of the devil)

James: Hello everyone . (He was with a batch of men)okay guys let me show them where to put all this things .(I ran after him and he opened my room)

James: Wow girl your room is a mess (he laughed)don't worry my babe . Okay guys put

everything downstairs. (They went back with the things they brought to place downstairs) Okay guys let help this little Miss out . We unpacked everything . James was even telling me how I can match all of the clothes I bought. He even told us how we can arrange everything. By 3pm we were done .)

Me:jhoo thanks very much guys.

James: it was nothing doll.

Zayn:Haa it was something. ..something big ...it was alot of clothes. (We all laughed)

James: Anyway. ..I will start with designing your room tomorrow.

Me: I'm sorry for dragging your work. ...

James: There's no problem my dear . I will come early tomorrow please be ready.

Me: sure.

(he than went)

Me: guys let's get ready .

Jase: yohh I'm tired. I will sleep a little. (they all agreed on that)

Me: I see y'll don't want those I phone 11's anymore.

Tony,Jase&Zayn: TF!(they to their rooms . I laughed. I also went to bath. After I was done I went to lotion my body. I took out a black body hugging dress and black Adidas push ins . I applied a lip gloss . I took out a black handbag. I dressed than went to the balcony to take some snaps.)

Jase: Lali !Lali ! Dad is here.(I went downstairs and yes dad was here.)

Tony: You look beautiful.

Me: thanks.

Dad: okay ...let's go .

(Mrs Kane was walking down the steps.)

Dad: Where are you going to ?

Mrsk: I have a date with my friend.

Dad: okay ...where are the girls?

Zayn: Daisy and Ana said they are not going .

Dad:Zia?

Jase: She went to her friend's house.

Dad: okay let's go .

(We were now on our way . A black Maserati car passed us . It was driving very fast . Suddenly I couldn't breathe .)

Tony: Lal? Are you fine?

Me: Wa...water please. (He handed me water. I finished the whole bottle)

Dad: are alright my dear .

Me: yeah .(we arrived to the mall and went straight to the I phone shop)

Me: erhh dad ...can I go to the bathroom while the boys are choosing phones they want.

Dad: Sure ...be safe please.

(I went to the toilet and peed. Suddenly my heart ached and the heart beat increased. I held my chest . I went and drank water . Suddenly water changed into blood . I looked at the mirror and I was shown .

The very same car that was driving fast parking few houses after our house. Suddenly everything became clear. I set down and cried.)

Me: Why ?why? Why are you not giving me a clue. What's happening?do I have to be worried.

Some Lady: Are you okay .

Me: yeah. (I went to the tap and drank water and washed my face . I than went back to everyone else.)

J ase: what took you so long . We have been waiting for you .

Me: the toilets we full .(I faintly smiled)

Dad: okay let's go buy some clothes.

Me: I don't think I will buy anything after yesterday.

Dad: don't be stupid. Today is another day .

(We went to a Gucci boutique. We bought matching sneakers and I bought a white body hugging Gucci dress. I also bought Gucci stilettos. We than went to LV(Lous...)I also bought few dresses there. We than went to Spurs we ordered and had something

to eat .)

Dad: erhh guys I will send a driver to come and pick y'll up . I have a meeting to attend but y'll can stay and buy anything y'll want. Lali did you bring your card(I nodded)okay see y'll at home.

J ase: bye pops. (Dad went away)

Tony: Lali are you okay ?

Me: yeah I'm just tired.

Zayn: Hey guys let's go and buy some jewelry.

Me: sure (we went and bought necklaces, watches and bracelets.)

Zayn : Lali do you want to meet our friends.

Tony: Zayn!

Me: no it fine let's go the driver has arrived anyway.

(We were now on the way to their friends)

J ase:Actually Lali we are going to a party. (WTF! I said to myself)our friends invited us . We sorry we had to ...

Me: it's fine guys as long we won't go home late .

Zayn: We promise. (We than went to wherever the party was . The driver parked the car in . We got out . Everyone was staring at me and than talking to themselves.)

Me: erhh guys ...I will wait for y'll in the car .

Zayn: Don't worry. ..come ...you are with us .(We than went to sit where there was people sitting in a circle. We than set down .)

J ase : Erhh ...hey everyone this is our sister Lali .(They than all introduced themselves. So they were drinking alcohol and I was just busy on my phone . I decided to download Whats App,Instagram,tik tok ,Twitter and Facebook. I started uploading my pictures. Three girls came our way and set next to my brothers. It was two by two .)

Zayn: erh h ...Lali this is my girlfriend friend Madison .

J ase: This is my girlfriend Addison. Her and Madi are sisters.

Me:okay nice to meet you guys.

"And I'm Carol ...Tony's girlfriend. "(She extended her arms to hug me .I stood up and hugged her .)

Carol: Wow nice dress . You are beautiful.

Me: Thanks you too .(i laughed inside. She is ugly period. She is a slay queen. There other girls are fine. Tony was all quiet I wonder why. I was busy chatting on Whats App with Aben .

The Whats App conversation

Aben:So you are serious that you at a party

Me: yeah they asked me .

Aben : what are you doing there.

Me : I'm just sitting alone all bored.

Aben: Do you want me to fetch you ?

Me: Sure ...as long as you won't take me home.

Aben: What?why?

Me:because if I go home without the boys they will get into trouble.

Aben : wow you are a good sister. Send me the location so I can fetch you

Me:O K A Y . What's with the Emoji

Aben : send the location and stop asking questions I cannot answer. (I asked Zayn the location than sent it to him)

Aben : okay I'm coming now . I will call when I have arrived.

Me: Sure

Me: erhh Zayn. .. a friend of mine want to see me.

Tony: who is that .

Me: you won't know her . She is coming to pick me up but I will come back soon.

Tony : you are not going.

Zayn: come on Tony can't you see she is bored .

Me: Ohh and I was just letting my brothers know. I wasn't exactly asking a permission.

"Ohh the Mighty Kanes "

Jase: Hey Odin. Erhh Odin this is our sister Lali and Lali this is Odin.

Odin: nice to meet you (he than extended his hand for a handshake. A women he came with cleared her throat.)

Zayn: ohh and Lali this is Avani. Odin's girlfriend.

Me: nice to meet you guys .(they than joined us)

Odin: So you are Lali that I am going to get married to ...mhh you are indeed beautiful. (WHAT!)

Everyone: WHAT?

Tony: Hey dude ...don't come here and speak sh**

Odin : ohh y'll don't know. Your parents and my parents arranged a marriage for Lali and I.

(I swear to God my heart was broken into hundreds. Tears were now threatening to come out . My phone

rang and it was Aben .)

Me: I'm coming.

Me: guys my friend is here . I will be back .

Mr Mr Kane's POV

I went to the restaurant I told Mr Martinez to meet me at . He was indeed there and had already ordered a whiskey.

Him: Finally you are here. I thought you have changed your mind .

Me: no I was actually out with my kids.

Him : mhh I see. So what were you talking about on the phone.

Me: (I poured my self a glass of whiskey and took a sip from it.) My daughter will no longer marry your daughter.

Him: but why ? Did we do something wrong?

Me: no ...I have finally realized something. That It was actually wrong of me to treat my daughter ill. I'm now improving my relationship with her.

Him: But ...what about my business that you were going to invest in .

Me: don't worry about that . The deal is still on .it's just that your son won't marry my daughter anymore.

Him: wow okay. ..that's not a problem. (A call came through from one of the securities.)

Me: I have to take this .(I stood up and went outside)

Me:Hello

"Sir ...sir"(he was breathing very hard)

Me: calm down and tell me what's going on .

" sir ...you need to come (he was now crying)you need to hurry up . We ...we don't know what happened "

Me: okay I'm on my way ...but what's happened. (I

was now driving like a maniac)

"Sir it...it your daughters"(than the line went dead.
Fuck network)

Lali's POV

Aben: you know everytime when I'm feeling down I would come here and watch the stars. (We were at the park laying on top of the car)

Me: it is really refreshing.

Aben : yeah .(we than looked at each other . And I shyly looked down . I went off the car and stood by the door . He also followed me and stood in front of me. He than wrapped his hands around my waist.)

Me: What are you do...(he shut me up with a kiss . I tried to push him but he was strong.)

Aben : I love you (what? ...he continued to kiss me .This time around I kissed him back . I don't know why I did that but I did. We kissed until my phone rang . It was Tony .)

Aben: Your boyfriend?

Me: no it Tony.

Me: Hello ...

Tony: you need to come back . Dad called and said we need to come back it an emergency. Hurry up because we will also go and fetch Zia.

Me: it's fine y'll can go . I will call Aben to come and pick me up.

Tony: okay be fast .

Me: we need to go . Dad wants us home.(we drove off. I was now worried.)

Aben : Don't worry nothing is wrong . I'm sure he is calling because he thinks it's now late.(His other hand was driving while the other one was holding my hand.He kept on kissing it . We arrived after what felt like the whole day of driving. I went out. More than five police cars were parked outside.)

Me: aren't you coming in ?

Aben: no ...I have somewhere to go to .

(I went to him and kissed him than whispered on his ear)

Me: I don't have a boyfriend. You are my boyfriend.
(I than giggled and attempted to leave. He grabbed my hand and whispered)

Aben : You are the women I was talking about .(we than looked at each other and kissed . I than said my goodbye than went inside. I got in two bodies were covered. I than ran to the dinning room . The boys and Zia were already here . They were crying.)

Me: guys what's going on ?

(They kept quiet.)

Me: where's dad?

Jase: in his studying room.

Me: okay. (I stood up and went to where the bodies were laid. I uncovered their bodies. It was Daisy and Ana. Their chests were ripped. A heart was taken and other organs. I just ran upstairs to my

room and locked myself inside. I cried.)

Me: Why? Why now? why this .(I was talking to myself) Why them too my good lord. What have they done to deserve this .there were still young . They had dreams to fulfill. (I went to the bathroom and washed my face. Suddenly the water changed into blood . I looked at the mirror. Everything that happened played on it . It was a very long dark gentlemen. He first blew some potion on the guard's face . The guard than fell down. We went inside the house and burnt something that made all the guards to faint. I than saw how dragging Daisy and Ana's bodies. He started ripping there off.)

Me: Why are you showing me this now ? Why?

(I than felt weak and passed out . It was now like i was dreaming i was talking to some lady .

" I'm sorry for your loss . But we did try to show you but you ignored ."

Me: what you showed me wasn't clear though. (I was crying)

" it was your first test . To see if in future you will be

able to overcome any difficulties."

Me: are you even listening to yourself. I just lost two ...two fucken sisters and you telling me that it was a fucking test .

"This was going to happen . Don't get me wrong but we also wanted to see if you do listen to us. If you do understand the things we show you ."

Me: so you have seen. ..you have seen me failing to protect my sisters. What now?

"

Me: What now?

" I have to go ... but first I will help you with something. If you want to track someone's whereabouts. You need to take that person's blood sample and be familiar with it smell. Than you will half transform. Not fully .Than you will start searching. Don't bring the blood sample you took with you okay?"

Me: okay. ..thanks very much.

(I than woke up and I was now in bed . A Small

blanket was placed on top of me . I smiled. I than went to dad's Study . He was indeed there crying and drinking a whiskey from the bottle . He was looking at a photo that has Ana and Daisy.)

Me: dad...I'm sorry ...I'm really sorry for your loss.

Dad: don't be sorry my dear . It was not your fault. I'm just confused. Who would do something so cruel . The saddest part is that he killed them so easily. He used some black magic shit . I saw on the Cameras.

Me: Where's mom?

Dad: I've been trying to call her but she is not answering her phone.

Mrs Kane's POV

I was having a good time with Mike . I than decided to switch my phone on . Message from my Husband started flooding in my phone and missed calls .

Me: I think I have to go now .

Mike: Sure ...hope to see you soon . Pass my regards to my children.

Me: sure I will .(I than got dressed and drove back to my house. There were police cars outside and the mortuary people were carrying two corpses into their cars .I went inside to the dinning room. Everyone was there besides my husband,Tony and Lali.

Me: What happened?

(Zia ran to me and hugged me .)

Me:It's okay my dear ...I'm here now . (I was rubbing her back)let it all out baby than tell me what happened. (She than calmed down)

Zia: Mom ...it's ...it's Daisy and Ana. They have left us .(she than cried again. I just didn't know what to do . I went to the camera room to see what happened. After what I saw I ran to our bedroom and broke down into crying.)

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:06] Lynne: Insert 14

Not edited

Tony's POV

I was in my bedroom. I switched off the lights and I was sitting on the floor looking at the family photo . It really going to be so different without them . Yes they used to annoy me but I cared and loved them . And I will do everything in my power to find their murder. I stood up and went to the mirror. My fangs were still out and my face was dry . I really need to feed. I went downstairs the lights were switched off . Thank God everyone is asleep. I went to the garage and slowly took one of my dad's cars. I started it and than drove off . I went to the nearest brothel . I was now with some girl and we were heading to the forest.

Her: Hey cutie boy. Where are we going ?

Me: don't worry gorgeous ...we are going somewhere peaceful where no one will disturb us. (I drove to the old house that I use when I'm feeding. It was in the middle of the forest. I parked the car next to it .)

Me: Let's go inside .(We went in and I lit a candle. I than kissed her . When we were now in bed I started biting her neck .)

Her : (screaming) Help...Help what are you doing?...S...some...somebody h..(she was now weak . She than collapsed . I fed on her until I regained my energy. I was now back to normal and must speed was very high as I am a vampire. Her blood was very fresh. I took some of her blood and put it in the fridge. I than took her body and burnt it .

When she was now an ash . I washed my hands and face. I'm about to kick an ass now . I drove to the mortuary where my sisters were kept at . I touched where they were ripped off and suddenly I was shown a batch of people and a snake . I suddenly ran to where I was shown.

WHERE THE CULT WAS HAVING A MEETING

Their master: Mr Khumalo you did a great job . The hearts and organs you brought were very fresh and pure . You know when I'm gone . When the devil has taken my soul to hell . You will take over this cult .

Mr Khumalo: I would be honored. I have to go now .

Their master: Be safe .

(J ust when Mr Khumalo had left . Tony arrived we went in the other members were still there. He got in and ripped their throats. He than went to their master who tried to fight him . But was not able as Tony was very fast . He used a golden spear that was placed on top of a coffin. He stabbed him repeatedly. He than went to the snake . It was very powerful it was fighting back . Tony was now on the floor and the snake was about to finish him when someone stabbed on it back . He stabbed and was

also cutting it into pieces. They then doused the whole hut with petrol and set it on fire. They waited until it was finished.)

Tony: Thank you very much uncle. If you didn't come on the right time I would be dead by now.

"I will always protect you. I made your father a promise to protect you and always guide you."

(They hugged)

"Go now before the sun rises. You know when you are like this the sun is our greatest enemy.

Anyways you are lucky that you are able to walk on the sun during the day"

Tony: But when I have transformed I can't.

"ohh ...before I go .it has been reported that the Adila is still alive. We need to hunt it down"

Tony: I swear when I find it ...I will rip it chest and fry it. It family made my life difficult. I lost my father because of it.

"We need to find it first than kill it. Before other

people find it "

Tony: yeah...anyway bye uncle.

(They than dismissed)

Tony's uncle POV

My name is Josh . But people call me Danger.
Tony's father was my younger brother. So when
Tony was still young I lied to him that the beasts
killed his father. Whereas I did. I killed him after I
found out that all of our father's inheritance will be
given to him . I had to kill him . I first killed our
father than him. So Tony has been full of hatred
towards the beasts. And I had that 17 years back a
very powerful and strong beast was born the Adila.
So I want Tony to find it so that i can take it powers .

Mr Khumalo's POV

When I got home I went straight to the secret room .
When I got there everything was burnt . I then went
to the bucket full of blood . I stirred it until I was
shown what happened. But what would vampires
want from us . I went back to my bedroom my wife
was still asleep. I packed all my things and booked
a private jet . I took my Land and companies form
and signed everything off to my wife's name . When
I get to Egypt I will start a new business. I also left
a note . I took all my things and went to the airport.
And finally I was out of the country.

>it was now in the morning <

Lali's POV

I woke up and made breakfast for everyone.
Everyone was now having breakfast but Mrs Kane
was not . I took her food to her. When I got in she
was just staring at the wall .

Me: Goodmorning. (She kept quiet.)I brought you food. (still nothing. I went down and told dad.)

Dad: I think I need to take her to a therapist.
Loosing two daughters in an one go isn't a joke.
She really need help .

(James came in)

James: (he was side hugging everyone) I heard what happened. Sorry guys . Where is my Diva .

Dad: She is upstairs but I don't think she is ready to speak to anyone.

James: Yhoo ...I'm sure she is traumatized.

(He than dished for himself. I kept stealing glances at Tony. There was something off about him . When I look at him it like he has blood in his hands and there is another blood on his mouth. Maybe it my imagination. We than finished eating . I was now washing dishes. Dad was on his phone hiring someone to plan the funeral for Ana and Daisy. I finished than decided to call Nomhle and tell them about what happened. She also told me about what happened that her Stepdad left everything to their

mom . He left the country. Dammit. He got away again. But why would he run away when I haven't done anything yet . I was planning to attack them after the funeral. Someone must have tipped him off. But I never told anyone about my plan . Shit this is all messed up . Nomhle said they will check up on me tomorrow.)

Mrs Khumalo's POV

I woke up early in the morning. I went to the kitchen and prepare breakfast. But I found an envelope placed under the pot . I opened it and saw my name . Each and every form had my name . I than read it . It said that everything that my husband owned now belong to me . There was another letter written by him . It read:

Listen here dear wife I transferred everything to your name . You better take good care of my businesses . Take Nomhle to a good school make sure when she is in varsity she do a course that has business management. She will manage all my businesses. You will never see me again .

Mr Khumalo

I scream and called Nomhle. She read everything. We jumped and danced. Finally we will live in peace without that monster . I was over happy . I prepared a very good breakfast than got ready to go and speak to his lawyer. Lali told us about what happened and I felt very sorry for Mrs Kane. She now has lost Four children. She really need to repent and start to believe in God .

Mrs Kane's POV

I was so broken. I feel so shattered. I feel like it my fault they died. If I wasn't with Mike i would have been there to protect them . It's my fault they were brutally killed . Mike has been calling me . I just don't know what to say to him . So I decided to switch off my phone. I was now feeling better after I have seen the therapist. My husband and I were now on our way to check if everything is done and ready for tomorrow as the funeral is taking place tomorrow.

Him: How are you feeling?

Me: Better...I just feel like all of this is my fault.

Him: where were you on that day? I tried calling you but your phone was off.

(I got a little frightened)

Me: I told you I was out with my friend.

Him: mhh I see. Since when do you go out with

your friends? (I kept quiet)I'm asking you.

Me: Haa ...I won't tolerate you asking me questions that are useless. We just lost two daughters and you have the audacity to ask me that .

Him: is there something you are hiding from me?

Me: w...wha...what? ...n.. no obviously.

Him: I hope so .

(We checked the venue and the catering.
Everything was ready for tomorrow.)

Lali's POV

We were all sitting at the dining room .everyone was busy on their phones . I was chatting with Aben on Whats App.

WhatsApp conversation

Aben: How is everyone?

Me: copping ...

Aben : Can I see you today

Me: Sure ...when?

Aben : Now if you can

Me: okay .

Aben : I will park the car few houses away.

Me: okay

Aben: thanks

Me:

I stood up and went to put a Jersey on. I than took my bag and phone than went out . I'm glad no one noticed me .I saw Aben's car than went in . We than drove off.

Aben: Hey ...thank you for coming.

Me: I just wanted fresh air. So where are we going to?

Aben: to my house.

Me: I don't think that a good idea .

Aben:(he smirked) don't worry we won't do anything.

Me: okay if you say so.

(We than drove in to some double story house. I assume it his house . We went in .it is beautiful.)

Me: Nice house.

Aben : thank you ...it will soon be our house.

Me:(smiled) you wish.

Aben : erhh you can go sit down there at the dining room . Please order a pizza in the meantime.

Me: Sure ...I went to sit down and ordered a pizza.

(He than came back with a throw blanket. He opened a movie than wrapped his hands around was shoulders. The door bell rang he went to check

and came back with a pizza . We were now eating and watching the movie.)

Aben: I really can't believe that you are my girlfriend.

Me: me too . I never thought I would have a boyfriend.

(He cupped my face and made me look at him .)

Aben: I love you Lalimi . I love you wholeheartedly. You are the best thing that has ever happened in my life. I promise to not break your heart and treat you like a queen you are . I will never do anything that will make you hate me . I love you .

Me: (I touched his face) I love you too .

(He leaned over and kissed me . We kissed for some time . Until he started undressing me . I grabbed his hand)

Me: I'm not ready.

Aben: Don't worry. ..I won't do anything thing . I'm just admiring your beauty.

(he continued kissing me . He than went went to my neck and to my tits and suck them like his life

depended on them . He then went down leaving wet kisses. He than reached my clit . He slowly rubbed it with his tongue. He increased his pace . It was so enjoyable that I started to moan a little . He than went to my cookie . He ate it up and I felt a sensation build up . I than released something I don't know what it is exactly. He cleaned me with his tongue than went to kiss me . He made me taste my own self.)

Aben: Did you like it.(I slowly nodded) let's go and bath together. (He carried me bridal style to the bathroom. He than ran the bath and started taking off his clothes. I was already naked so I went inside the bath . He was now naked and I could see his anaconda. It was extreme. He set behind me and I placed my back on his chest . He was playing with my hands. The water was now cold so we dried ourselves. I than put on his Tshirt . We than went back to watch TV. My phone rang it was dad.

Me: Hello .

Dad: Where are you ?

Me: I'm at a friend's house.

Dad: How can you visit a friend when you know exactly that tomorrow is a funeral.

Me: I'm coming back . I will ask Aben to come and fetch me .

Dad: okay be fast. (We than busted into laughter)

Me: you have to take me home. Before that old men finish me . (We than got dressed and drove off. He parked the car outside and we were kissing.)

Aben : thank you for today . I had a great time with you .(I just smiled.)

Me: Me too ...(I than baby kissed him) bye be safe .

Aben: sure my lady .

>>>To be continued >>>

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:06] Lynne: Insert 15

Not edited

It was the funeral day.

Everyone in the Kane household woke up and prepared to go to the funeral. No one was talking to anyone. Everyone was doing their business.

Everyone was wearing all black. The funeral was going to start at the hall where they hired a pastor than to the cemetery. After that people will go back to the Kanes household for food and drinks.

Everyone was now at the hall. Two coffins were placed at the front covered in blankets. Ana and Daisy's pictures were placed on top of each coffin and white candles were also lit so that their way to heaven can be bright. The pastor first said a welcoming prayer. After that few verses were read. It was now time for speeches. Mr Kane first did his speech.

Mr Kane: (his eyes were blood shot red) God really know how to break a parent's heart. I never thought after loosing my twins at birth I was also going to lose my other two daughters.

The day they left the world. I was taking all my children out . They said they don't want to go . I was a little sad but didn't want to show other kids that . We went to the mall and had fun . I than went to a meeting. While I was at it I got a call from one of the securities. He also couldn't talk he just said I must hurry home. When I got there. It was already too late . My daughters were brutally killed. I know there are people out there who are heartless. But who could rip off a child's heart and take out all the intestines . (Everyone held their mouths.)I've seen it in movies but I never thought my daughters will also be a victim of that . (He laughed bitterly)You know I remember when Ana first learnt how to walk . She said daddy I'll fall . And I said don't worry my dear i will always protect you . But now i was not able to protect them . I failed them as their father.

And for that i will never be able to forgive myself.

(He than went back to where he was sitting. He was crying like a little boy. Mrs Kane followed to do her speech.)

Mrs Kane: (she was also crying) I just don't know where to start. The pain I'm feeling right is worse. I feel like if I didn't go out that day I would have been there to protect my daughters. I love them ...I love them so much . I never thought I would lose them this soon . They had dreams to fulfill. They had a bright future ahead of them . But that all was snatched from them by some cruel man . (She started crying out loud. Mrs Khumalo came and took her back to her seat. Tony went front.)

Tony: (He was wearing shades to hide his tears and reddish eyes) I will speak in behalf of all my brothers. They are very broken I don't think they have the strength to speak. I never thought I would lose anyone in my life like this. I always knew there

is death. But never knew that it could take my sisters. When they are this young. I'm going to miss them . Yes they were annoying sometimes . But I loved them . I cared for them . I made them a promise that I will protect them no matter what. But I failed them . I failed them as their brother. Home will not be the same without them . They used to bring joy even in hardships. As I sit down I would like to wish them a safe journey to heaven and let them know that they are forever loved.

Zia: They were my sisters and also friends. We shared everything. We grew up together. We sometimes used to fight but that didn't mean we hate each other. When ever I felt down . They used to be my therapists. I would talk to them than after that I would feel better . Life without them will be so different. I'm now alone ...I have no one to talk to . Yes I do have other siblings. But Ana and Daisy were beyond being a sibling. They were also parents to me . There are somethings that you cannot tell your parents. But when you have a

sister you are able to be more open to them . We had dreams . We had planned our future together. But it seems like destiny had it plan . I will forever love you guys.

Lali: Erh...eh...I just don't know what to say. I've known them for a short period of time. But so far I have seen that they are nice and friendly people. I was hoping that we were going to spend more time together until we gain a sisterhood bond . But it seems like God had already planned to take his children. What I can also say to my family is that . Let's not blame God for the tragedy that has happened but be grateful that they are out of this cruel world. That they are In the safest place with the great Lord .

(Just when the pastor was about to announce that everyone can now go to the cemetery a drunk man walked in carrying a bottle of Three Ships. He was sipping it until he made his way to the stage . Mrs

Kane was very shocked because he knew the man .
It was Mike.)

Mike: (he was clapping hands) Well...well ...well . So
no one decided to tell me that I have just lost a
daughter. (Everyone was shocked they all covered
their mouths. Mr Kane who was hugging his wife
removed his hands and looked at her) yes...yes
don't be shocked it true. Ana was my daughter and
Zayn is my son .

Mr Kane: what's this nonsense?(asking his wife .
He was starting to get angry)

Mrs Kane:I don't know what he is talking about.

Mr Kane: Security!Security!please take him outside
make sure he does not cause any commotion .

(Everyone went to the cemetery. Everyone one
singing "We give you all the glory...we worship you

my lord you are wealthy to be praised ". As the coffins were going down . When it was now down the family members came one by one throwing a rose petal and soil on each coffin. They than drove to the Kane household where there were blessed water placed at the gate. For everyone to wash their hands before entering . Mr Kane was very angry he just went to his office. Lali and Ana were helping the deco people by serving the guests. It was now late everyone was now gone.

Lali's POV

I was so broken when I found out that my dad arranged a marriage for me . I knew that this man wouldn't just want me back to his life for nothing. All of this time he has been pretending that he love and care for me whereas he wants to use me. I thought I have finally found peace in my life. But it clear that I was just bluffing myself. I just wish he could just send me to an orphanage maybe there I

will find peace. I went to Zia's bedroom she didn't seem okay after the funeral. I first knocked there was so response so I decided to budge in. She was sitting on the floor and wrapped her arms around her legs . She was crying and looking at the pictures she took with her late sisters on her phone .

Me: erhh...hey .(she kept quiet) I know I'm the last person you want to see and also not your favourite person at this moment. I can also feel your pain . I really know how you are feeling. Losing both your sisters at the same time is not easy to digest .(she was now sniffing) I just wanted to let you know that . If you feel like talking to anyone you can talk to me. We may not share a mother but you are more like a sister to me . I would really love if you could also be open to me . You I wish some day we can have a sister to sister bond even more. But I'm pressurizing you . I'm also not forcing you to accept me .

Zia: I really miss them . It has only been few days without them but I already miss them . I feel lonely. (She than started crying. I brought her closed to me and started rubbing her back)

Me: everything will soon be alright. Let it all out so you can be able to pass through it. I know it won't be easy but please try.

Zia:(She wiped her tears and faced me . She tha n smiled.)I thought you were a bad person . You are very nice . I appreciate your concern. (We than hugged)i think i will really use a sister like you right now.

Me:(my eyes were now full of tears)really?wow...does that mean you accept me as your sister?

Zia:Yes ...you know when you came here. We were

very jealous of you . We thought you were going to replace us and that dad will care for you only. I just wish Ana and Daisy were still alive to see that you are actually a good person.

Me: Yeah hey ...

Zia: Anyways ...can you sleep with me today . In my bedroom.

Me: Yes ...sure why not.

Zia: I just love you .

Me: I love you more sis. Okay let's go and take some snacks in the kitchen. So we can watch something on Netflix.

Zia: sure ...thank you .

Me: you don't have to thank me all the time. We are sisters right?

Zia: yes .

Mrs Kane's POV

I am so angry at Mike for what he did. He shouldn't have done that. I was going to tell him . I was still grieving. Nxx . My husband walked in . I walked up to him . I tried cupping his face but he removed my hands.

Him: I need you to tell me the truth...Who was that man ?

Me: Which man my love ?

Him: The one that was creating a commotion in the hall .

Me: I don't k...know ...I don...I don't know him.

Him:I'M GOING TO ASK YOU FOR THE LAST TIME...WHO WAS THAT MAN AND WHAT HE WAS TALKING ABOUT?

Me: I don't my love...I don't know him.

Him: I see you want to tell he the hard way(he was taking off his belt)

Me: okay ...okay I will tell you the truth. ..the whole truth but please calm down. (He sat down) So you remember that we used to see each behind your wife's back?

Him: yeah so?

Me: You weren't the only person I seeing. I was also having an affair with that man . His name is Mike . After I was pregnant with Layne i decided to pin the pregnancy to you .

Him: But how come is Ana his too?

Me: We kept seeing each even after I delivered

Layne.

Him: Wow....wow...you know what?...forget anyway
(He went out . I ran after him and tried to hold his hand but he pushed so hard that I even fell . He than went out and drove off.)

Lali: are you okay?

Me: yeah ...go back to your room(I said while standing up than went back to our bedroom)

Mr Kane's POV

I just lost two daughters now this . Why now ? . I trusted her. I even killed both my wives so that I can be with her. How could she betray be like this . I loved and supported her unconditionally. In return she do this to me. I just don't know what to do with this situation. But I would never treat Layne any way different. He will always be my son no matter what . I was on my way to bar . I just need to clear my head and think straight about what will happen

next .

At the Owen's household.

Odin's POV

So we came back from the funeral. My girlfriend has been ignorant since that party we went too. I think I have to talk to her tomorrow. Dad asked to see me so I'm on my way to her study . I knocked than got in .

Me: Hey pops.

Him: Hello son ...how are you ?

Me: I'm fine...so what's up?

Him: I wanted to let you know that you will no longer get married to Lali .

Me: Ow...really ...I mean ...that's good news.

Him: yeah and I'm also sorry that I had to threaten you in order for you to agree on the arranged marriage.

Me: No problem. ..can I go now?

Him: sure.

I left and went back to my bedroom. I don't why I'm feeling this strange. I'm supposed to be over the moon . But here I feel this way . Am i starting to like the girl?...i don't know . But she is indeed beautiful and any guy would kill to be with her .

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:06] Lynne: Insert 16

Not edited

Odin's POV

It was now in the morning. I woke up and had breakfast. I took my car and drove to my girlfriend's crib. I parked my car inside than went in . She was still sleeping so I decided to join her . I cuddled her. She than woke up and went to take a bath.

Me: Hey

Her: Hi(she than continued getting dressed)

Me: I was hoping we could talk.

Her: About what exactly?

Me: About Lalimi.

Her: ohh so now you want to talk about it . You hid it from me .

Me: I know and I'm sorry . What happened is my dead kind of threatened me . He said if I don't agree to get married to her . He was going to dis own me and make my life miserable. And you know my dad well . He is a man of his words so I wouldn't risk my life and future like that. So the plan was to get married to her and than we move to Germany. I

was going to take you with . When we get to Germany I was going to divorce her . So that we can start a fresh life there.

Her: Really?

Me: Yeah ...

Her: But still you should have told me.

Me: I'm sorry .(I than leaned over and kissed her .)

Her: I forgive you . (I than picked her up and started undressing her. While I was still busy at it a call came through. It was one of my friends telling me there's a party.)

Me: Babe are you coming with me to the party?

Her: Nah babe...I'm very tired

Me: okay let me get going (I kissed her forehead)bye okay.

Her: bye I love you .

Me: I love you too.

Tony's POV

So my brothers and I have planned a party but not here. At our friend's house. We just want to distress. I was now getting ready. I then went to them to check if they are done or not.

Zayn:Guys don't y'll think the girls also need to distress?

Tony:No we can not go with them ...remember we will be back tomorrow.

Jase: But it will be nice to also go with them. We can drop them off later.

Tony : I don't ...you can ask them .

(We then went to Zia's bedroom. They were sitting on the bed watching something on the TV.)

Zayn: Hey guys ...how are y'll doing?

Lali: We getting there how are you guys doin?

Jase: We trying to cope.

Zayn: So guys we are going to a party. Don't you guys want to go with us ?

Lali: No ...we are fine .

Zia: But I would really like to go . Let's go Lali .

Lali: Okay ... I'm only going because of you .

(Zia smiled. They have really become friends. Thanks God. Lali went to her room and came back wearing a ripped jean and a white big sweater. Zia was also wearing a Jean and a sweater.)

Zayn: Are you guys ready to go ?

Lali&Zia: Yep .

(We then went to the car. I was driving . So we drove off. When we got to the place where the party was held it was already full . So we went inside to sit on the sofas . Everything was there booze and hooker pipe . We set down and started drinking.)

Lali's POV

Zia was really enjoying herself. I'm really happy .
She was also drinking alcohol.

Zia: Do you want some?(she was carrying a brutal
fruit can)

Me: Nah ...I'm fine...I don't drink .

Zia: Come on just one can .

Me: No I'm fine really.

Zia: Please Lali for today only. You know I feel guilty
that you came here because I asked you and I'm
busy enjoying myself whereas you are here dying of
boredom.

Me: Dont worry I'm fine ...

Zia: Please (she was making puppy eyes.)

Me:okay just one can .

(I took and started drinking it . It wasn't that bad .

Zia kept on giving me more .until I was starting to
get tipsy. I continued drinking until I was completely
drunk . I started dancing on top of the table and
everyone has formed a circle. I than set down
because I was now feeling like vomiting. I set down

and now everyone was now around. Someone gave me a hooker and showed me how I should pull . I tried at first I coughed everyone laughed. After the first try I was now able to pull and blew the smoke.I was now dancing with some guy . I think I have seen him before .i think his name is Odin. J ust than someone dragged me so harshly upstairs. It was Tony. What's wrong with this guy now)

Me: No let me go ...I wanna go dance.

Tony: Shut up before I slap you.

Me: (I held my mouth than busted into laughter.We than got in to some room . He pushed me into the bathroom. He made me stand under the shower and than ran it. The water was very cold that I was starting to shiver.)

Me: Tony please man . Can I come out now...I'm feeling cold .(he than gave me a towel . I took of the wet clothes and covered my body with the towel he gave me. I than went to sit on the bed. I was now better .)

Tony: I will go and get you a coffee. (I just nodded and went straight to bed. After that I was fast asleep.)

Tony's POV

I just came back with Lali's coffee. But it seems she is fast asleep. I took off my sneakers and joined her. I looked at her . She is even more beautiful when asleep. I looked at her pouted pink lips . When Lali was dancing with Odin . I felt my anger building up . I mean I don't hate him but I want no one near my flower. I cuddled her . After some time I decided to go back to the party . I think I should dump Carol . She is starting to annoy me . I'm no longer interested in her. I went to sit next to her.

Carol:Where were you ?

Me: I was busy with something.

Carol: What's that?(I rolled my eyes)

Me:Can you stop asking me useless questions.

Carol: But I want to know.

(I just stood up and went to the gents.She followed me.)

Carol: Can I talk to you urgently in private.

Me:Why?...can't we just talk after the party?

Carol: it urgent now please. (Gosh...she is a pain on the neck . Why can't she let me enjoy the party in peace. ..nxx)

Me: okay (I followed her upstairs to another room. We got in she started kissing me . I didn't kiss her back)

Carol: What's wrong ?

Me: What?

Carol: Why aren't you kissing me back.

Me: I thought you said you want to talk to me .

Carol: Yeah ...but

Me: Shoot...I don't have time for this.

Carol: You have been distant. You not the same Tony I fell inlove with . You are slowly changing. Tony are you cheating on me ?

Me: What?I'm not ...even if I was you wouldn't know .

Carol : so why are you suddenly ignorant...we haven't been sexually intimate for passed weeks.

Me:So this is about sex?

Carol: No ...I mean ...We used to spend more time with each other but now we don't.

Me: Come on Carol ...do you not see that our relationship spark has finished?...We no longer interested into one another.

Carol: That's not true my love. I still love you . I can still feel the spark in our relationship. I also know that your family has been through so much . I understand why you this ...

Me: No Carol ...let me straight forward. This thing is over. ..we are over .

Carol:What?(She started crying)You can't do that to me love.(she cupped my face . I slowly removed her hands)

Me: it better this way . This relationship was long dead. Anyways I have to go .

(I went back to the gents)

Ethan: Wow that was quick ...I'm sure you left the poor girl unable to walk.

Me:(I playfully hit him)We are Over .

Zayn: What do you mean by that?

Me: Carol and I are over. I just dumped her.

Jase: how ?What happened?I hope you're not going back to your old ways of being a fuckboy.

Me: nah chill ...

Mrs Kane's POV

It was now very late the kids and my husband are

not yet back home. I tried calling them but no one answers. I tried to call my husband once again.

Him: hello ...what do you want now?Do you now want to tell me that all my children aren't mine. (He was very drunk . So arguing with him won't help)

Me: I'm sorry. ..I'm deeply sorry ... please love come back home so we can talk things out .

Him: ohh ...you want me to come back so you can continue to lie on my face . Never.

Me: Drinking alcohol won't come up with a solution .

Him: Can you just let me grieve in peace.

(He dropped the call. Nxx. I decided to call Mike .)

Mike: Yes .

Me: You see what you have done ?

Mike: what I did?Because I only told everyone the truth.

Me: It was not the right time nor the right place . It was my daughters funeral .

Mike: I know but I was very angry and heartbroken. That my daughter died without knowing me .

Me: I was planning to tell them .

Mike: I will call you later...I have something important to take care of.

It was now in the morning.

Lali's POV

I woke up and looked around. This is not my bedroom. I stood up and held my head. I had a severe headache. I looked through the window and remembered that I was in a party than Ana offered me a drink after that I can't remember. The door opened and I turned around. Ana was coming in carrying a coffee.

Ana: I brought you some coffee.

Me: thank you very much. It's like you knew I needed it . I feel like i just got hit by a truck .

Ana: i know and I'm sorry

Me: You shouldn't. Apologize. It's not like you forced me to drink . It was my decision.

Ana: i know bu..

Me:Please don't. Where are the boys?

Ana: they are downstairs.

Me: okay...

(I finished my coffee than went to the bathroom to wash my face and rinse my mouth. I than went downstairs)

Zayn:Attention everyone. Here comes the dance star .(He than bowed down and everyone started clapping hands. What's going? I went to him)

Me: What are you talking about?(J ase came through)

J ase: I didn't know you can dance . You are rocking sis.

Me: What are you guys talking about?(Zayn decided to show me a video in his phone . There I saw myself dancing ,drinking and smoking .I just covered myself with my hands.)

Me:(I laughed)I'm never drinking again. (Tony came downstairs)

Tony: it's time to go home everyone.

J ase: Come on T it's still early.

Tony: no no no ...we are going home right now .(we all dragged ourselves to the car . He than drove off. I was sleeping all the way . I woke up when we arrived . I just went to my bedroom. A call from J ames came through)

Me: Hello

J ames: Hey doll . Can I come tomorrow to start with

designing your room?

Me: yes ...sure there's no problem.

James:Okay bye.

(I then went to take a bubble bath. I soaked myself inside. After awhile I came out then dried myself. I put on my tracksuits ,socks and Nike push ins. I went downstairs. Everyone was watching TV but Mrs Kane and dad weren't.)

Me: where's dad ?(I just remembered I have something important to discuss with him)

Ana:Mom...said he's not home.

Me: okay .(A call came through it was Aben . I went back to my bedroom)

Aben: I tried to call you yesterday but you didn't answer.

Me: When?

Aben: I think it was 8pm

Me: I was probably sleeping. (I remember clearly. I can't tell him I was out partying. I know boyfriends hate that .)

Aben: really?I guess it was not you on the video.

Me: What video?

Aben: I just viewed J ase's status. (Oh snap .)can I see you ?

Me: No ...I'm. ..

Aben: I'm coming to fetch you ...wait for me where you always do .(He than switched off his cellphone. Nxx. I went out with no one noticing. He pulled over than I got into the car .The drive to his house want very quiet. He went in and left me in the car . I just don't know why he is angry mxn. I went in he was watching TV. !set next to him)

Me:Are you .okay.

Aben: yeah ...Lali I love you and i hate it when you lie to me . Or you don't tell me things. You were

supposed to tell me that you going out . I was worried sick about you . On top of that I couldn't get you on the phone.

Me:(I kissed him)I'm sorry hey. I didn't mean you cared that much for me.

Aben: What do you mean Lali ?I love you . Lali are you cheating on me?(what?)

Me: What?

Aben: Who was that guy you were dancing with?

Me: I was drunk ...

Aben: oh so you are going to cheat and blame alcohol.

Me: Come on Aben . your insecurities are unnecessary.

Aben: oh really. (He dragged me into his bedroom. He closed the door and pinned me on the door. He started kissing me hungrily. He was slowly taking off my clothes)

Me: What are you doing?

Aben: I'm about to have sex with my girlfriend.

Me:(I tried to push him but he was strong so he held my hands)I told you ...I'm not yet ready.

Aben: I don't care .(He tried to kiss me again. I decided to use my powers . I pushed him across the room . He hit his back and fell down . I ran downstairs and took my phone. I tried to call dad but he didn't answer. I called Tony .)

Me: I need you to come and get me . (I was relaxed)

Tony: Where ?

Me: At Aben's house.

Tony: what?but what are you doing there?

Me: can you just come I'll explain everything later.

Tony: okay.

In the meanwhile Aben was busy on his phone talking to someone. I decided to eavesdrop .

Tony: Sir i have found her. You need to come to my place now .

(I didn't know exactly what he was talking but what I know is . Aben is not who I thought he is. I decided to go inside.)

Me: Who were you talking to ?

Aben: No...n...no one.

Me: oh really. ..I'm going to ask you ...one last time. Who were you talking to?(I was slowly transforming)

Aben: oh Shit ...it really you . Why ?why you Lali ?Why did you do it?

Me: (what is he talking about . He even had tears.) what are you talking about?

Aben"?: YOU FUCKEN KILLED MY MOTHER!

Me:(I was shocked)Your?...m...mother? When? Why would i do thati don't even know your mother.

Aben: The day you came to the Kanes household.

My mother died the day before.

Me: What do you mean by that?who are you .

Aben: I'm Aben Owen ...You killed my mother . (I heard a car hoot. I guess it's Tony.)

Me: erh...I have to go .

Aben: no ...you're not going anywhere?

Me: Aben ...I don't want to hurt you so please move out of my way .(He took out his gun and pointed it on me. I laughed a little. I than transformed but not fully . I went straight to him . I held him by his throat and threw him against the wall. He started shooting this motherfuck. I charged to his neck with my fangs. It was over for him . He died on the spot .)

Me: weak ass nigga. You didn't know who you were messing with . (I took his body and left it on the bath .I transformed back to myself. I washed my face and hands than went to Tony.)

Me : please drive . (He drove off)

Tony: What were you doing there ?(I was still lost in my thoughts. I kept thinking about what Aben said

that I killed his mom . But how exactly.)

Tony:(He waved in front of my face)Hello ...are you okay ?

Me: yes... I'm fun .

Tony: you doesn't look fine though. (We got home .)

Me: thanks.

Tony: pleasure. You still owe me some explanation and what took you so long to come out.

Me: erh...erh Aben locked me inside his house.

Tony: What ? Where did he go to ?

Me: I don't know . Can we talk about this later .

Tony:sure.

(We went in I decided to go to Mrs Kane. She was in their bedroom. I knocked than went in .)

Me:Erh...hello .(she was lost in her thoughts)Hello .

Her: oh hey Lali .(She slowly wiped her tears trying to hide from me that she was crying)

Me: are you okay?

Her: what are you doing here?What do you want?

Me: I just want to speak to dad .

Her: He's not here so please leave.

Me: wh...

Her: leave Lali .(She pushed me outside than locked the door. I wonder what's going on .I hope it's not about that man who was saying stupid things at the funeral. I went to my bedroom and locked the door . Suddenly everything went dark after that I passed out . It was like I'm in a dream .

A voice said "Lali you need to be careful. The pers on that took your mother's powers is responsible for the death of that boy's mother. He has the ability to full others . He is very deceptive. He was very close into finding you . Lali you have so many enemies. There's something I have been hiding from you ."

Me: what's that?

"Your family was divided. Your mom had a sibley. They looked alike. They hated each other. She is very cruel . So many people hated your mom because they thought it was her. She killed so many innocent people. She is the reason why you have so many enemies. She is the reason why beasts are hated."

Me: is she dead?

"No ...she's not. She is out there hiding . She doesn't know you exist. "

Me: but how do you know that ?

" Because if she knew she would have came back for you . To kill you and take your powers. And Lali

please stop dating bad guys . Your mate is out there getting married "

Me:What? But I don't even know him

" when the time is right you will know him "

I than woke up

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:07] Lynne: Insert 17

Lali's POV

As I woke i decided to go and talk to Tony . I went to his bedroom he was busy in his phone.

Me: erh...hey ...am i disturbing you?

Tony: come on you're not. Isn't i asked you to tell me ...

Me: yeah...yeah that's why i came here. (I kept quiet a little)Aben and I were dating.

Tony:What?(He suddenly got angry)Lali how can you do that? HE IS A FUCKING DRIVER. HE IS ALSO OLDER THAN YOU ...I WONDER WHAT WILL DAD SAY ABOUT THIS.

Me: that is why I came here. Can this please stay between us.

Tony: No dad deserves to know.

Me: come on ...please dude ...

Tony: okay but tell me why did he lock you inside his house and left?

Me: we had a fight. He was angry that I went to the party . He also saw the video of Odin and I dancing. He started accusing me of cheating. Things got out of hand. He dragged me to his bedroom and demanded sex. I told him I wasn't ready so he

pushed on the bed and locked me inside his bedroom. So I took my phone and called you while I was trying to break through the door .

Tony: But Lali you should have told us that you're dating Aben . What if he did the unspoken. Next time please do tell us . Come here(I went to him . Than he hugged me)

Me:Enough now ...can I go now .

Tony: Can we watch a movie together.

Me: nah...I'm tired.

Tony: please.

Me: okay than.(He took his laptop)

Tony: So what type of movie you would like to watch ?

Me: I'm fine with anything?

Tony: okay let's go with this action movie.

(We watched it until it was very late . I was starting to feel sleepy. I was even yawning)

Me: Can I go and sleep now. I'm feeling a bit sleepy.

Tony: You can sleep here if you don't mind.

Me: nah...i don't want to bother you .it fine i will sleep in my bedroom.

Tony: okay goodnight i guess.

Tony's POV

When Lali told me that she was dating Aben .I felt like slapping the hell out of her . To say I was angry would be an understatement I was in fact fuming. I mean I trusted Lali . I never thought she would date anyone who is way older than her. The way I was angry I felt like feeding. I called Carol to ask where she was . She told me and I told her I'm coming to fetch her. I lied and said I want to fix things. I drove to her place and made sure that no one knows I took her . I drove to my secret house.

Carol: I'm glad we're fixing things. I knew you were going to come back to me . (She held my hand)I

miss ed you babe .

Me: me too (I smirked at her)I miss ed you too babe.
(We finally arrived I was so irritated . She went on
and on talking. That I felt like stopping the car at the
middle of the road and finish her .)

Carol: babe where are we? What's this place?

Me: don't worry babe...it somewhere where no one
will disturb us . (We came in . I could see that she
was a little worried.)chill I'm here.

Carol's POV

I have never seen Tony like this . He seemed
drained. So he took me to this place . When I
looked outside there were no houses near . It like
we are in the middle of the forest. When I got in .
The house was very dirty . He said I must relax but
that made me even more scared . He went to
another room . I slowly went to what seemed like a
passage. I opened the first room . I held my mouth.

They were clothes of a woman scattered around and blood on the bed. I ran back to where I was sitting . I took his phone of which he left on the table . I tried to open the but it was locked. Oh shit when did he lock . I was now crying so softly. When I turned he was standing right at the door way .

Tony: what are you trying to do babe?(he said smiling so evil.)

Me: I was ..I wanted to get some fresh air ...it really hot in here. (He went closer and kissed me . I didn't return the kiss)

Tony: What's wrong? Are you okay?

Me: I'm fine ...I just need water...

Tony: okay I'll go and fetch it for you .

(He went back. I ran to the same bedroom. There was a window. I open it and went out through it . I still have his phone with me . I ran very fast . I don't even know where i was going . I was starting to feel tired. I decided to call his parent's phone .

Their phones put me straight to voicemail. I called his sister Lali .

Me: please pick up !...please pick up !(it rang unanswered.)

Tony: Carol my dear . I'm the only one who knows the way out of here. So please stop wasting my time and come back . I will count from 1 up to 10 if you still don't come out and i find you . I won't spare your life .

Me: (I was now crying . I kept calling his parents numbers and his sisters numbers.)

Tony:1.....2.....3.....4.....5....6....7..

Me: (finally Lali decided to answer)

Lali:Hey what's up?

Me: Lali ...lali you need to help me ...Tony ...Tony wants to kill me you need to help me....please....Tony is a bad person he kills people.

Lali: okay please calm down and tell me where you're?

Me: I don't know but we went...(just than I felt a sharp pain on my neck . I dropped his phone and he stepped on it destroying it. He sucked my blood until I became weak)

Tony's POV

She finally fell down. She is a strong chick. I checked her pulse and it wasn't there. I wonder who she was talking to on my phone . I now have to get a new phone . This fucking whore. I took her body back to the house . I sucked more blood and put her body in the deep fridge. I will attend it some other day . I have to hurry home.

Lali's POV

I heard everything that happened there. I decided to go to Tony's room to check if he is there or not . He wasn't. I held my mouth. So it's true Tony really

killed her . While she was still telling me the directions I heard something roaring . I wonder what Tony is ?.Because it clear he is not normal. Even if he is my brother. I won't tolerate him killing innocent people. I need to think carefully about this . I cannot ask him because he may want to harm me . It's not like I'm scared of him but I need to know what he is first . I went back to my room so heartbroken. That someone just asked me to help them but I failed to . I just felt like a mess I locked my bedroom door and went to the bathroom to take a cold shower. After that I put on my pjs and went to sleep .

Mr Kane's POV

I was on my way home from the bar . While I was driving a car was parked on the middle of the road and it was creating a traffic. I went to it and knocked on it window. To my surprise it was Kayla.

Me: What?Kayla....how are you?(I suddenly felt better. All the anger I had in my heart just disappeared.)

Kayla: wow...is this really you . We last saw each that day remember. After that I couldn't find.

Me: (she hugged me)where have you been?

Kayla:I have been around. I was starting my life afresh here . I have even started a business and bought a house here.

Me: wow that's good news

Kayla: Can we do lunch tomorrow?

Me: yes please...I was also going to ask that. Can I have your number this time . So that if you decide to go AWOL again I can find you.

(She smiled)

Kayla: Here .(She gave me her business card)

Me: so why is your car parked at the middle of the road.

Kayla: I don't know what's wrong with It . It doesn't

want to start. (I went in and tried it . But it started)

Kayla: wow I think my car is strange really. A moment ago it wasn't starting now it does.

Me: maybe destiny made it . So we can meet again.(the cars were staring to hoot and the drivers were staring to throw slime comments)Let me leave you before they finish us .

Kayla: bye

(I than drive off)

Mrs Kane's POV

I was sitting alone in our bedroom. Looking at my wedding pictures. My eyes were now filled with tears. I never thought my life and marriage will take this turn . I thought nothing will ever change between my husband and I. Suddenly I heard the door open .

Me: Lali can you pl...(it was him)love ...where have you been?(He kept quiet and went to the bathroom. He took a bath than came back .)my love can we talk ?

Him: tomorrow I'm very tired right now . And please charge my phone for me .(He switched off the light .after a while he was snoring. I'm sure he is drunk .he only snore when he's drunk .I went to charge his phone than went back to sleep.)

Mr Owen's POV

I received a call from Aben . He is my late brother's son . So he has been helping me so much. So just after he was back from his training I sent him to spy on the Kane family .I knew there was something about them . That's also how I found out that they have been holding hostage of Nora. He has been a great help to me . So I killed his mother because she was starting to turn him against me. I pretended to be an Adila than killed her. I told him

that the Adila is in town and responsible for the death of her mother. So his mission was to fund it . He called me and told me he has found it . So i was driving to his house. When I got there I went in and called her name . There was no response . I went upstairs to his room but he was also not there. I heard water running. I think he's bathing. I set on his bed . It was now after 30 minutes but he was still not out and the water was still running. I went in . I found his dead body in the bath . On his neck he had fingerprints of a beast. I cursed and called my son to help me with his body . She was here . I think I need to call Mr Kane . We need to have a great deal. He must give me his daughter and I will give him two of my businesses. I tried to call his number but his phone was off. I will go to his office tomorrow.

It was now in the morning

Mrs Kane's POV

I woke and my husband was already awake .

Me : Can we talk now

Him: there's really nothing to talk about . What I can tell you is that J ase must never know his true identity. He will forever be my son . And please cut ties with that men or else...

Me: does that mean you forgive me ?

Him: yes obviously. I can't stay angry for so long on my wife .

(I went to him and packed his lips)

Me: thank you very much . From today onwards I will not hide anything from you. I love you.

Him:(he just kissed my forehead and went to the bathroom. I was happy atleast he has forgiven me . I went to prepare breakfast for everyone. They all came to the table and started eating.)

Zia: Wow mom. ..it's great to see you and dad

having breakfast with us . We missed you .

Mrk: don't worry my dear. From now on everything will go back to normal. (Lali was lost in her thoughts. She wasn't even eating)

Me: Lali are you okay ?.why I you not eating?if you don't want the food I have prepared you can get and make your own food.

Lali: dad can I speak to you for a moment .

Mrk:s ure.

Lali: in your office.

Mrk: that's sound serious let's go .(I wonder what she wants now)

Lali's POV

At the table I was still thinking about this Tony issue. I'm trying to show him that I know nothing. Anyways I was now with dad in his office.

Dad: so what's up?

Me: dad do you truly love and care for me?

Dad: yes I do . Why?

Me: why did you decide to come back into my life exactly?

Dad: Lali I once told and I won't repeat myself. I have a meeting to attend bye(he was halfway the door)

Me: I know that you arranged a marriage for me.

Dad:(he was so chilled)I was going to tell you about. It will no longer happen .I had arranged it before we fixed things . Lali I wouldn't do that .I wouldn't do something that can turn you against me again. I love you Lali and I'm trying by all means to show you that . I cancelled that deal on the dat Ana and Daisy were killed. If you don't trust me I can even call a meeting between Mr Martinez ,you and I.

Me: no ...no dad I trust you completely. (I hugged him)In a week time I'm going back to school. I just wanted to remind you .

Dad: don't you perhaps want to study here?

Me: no ...I'm fine there .

Dad: really?

Me:yeah..

Dad: okay bye .

Me: have a good day .(my heart was now at peace.
The only thing that is worrying me now

Is this Tony issue. I will just have to watch his
every move . I went to my bedroom and J ames was
already there.)

J ames: hey doll. Still not bathed ?

Me: yeah . I will use Zia's bathroom don't worry . (I
went and took my towels and toiletries. I went to
the wardrobe and took out a mini skirt,white T shirt
and Van's sneakers. So today I was going to visit
my friend. It has been so long since I haven't seen
her .)

Please like and comment

Very shot I know I'm so exhausted. This black parent of mine is busy ordering me around

[06/23, 08:08] Lynne: Insert 18

Lali's POV

I was now at Nomhle's house. Wow so many things have changed. They now have securities on the gate that escorted me to the house. They even changed the interior design. I went to the dining room. They were having breakfast. Mrs Khumalo looked like those Housewives.

Me: Hello everyone. (I went to hug them one by one)

Mrs K: how are you my dear?

Me: I'm good you?

Mrsk: I'm good ...how are things at home ?

Me: They are well .

Nomhle : I missed hey ...I last saw you at the funeral.

Me: I always visit you . But you never come to visit me .

Nomhle: Don't worry sweetie pie today I'll sleep over at your house.

Me: really...that's great.

Mrsk:Nomhle bring another plate for Lali.

Me: no I'm fine I just had breakfast at home.

Mrsk:Okay my babies I have to go to the office. I have a lot of meetings to attend.

Me:So mom how is being a boss treating you ?

Mrsk: So far so good . I'm just happy we are now a happy family. No violence .

Me: That's great have a good day .

Mrsk:bye .(She took her bag and made her way out .

Her stilettos were making noise.)So friend are you ready for school ?

Nomhle: Nah man ...anyways I'm changing school?

Me: What ? Why?

Nomhle: From now on I will be home school. Phela stepdad is no longer here to make my life difficult.

Me: Wow and you only telling me that now . My dad also wanted me to change school. But I thought if you. I can't be in different schools with you .

Nomhle: You can also be home schooled and we will live together here.

Me : no I'm fine anyway it my last year there.

Nomhle: Do you want to go to a mall?

Me: sure.

Nomhle: Don't worry I'm paying this time . Let's go . We will use my car ?

Me: You now have a car?

Nomhle: Yes and a driver too.

Me: Wow okay let's go than . Did you pack your bag for the sleep over?

Nomhle: No I'll buy new clothes and pjs.

Me : okay .(we went to her car and the driver drove off to the mall . We got there and went to buy more clothes. After that we went to Steers and ordered burgers.)

Nomhle: friend do you mind if I buy alcohol for the sleep over ?

Me: What? You never told me that you drink alcohol?

Nomhle: yeah I do . So?

Me: you can buy it but I won't drink it .

Nomhle: Okay(She went to buy it and hid it on the plastic that has clothes.)

Me: Can we go home now ...I'm really tired .(We went home and went straight to my bedroom. James was still busy with it . So we went to the guestroom .)

Me: Come let's go downstairs so I can introduce you to my siblings.

Nomhle: Sure .(we went downstairs and they were busy watching TV)

Me: Hello everyone this is my bestie Nomhle and Nomhle these are my siblings. (They introduced themselves. We set down and watched TV with them)

Me : where's Tony?

Zayn: He went to his ex girlfriend's house. They said she is missing.

Me: what? And how is Tony supposed to know because they were no longer dating .

Jase: we don't know . We just hope she is fine wherever she is .

(Tony walked in)

Tony: Hey everyone...who we got here?

Nomhle: Nomhle ...my name is Nomhle . Lali's bestie.

Tony: Ohh it's great to meet you . Anyways guys if any of you need me . I'm in ny room .

Me : okay...can I speak to you privately?

Tony: Sure .(we went to his room)

Me : are you okay?

Tony: Yeah .

Me : They told me that your ex girlfriend is missing.
(I looked him straight to his eyes)

Tony: yeah hey ...I don't even know where she is .

Me: When last did you see her ?

Tony: on the day of the party.

Me : I heard you broke up with her .

Tony : yeah.(I held his hand . It was very cold . I
looked into his eyes . They weren't normal)

Me: Are you okay? Do you have fever?(I said
touching his forehead. It was warm . But his hands
are cold .)Anyway let me leave you .(when I was
going out I pretended to fall very bad just before I
could hit the floor he got me . Got you Dracula's
son . He is indeed a vampire.)

Me: thanks very much .

Tony: My pleasure.

(I went to the guest room I'll be using. I locked the door and set down . Why would he kill innocent people? . Like we are not supposed to harm people that do no harm in us . We're supposed to protect the humans not hurt them . It is considered a sin to feed on humans . I need to put a stop to this . Even if it means killing him I will .)

Mr Kane POV

I was now packing my staff and getting ready to go to the address Kayla gave me on WhatsApp. She said it will be better if we have dinner in her house . While I was still busy Mr Owen walked in .

MrO: Finally we meet again .

Me : What now Owen?

MrO: Please let's sit down . We have something important to discuss. (we set down) The last time

we met you said you don't know where's Nora's daughter?

Me: yeah ...so what?

MrO: Have you found her ?

Me: no.

MrO: Ohh please Mr Kane . Stop lying to me . I know that she's now living with you .(I swallowed hard)

Me: (I was now standing and pointing him on his face) Listen here you scumbag. I don't want you near my daughter . If you do I'll personally chop your balls and feed them to your dogs . Stay away from my family. Or else you will have an early death. (He just laughed)

MrO: I know you are dangerous and people out there are scared of you . But you're not a threat to me . I can just rip of your throat right at this moment.

Me: oh really...I want to see you try .(I don't even know when he got up but he was strangling me . I was now unable to breathe he than let go .I was

now coughing he gave me a glass of water and I drank it .) What are you?

MrO : What do you think we were doing that day ? I was getting her powers . I don't have the whole day . The deal is you hand over your daughter I give you two of my companies and a supplier for cocaine too .if you don't I will tell her the truth. What happened on that day .So please think about it . I will give you two weeks .(he than left. I just set down defeated. I held my neck it was very painful. I took a whiskey than drank it from the bottle. A call came through it was Kayla)

Me:Hello .

K: Hey ...you're are still coming right?

Me: Yes ...I'm on my way.(I dropped it .I took my car keys and drove to her place. It was n't very far . I parked my car next to hers than got in . There was a table for two people . Red and white candles were lited. She came wearing a very beautiful body hugging black dress. I went to her and held her

waist.)

Me: You look appetising .

(Smiled . I pulled a chair for her than went to sit on the other chair.)

Me: So how are you ?

K: I'm fine and you ?

Me : I'm fine too. (We were now eating.) very delicious. You made it?

K: yes and thanks.

Me: Wow very nice . (We finished eating and we were now drinking) There's something I have been wanting to tell you. Since that night I saw you . I couldn't stop thinking about you . I think I'm inlove with you .(She held both my hands)

K: I feel the same way too.(we stood up and kissed . Things led to another. We were now in her bedroom doing the deed.)

Lali's POV

So Nomhle,Zia and I were now in the bedroom .
They were drinking alcohol . As much as I wanted to
drink but I have a mission tonight. Atleast I can do
for Carol is to bring her body for her family to
peacefully bury it . It was now very late at night .
The girls were fast asleep. So I took my phone and
called the Uber. I went few houses away from
home . I stood there until the Uber arrived.

Me: There's a car that will come out of that
house(Pointing at home)please follow it.

The driver: okay .(Just then a car came out it was
driving very fast)

Me: please follow it and don't show it that there's
someone following .(We followed it until it was the
end of the road .)

Me: it fine you can drop me here .

The driver: No madam I can't. It's not safe for you
to walk alone in a place like this .

Me: You really are wasting my time. Don't worry I can take care of myself. (I walked out . I was wearing black tracksuits. I ran into the forest. I fully transformed so that even if he sees me but will not recognize me . I ran very fast until I saw a small house in the middle of the forest . I went closer to it and looked through the window. There he was sitting. Sipping blood from a glass . I kicked the door open and charged to him . He tried fighting me but I was very strong. He was slowly transforming. I held his neck until he passed out . I could smell a human blood . I went to the deep fridge to what looked like a kitchen and indeed Carol's body was in there. I took a plastic than put it in it . I went to the passes out Tony . I cut him a little on his face using my nails than went out. I ran very fast than dumped her body at the police station. I hurried home than transformed back . I took the tracksuits and threw them on the bin outside our house. I took a quick shower than went to bed.)

Tony's POV

I was woken up by a cold water splashed on my face. I slowly opened my eyes . It was my uncle . I held my chick it was very painful I had a cut . My throat was also in pain .

Uncle: It was here. The Adila .

Tony:what? But how did it know my whereabouts.

Uncle: It is very powerful my boy . Very powerful. What I can tell you is ...you need to lay low a bit . I think it is after you .

Tony: Do I have to worry ?

Uncle: Yes ofcourse. You're lucky it didn't kill you . I wonder what it wanted?(I ran to the fridge and Carol's body wasn't there . Shit.)

Me: It took the body I was feeding on yesterday.

Uncle: What? Why would it do that? (He kept quiet for sometime)Are you thinking what I'm thinking?

Me: What are you thinking?

Uncle: The Adila may perhaps be related to the body it took.

Me: But she only have one sister. She is a good girl. She goes to church and doesn't even party.

Uncle: I think it's her. She wouldn't show herself. It is not allowed to reveal itself on its enemies. We need to check the girl.

Me: okay. Shit I have to go now.

It was now in the morning.

Mr Kane's POV

I woke up. Kayla had her head on my chest I was brushing her hair.

Kayla: Goodmorning love.(I kissed her)

Me: Goodmorning Mrs Kane to be.(She smiled)How was your night?

Kayla: Very good and yours?

Me: Spectacular.

(She kissed me)

Kayla: let me go and make breakfast for us .

Me: don't worry we will make it together. Let's first go and bath. We took bath and went to make breakfast. We ate .after that I received a call from my phone . I just ignored it .

Me: I have to go now (I kissed her than drove off to my house . When I got there they were having breakfast.)

Me: Goodmorning family.

Mrs K: Goodmorning. ..you didn't come home last night.

Me: I have something important to discuss with you .

Mrs k: Okay ...but first I just received a call that Aben is no more.

Lali: What?

MrsK: Yeah ...His uncle called and informed us .

Me: His uncle. ..but he never told us about his family.

Mrsk: I was also surprised. So this evening we have to visit them . He was very good to us . The least we can do is support his family with the preparations.

Lali:Dad what's happened on your neck?

Me:...nothing ...don't worry my dear . And Tony what happened to your face and neck .

Tony: Last night I went out and got in a fight with some guy .

Dad: I see .

<<To be continued >>

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:08] Lynne: Insert 19

Mr Kane's POV

I was now in the bedroom with my wife . I want her to give me a solution on this problem I'm facing. Mr Owen is a very dangerous man . The way he held my neck I almost fainted. So I wouldn't want to mess with a person like him.

Mrs: So what is it that you wanted us to talk about ?

Me: I have a problem ...MrOw...

Mrs: ooh...so you only come home when you have a problem. Last night I waited for you and you didn't come. You only remember that you have a wife once you experience a problem . You know what? I'm tired of you. I'm tired of apologizing to your old ass. I've apologized for several times. I've shown you that I really regret what I did way back . You even said we must let it pass . But here you're not coming at home.

Me: About that I was too stressed so I went to a bar .
You know what I have a serious problem to deal
with. I won't waste my time explaining myself to
you .(I was halfway to the door)

Mrs: So what is it that you wanted us to talk
about?(I went back to her)

Me: Mr Owen wants Lali . He said if I give him Lali
he will give me his companies and a supplier. If I
don't he's going to tell her the whole truth about
what happened that night her mom died .

Mrs: Hhh...that's a serious problem .

Me: I just don't know what to do .

Mrs: Tell Lali the truth. If you don't tell her. she will
hate you for finding out from an outsider and that
you gave her away. Remember truth always finds its
way . You better tell her before it's too late.

Me: but I don't think I'm ready to lose my daughter
again. She's going to hate me and never forgive me
her whole life . I snatched her happiness away. She
didn't even get a chance to see her mother .

Mrs: Than send her away...away from Mr Owen.

Me: No ...I don't want her to feel unwanted and neglected.

Mrs: Eish I really don't know . Did you know that Aben was Mr Owen's nephew?

Me: What ? Aben ?...You know I've been wondering how Mr Owen knew that I held Lali's mother hostage. So that's means Aben was sent to spy on us . Shit . I have to go I will see you all at the evening when we're going to that monster's house.

Mrs: Bye .

(I went downstairs and said my goodbyes. I was now driving to the office. I'm really tired of working these boys of mine need to take over now . Being a boss is really tiring. I go to like ten meetings in one day . I really need someone to help monitor other businesses. What makes me mad is that Jase and Zyne didn't even apply to go to any university. They said they're taking a gap year. I think I need to talk to their mother . She must try and put some sense in their minds . I can even bribe the institution for

them.)

Tony's POV

I just received a call from Carol's sister. She said they found her corpse dumped outside their gate . If she was the Adila she wouldn't have told me . It seems we were wrong . I don't know why . But I'm feeling scared . That the Adila is very near to me. It like it is watching my every move. Anyways let me go to the mall . I need to get myself a new phone . I took the car keys .

Lali: Going somewhere?

Me: yeah..I...I'm going to the mall to buy something.

Lali: What's that "Something "?

Me: you see... I lost my cellphone yesterday.

Lali: And what happened to you face and neck?

Me: You see I got into a fight yesterday with some

boys . They also took my phone.

Mom: What happened?(she was coming to us from upstairs)

Me: Nothing exactly.

Lali: He got into a fight with some boys they also took his phone(I looked at her with a serious face)

Lali: What?

Mom: Who dares touch . Don't they know who your father is. Tell me more about them . I will take care of them for you .

Me: no ...mom please just let it go .

Mom: No I won't ...people now think we're weak . We need to show them that...

Me: Mom please stop. I'm really fine . Can I go now?

Mom: Where are you going exactly?

Lali: We're going to the mall. He needs to buy a new phone.(i just looked at her. I think she is also into me . I think she now feels the same way about me . I was now smiling like a fool)

Lali: okay?(she was cupping my face. I just nodded)let's go than .(we to the car than drove off . I kept stealing glances of her she was busy on her phone . I even adjusted the mirror in such a way that I will be able to see her face. She is very beautiful God. She is beautiful without makeup I wonder how fire she will look with makeup on .I think I can be open to her.)

Me: you know I received a call from Carol's sister.

Lali: What is it that she wanted?

Me: She told me that they found Carol's body dumped outside their gate .

Lali: What? Ohh God...I wonder who would do that to her. She seemed like a nice person you know. So how are you feeling about all this?

Me: I don't know hey . I was hoping we would fix things. (I lied)

Lali: Shame ... did you really love her?

Me: Yes...

Lali: So why would you hurt her like that?(my heart

beat increased. Does she know? How?)

Me: like what?

Lali: Why would you break her heart?

Me: I don't get you?

Lali: You dumped her ...(whew...I felt a relief. I thought she knew. I smiled a little)And you're smiling.

Me: No ...you see when I dumped her I was under the influence of alcohol.

Lali: mhh I see.(Anyway we got to the mall and went straight to the iPhone shop)

Lali: So which one are you buying.

Me: I'm thinking of taking the iPhone 11. But it will finish all my monthly allowance.

Lali: I can help you . I will pay half of it price .

Me: for me?really.?

Lali: Let's go .(I choosed the colour I wanted .)

Me: Let's and grab something to eat.

Lali: Let's buy takeaways for everyone.

Me: sure ...but first I want to spend some quality time with you .(She smiled. My heart danced)

Lali: Okay.(We went to wimpy and ordered. Our food came and we were having a great chat . She is so funny I was now in stitches. I would really love to spend rest of my life with her.)

Lali: Anyway let's go I'm sure dad is on his way to pick us up .(we went to the car and drove off)

Me: How are you feeling with this Aben situation?(Her facial expression changed. I think she is hiding something from me .)

Lali: You know... I really loved him . He was my first boyfriend. After that day I was hoping we would meet again and fix things. I guess God had his own plan to take him . I really miss him . He made me happy . You know we used to go to the park just to chill and watch the stars. (I felt my heart breaking into pieces. How could she talk about her ex in front of me . She knows I love her . I breathe for her)

Me: Has he already. ..like hit it ?(She laughed)

Lali: no ...I will only break my virginity once I'm married. (I smiled. Atleast she is still pure.)

Me:okay I see.(We got home and dad was already home. They were waiting for us .)

Dad: Where have you two been?

Me: we went to the mall . (Lali gave them takeaways)

Lali: Do I have to change into a dress.

Mom: yes ...can't you see everyone I wearing a dress. And James was here he said tomorrow he is finishing. He said to not go into your bedroom he even took the keys.

Lali: okay it's fine . Anyways some of my clothes are in the guestroom. (She went upstairs. I wonder why mom is not fond of Lali .Lali is a nice person .)

Lali's POV

I went to guestroom and took a quick shower. I put

on my Lous dress that is black and body hugging. I put on black sandals and took and Ripped jean jacket. I took my hand bag and tied my her into a neat bun. I went downstairs . The stairs they all gave me . I even felt like running back to the guestroom and change.

Mrs K:Wow...Lali we are not going to fashion show (I just looked down.)

Me:But I'm just wearing a simple dress.

dad: Can you leave my daughter alone please. You're looking beautiful my star .

J ase: You're fire girl.

Zia: You're looking stunning sister.

Lali: you too (I just kissed her chick)

Dad: Can we go now . (We all went to the car and drove off. I was busy thinking about the conversation I had with Tony. I don't really miss Aben . He is a bad person. I was just saying that so that he won't suspect anything. I'm happy that

Carol's family found the body . Tony is a good liar. He lied about everything. Saying he wanted to fix things with Carol . nxx...Anyway we got to this big and well built house. The security guard opened the gate for us . He searched us and escorted us in . They were all sitting on the couches. Dad started greeting them)

Dad: Mr Owen(he shoot hands with him . I looked at him just than I felt anger build up . My instincts were telling me that he is the man that killed my mother and took her powers . By the help of my father . I looked at him until our eyes met . He started coughing like something was chocking him . I think it my anger that's making him like that. I looked away and tried to control my anger.)

Dad: Are you okay?

Him: Yeah I just needed some water. I'm fine now .(He must know that I'm more powerful than him . I'm not intimidated by him . I just feel like jumping to him and rip off his head)

Dad: So is my family . My children and my wife .
(They all introduced themselves. They all went to him and shook hands with him .I was now my turn. Everyone was talking to each not minding me . I went to him)

Me: My name is Lali(I was looking straight to his eyes)I'm sure you know me . Don't worry I won't kill you now . But soon . Your days are numbered (I was whispering to him)So you better start preparing for your death. (He was sweating.

"Dad are you okay?"(Asked some boy)

Him: yeah I'm fine. This is my Son Mike.

Me:Lali(I shook his hand)

Mike:Nice to meet Lali . You're very beautiful.

Me: Thank you.(I went to Sit down)

Dad: So when is the funeral?

MrOwen: Tomorrow.

Dad: What? Why so soon . When did he pass on.

MrOwen: (He kept quiet for sometime. Than he

started looking at me)..what i can tell you is that we found his body in the bath and water was running.

Dad: Shame

MrOwen: Can I have a word with you Mr Kane Privately.

Dad: Sure(Dad looked at his wife. Than she nodded. I wonder what is it that mr Owen wants to tell dad. There's something going on and Mrs kane knows . Ana was talking to Kiara. The boys were also talking to Mike. Mrs Kane was talking to Mrs Owen. So I decided to go upstairs and eavesdrop on Dad and Mr Owe . Mr Owen was threatening and telling him hurry up . Than I heard dad saying:

Dad: You know what(he was Pointing him)I won't let you take my daughter too. I will tell her the truth. The whole fucking truth.

MrO: Nc...nc...nc If you tell her the truth. You think she's going to say"Oh really dad...there's no problem. I forgive you ."No she won't say that but she will kill you .(what?)

Dad: What is it that you want from my daughter? She is not like her mother.

MrO: Fool. Anyway it's none of your business what I want to do with her. So please think carefully. (I went back downstairs. So he's busy threatening dad about the truth. I know the truth. I know the whole fucking truth. I know what happened on that night. I need to tell dad fast before he does something stupid. Anyways Mike came to me)

Mike: Come sit with us .

Me: Sure .(I set with them . But my mind was occupied. Soon I'm leaving for school now I have to take care of this . My life is really hectic.)

Zia: Lali are you okay?

Me: Yeah ...

Ana: But you don't seem fine. Is everything okay?(I have to lie or else. Everyone will start giving us their full attention.)

Me: em..mhh. ..you know I still can't believe.

..that...that Aben is no more (I looked at Tony than

he nodded)We were very close. After all he was my driver.

Kiara: Dad said he was killed by his girlfriend.
(Suddenly my throat became dry . This people know something. They know that it was me . And Kiara was looking straight to my eyes)

Me: Girlfriend?...He had a girlfriend?I guess he didn't tell me .

Kiara: He once told us that he had a crush on you .

Mike: Kiara (he gave her a dead stair)

Me:Well ...he never told me that.

Dad: it's time to go everyone .(We all stood up.
When I was about to go . Kiara grabbed my arm and whispered to me)

Kiara: I know you killed him . I know it was you . We are coming for you. (I brushed her hair and smiled)

Me:You know what ...I'm not shook by your threats .
Yes I killed him . Your daddy is next.

Zia: Lali come ...everyone is waiting for you in the car .

Me: Bye dear.(I went to the car . We drove off. Dad's mind was occupied. His phone kept ringing and he decided to switch it off. I wonder who is calling him at this hour. Tony stealing glances at me. I just hope he's not suspecting me off killing Aben. I have to talk to him . We arrived home)

Me: Dad can I talk to you ...in your study.

Dad: I'm sorry Lali but I can't. We will talk tomorrow morning. (shit. I went to the guestroom. Tony walked in and closed the door behind him)

Me: What's up?

Tony: Lali is there anything you're hiding from me?

Me: Me?...n...no.

Tony: What were you saying to Mr Owen?

Me: Mhh...nothing . He was complementing me. So I had to put him to his place . He is too old to complement young children.

Tony: mhh ...I see. What is it that Kiara was talking about?

Me: I was so heartbroken. (I faked tears)That Aben

had a girlfriend. So that's means he was not truly inlove with me . (He came close to me and hugged me. Thanks God he is buying it . We stood like that until I said goodnight to him . He than went to his bedroom.)

Mr Kane's POV

I was now in bed with my wife. I was tossing and turning. I kept thinking about what Mr Owen said . That if I don't give him Lali . He will finish my family . I decided to switch on my phone. Kayla has been calling me . I will see her tomorrow after the funeral . I dialed Mr Owen's number and called him .

Me: Hello .

MrO: What?

Me: I'm taking your deal . I will give you Lali. But I have one last request.

MrO: What is it?

Me: Can you give me one more week .I need to spend some quality time with her.

MrO : okay it's fine.

(I dropped his call . My wife was now awake. I was crying.)

MrsK: Wow ...you're really giving her away.

Me: yes...If i don't. He will hurt all of you.

Mrsk: We going to miss her.

Me:Ohh please don't lie . You hate her. You never wanted her to stay with us from the first place.

Mrsk: Whatever.

Mr Owen's POV

I was beyond happy. Finally I will get the Adila powers. I will wipe out all the existence of the Kane

family after I have took her powers. I must start now and prepare for her death . Things are going my way . She really Intimidated me today. She even told my daughter that she killed Aben and I'm next. Poor her . She won't know what's hitting her.

Please like and comment

I will also try to post another insert later.

[06/23, 08:08] Lynne: Insert 20

Lali's POV

I woke up very early in the morning hoping I could talk to dad . But everyone was busy preparing to go to the funeral . I took a bath . I put on a black long tight skirt and black and white shirt. I tied my hair neatly. I put on black stilettos and took a small bag than went out . I went downstairs and everyone was

standing there waiting for me . I greeted everyone. There was something different about dad. He couldn't even look into my eyes . We went to the car than drove off. We arrived at the venue. We went to sit front . I looked at Aben's coffin. I felt tears form . Tony puts his hands around my waist. I rested my head on his shoulder. Everything was done. We went to the cemetery. I don't want to lie he was a nice guy . I also loved him . He made me happy. I'm just sorry that he had to die without knowing the truth. But I promise . Justice will be done for his mother's death. Killing Mr Owen is my first goal. And I know one of this days I will achieve it. We went to the Owen's house. We had something to drink .

Dad: I will send a driver to pick you all up. I have somewhere to go to.

Me: Dad...can I speak to you .

Dad: I can't now .

MrsK: Please do come back . I will wait for you.

Dad: I will.

(It was now getting late . A driver came and took us home . When we got home J ames was sitting at the lounge sipping a glass of wine. He gave me the keys to my bedroom.)

J ames: My work is done here. And your father already paid.

Me: Thanks .

J ames: I have to go. Please do call after you have seen your bedroom.

Me: I will.(I went upstairs. I unlocked the door than went in . I held my mouth. It was like I'm entering a heaven. I even doubt heaven is like this . Every wall had my face. He drew my face even on the floor. He rearranged everything. He even bought a new bed. It was not a shape of bed I'm used too. There was also a table for drinks. There was a champagne placed on top of it and some marshmallows. I laughed a little. I went to the bathroom. It was so breathe taking . I called him.

James: James here hello!(my God he is always hyper.)

Me: Are you sure this is my bedroom?or it belong to Bill Gates's daughter.

James: It yours babe . Do you like it?

Me: like it ? Oh please stop I love it . I still can't believe it is mine. My friend is going to be jealous.

James: I'm glad you loved it . I have to go now .

Me: Okay...thank you very very much.

James: It was my pleasure.

(I took few pics of it than sent them to Nomhle. She said she is coming right now because she doesn't believe me. Zia came in)

Zia: Wow ...it's very beautiful, stunning and gorgeous.

Me: James is really good in his job

Zia: yeah hey ...Mom is going to be very jealous.
Theirs has nothing compared to yours (we laughed)

Me: Nomhle said she's coming over.

Zia: Okay ...it very nice being around her. She has a bubble personality.

Me: yeah hey . Anyways let's have a pj in my room .
Since she's also coming over.

Zia: Sure ...let me buy some more drinks from Take
alot and some snacks. (We bought everything.
Nomhle arrived. She was so stunned by my
bedroom. We had some deep house playing.
Luckily the walls are soundproofed. We took videos
and pics . We danced and drank all the alcohol .)

Mr Kane's POV

I was on my way to Kayla's house. I won't stay long.
Right now I feel helpless. I feel like a failure. I don't
even have strength to talk or look at Lali. I failed her
as a father again. Just when I thought everything is

alright between us . This happens. I will never be able to forgive myself. I know Mr Owen will do exactly what he did to Lali's mother. I just hope even when Lali get to heaven she will find in her heart to forgive me. I drove in and parked my car . I went inside. She was busy watching TV.

Me: Hey .

K: Hi ...(She kept quiet)

Me: I'm sorry for not answering your calls. I was in one of my guards funeral.

K: Ok .

Me: Are you alright?

K: Yeah ...I was just missing you .

Me: Really (I leaned to her and kissed her . We took everything to her bedroom. The rest is history)

Me: That was great. (I kissed her forehead. I got up and started getting dressed)

K: I thought you were sleeping over.

Me: As much as I wanted to. I really need to be home . There are few things I want to take care of .

K: Okay.

Me: Don't be angry okay?(I cupped her face than kissed her)I will sleepover tomorrow.

K: okay ...please switch off the lights on your way out .

Me: Okay.(I went to my car than drove off. I got home my wife was sitting on the bed . Wearing a lingerie . She went to me and started kissing me .)

Her: I have been waiting for you. (She started undressing me)

Me: I'm tired I...

Her: Shhhh(She continued. I gave in . I started undressing her too .)

Addison's POV

Yes my name is Addison. I'm Carol's sister. My heart was very broken when my mom and I found her body dumped at the gate . She was a Sister, a friend ,a mother and a father to me . Since our parents are mostly out of the country. I know she was very wild and not like me . But she protected me . At first I didn't approve of her relationship with Tony . There's something dark about that boy . After I saw how much she actually love him . I blessed their relationship. They dated for a long time . Until he decided to dump her. She was very heartbroken. She even refused to eat. I was also upset at Tony for breaking my older sister's heart. I remember the day she went missing. We had a really serious talk . She said to me . I must take care of myself and never trust a man . She said she really love and that she wants to see me achieve good things in life . That was the last time I spoke to her. I really suspect Tony. I think he's behind my sister's death. I will find justice for my sister. I will revenge her death no matter what .

Lali's POV

It was very early in the morning. I woke up . I had a terrible headache. I woke the girls up. We went downstairs and made coffee for ourselves. We than went back to my bedroom. We cleaned it .

Me: Guys please help me pack . You all know tomorrow I'm gonna back to school.

Zia: I will miss you sister (she hugged me)

Nomhle: Friend... I'm really going to miss you . I will miss your lazy ass. When you don't want to wake up early to prepare for school (I laughed. My eyes were now full of tears)

Me: I will miss you both . My favourite people. (We group hugged. We finished packing)

Zia: So when are you coming back?

Me: On the March holidays.

Zia: no...that's far though.

Me: School rules .

(We took shower together and put on shots and oversized crop sweatshirts . We went downstairs and had breakfast.)

Me: Dad tomorrow I'm going back to school.

Dad: Safe journey my dear. I don't i will be there to see you leave. Good bye everyone. Ohh before I forget J ase and Zyne you have today and tomorrow to decide on y'all's career and than apply to any university. Public or private.

J ase: but dad we said we're taking a study gap.

Dad: I won't repeat myself. My word is final .

(He left. Mrs Kane was busy smiling to herself. She looks happy .)

Mr Owen's POV

I was having a meeting with my children.

Kayla: So dad what's the plan ?

Me: The plan is . I will give Mr Kane something to put in Lali's food that will make her unconscious for 24 hours. That's the period we will use to tie her up with strong chains .

Mike: Good idea dad.

<<<To be continued >>>

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:08] Lynne: Beloved please forgive me ...I made a mistake with the characters . Ana died . But I will try and edit every insert I used Ana's name instead of Zia on.

[06/23, 08:09] Lynne: insert 21

Not edited

Nomhle's POV

There is something that has changed about Lali . Since she fixed things with her dad. She is now acting like a diva . She's no longer that Lali who used to say " I don't like expensive things " . She thinks she's better than everyone now . Along with her so called sister Zia . Yes her bedroom is beautiful. But mine will be more beautiful. I will find a designer online. The reason I changed school is that I want to distance myself from her . She uses people. I was the one who was waking up early and prepare us for school . Not even a single day Lali woke up . She's is just a lazy bitch. I was busy on Facebook. Someone called Mike Owen sent me a friend request. I looked at his profile. Cute indeed and also white . I accepted it . We started talking on inbox. He was busy complementing my beauty. I was all flattered . He

is also a funny person.

Lali's POV

I woke up early in the morning. Went to dad's bedroom . I knocked than went in.

Me : Goodmorning.

Mrsk:Yes Lali ...what you want?

Me: I want to talk to dad .

MrsK: Sorry you missed him . He already went to the office.

Me: But so early in the morning?

MrsK: Yes...he has an early meeting. So please leave me in peace.

(I went back to my room . I took a long ass bath . I dried my hair. I put on a ripped boyfriend jean and a

black sweater. I put on my White Airforce. I went downstairs and had breakfast.)

Jase: So you leaving for real?

Me: Yeah hey ...I have to . Anyways it my last year. It's very important. I was hoping I would spend the rest of it with my Nomhle. She was going to be my partner for matric dance . She has changed. Changed for worst.

Zia: I will really miss you hey.

Me: I will too. But first I have to go to the mall and do my hair .

Zia: Which hairstyles you want?

Me: Anything...but I was thinking of doing cornrows. Like straight up .

Zia: Your hair...

Me: I'm coloured babes .

Zia: Okay so when?

Me: right now .

Zia: I'm coming with you . I also have to wash my hair and remove this blonde from my hair.

(we went to the car . The driver drove off.)

Me: So what grade are you doing?

Zia: 11 ...you?

Me: Tony and I are in matric .

Zia: Lucky you guys I'm really tired of school.

Me: Hang in there sister... You're towards the end .

Zia: Yeah hey .(we went to a salon. Did our hair. I bought some snacks than we made our way back home. I went upstairs and took my suitcase.)

Me: bye guys ... I was hoping to see dad before I leave. But anyway I have to go .

J ase: Safe journey...we will really miss you .

Zayn: When you come back we will throw you a party. (we laughed.)

Tony: bye Lali (we hugged)

Me: okay bye guys (I went to the car. The driver drove off. It was a long ass drive . I was even bored . This driver wasn't even talking to me . If Aben was still alive I would be in stitches right now . Anyways i decided to be busy with Instagram. I kept scrolling down . Finally we arrived. He helped me with my suitcase.

Me : Thank you. Bye

Him: Bye miss Kane . Have a good evening.

(I went straight to the board and signed next to my name . More people have already arrived.

Nomhle's name wasn't even on the register. She long planned for this . I went to the room we used . Ohh I already have a new roomie.)

Me: Hey .

Her: Hi ...Lali right?(I nodded) I'm Matilda. But you can call me Mat.

Me:Are you new?

Mat: Yes .

Me: Which grade are you doing?

Mat: 12 .

Me: What? How's that possible? Since when do they accept matric learners.

Mat: They didn't want to. But dad had to please them until they agreed . He even paid extra money.

Me: Ohh... So what made you change your old school?

Mat: We are originally from Cape town. So that just got a business here in Guateng.

Me: Mhh I see.

Mat: You're a nice person.

Me: You too hey .

Mat: Can I be your friend?

Me: Sure why not . My friend changed school. So I also don't have a friend.

Mat: Friends. (We hugged. I went to put everything

in my wardrobe . There are still two days before the school actually starts. I will put my clothes accordingly tomorrow. On the wall I noticed the calendar I drew . 1st of J anuary was circled . My birthday . The way things have been hectic back at home . I even forgot my birthday. Even dad didn't remember. Anyway my birthday isn't a special day at all .)

Me: Hey do you wanna go out?

Mat: Yes sure but how?

Me: There's a school car . That takes us to the nearest town . I missed my birthday. I just want to celebrate it .

Mat: How? How can one forget about their birthday?

Me: I better not tell you .

Mat: Okay let's go .

(we went and asked the driver to take us to the small town. It wasn't a busy town . They are also few shops . We went to the restaurant.)

Me: I will pay don't worry. You can order anything.

(We ordered a pizza and a wine . Yes a wine . Being Zia's sister made me like alcohol.)

Mat: So you also drink alcohol?

Me: yes you?

Mat : Me too.(We took few pics. I posted one on Instagram and captioned "My new bestie and I celebrating my belated birthday ". Just then I received messages on my WhatsApp from my siblings.

Tony: Wow. ..you didn't even tell me when your birthday is?

Zia: I'm angry at you. Why didn't you tell me .

Zayn: We are coming there to fetch you

Jase: I thought I knew you .

(I just sent them a voice message. Telling them about why I didn't tell them about my birthday. They understood. Zayn said when I come back they'll be a party for me .)

Me: So how is Guateng treating you?

Mat: So far it's good and I do have a family here.

Me: Wow that's good. I think it's time to go . We can take our food. We will continue in our room.

Mat: Alcohol... how?

Me: Don't worry about that .(I put everything in my back bag. We went out to the car. We were on our way back to school. We were singing our asses off . We were abit drunk. We arrived and made our way to our room . We continued there until we fell asleep.)

Tony's POV

I was very heartbroken that Lali didn't tell me about her birthday. But after she told us that . Dad said her mother died when she was giving birth to her . Her birthday has never been a special day or a day to celebrate. I understood and my heart was at ease. So Carol's sister has been calling me. She said Carol will be buried tomorrow. The day after Carol went missing. She was angry at me . She didn't want to talk to me . She even said she suspect me for her sister's death. I wonder what has changed. She has been calling me . Asking how I'm doing. As I'm talking I was driving to meet her . She said she wants to talk to me . I fetched her than drove to the park .

Me: So what's up?

Addi: I wanted to basically apologize to you. For suspecting you of killing my sister. I was very shuttered and my mind was occupied. I have just realized that you loved my sister very much and you will never do anything to hurt her .

Me: I know and I understand.

Addi: So how are you feeling about her death?

Me: I really don't know how to feel . I still can't believe that she is no more. I was hoping after sometime we would fix things . And get back .

Addi: She really loved you. She used to talk about you every single day . When you dumped her. She was so heartbroken. Why did you dump her exactly?

Me: I was under the influence of alcohol. I wasn't thinking straight.

Addi: So why didn't you fix things with her on the next day ?

Me: I was scared. I was scared to even look at her broken face.

Addi : I see hey . I miss her alot . She was everything to me . (She was now crying. I brought her to my chest. She rested her head and I brushed her back .) I'm feeling lonely without her. Our parents are leaving after the funeral. I will be left alone.

Me: Don't worry I will be there for you . No matter what .(She was raised her head and looked at me . We looked into each other's eyes and than kissed. She's very cute . If I were to choose between her and Carol . I would choose her .)

Addi: Sorry ...I

Me: No ...I'm sorry.

Addi: Can you drop me off at home now . It's very late.

Me: Sure (i dropped her off. Her body texture is very beautiful . She's cute. But not more than my lali. The kiss was nice hey. She has jucie lips. Maybe I can have a thing with her while I'm still waiting for Lali .)

Addison's POV

When I got home. My parents were busy having dinner. My mother looks so shuttered. She had tears on her eyes. She wasn't even eating. She was just looking and playing with the food.

Dad: Addi can we speak to you?

Me: Sure(I was holding my tears)

Dad: Your mom and I have decided to go with you .
After your sister's death. We don't think you're safe .

Me: To where exactly? Because you guys travel alot
. And I don't want to be part of it .

Dad: You will stay with your granny dear.

Me: No dad...I have important things to take care of
here. I'm also doing matric so I can't just leave.

Dad: But baby...

Me: No dad ...I will stay here .

Dad: Okay ...but can we atleast hire a helper whose
grown up for you.

Me: That's even better. Please excuse me (I ran
upstairs and locked the door. I went to the
bathroom and took a cold shower. I set down as
the water was hitting my naked body.)

Me: Carol ...I'm very sorry my sister. I know you

loved Tony so much. But I have to do it. I have to do it for you . So your soul can rest in peace knowing that your killer is paying for your death. I have to make him pay. I know if you were still alive you wouldn't want me to hurt him. But I'm sorry this time around I'm going against your wish . You were so kind hearted. I know wherever you're you have forgave him . But I would never. I would never forgive him for the rest of my life . He took you away from me . I will also take what's special to him . Before I kill him . He will die a slow death.

(I wiped my tears and dried myself. I put on my pjs and went to sleep .)

Mr Kane's POV

I was with Kayla all along. She hasn't been feeling well . So I was just keeping her company. I looked at my watch it was getting late . I need to go or else my wife will be angry

Me: (I kissed her) I have to babe.

K: Wow ...I'm not feeling well yet you want to go.

Me: I really need to go. Things at home aren't going well.

K : ohh really or you just missing your wife.

Me: I have to go .(I kissed her. Took my car keys than drove off. I arrived home they were still watching TV at this hour. Even my wife.)

Me: Hey everyone.

J ase: ohh hey pops. (I set next to my wife)

Me: So have you guys decided on what to do ?

Zayn: Ehmm...mmmh...not really dad.

Me: I see ...you both are busy wasting time.

J ase: Dad. ..we just don't know what to study for ...

Me: Ohh really. Ok I will than decided for you.

J ase: What? No dad.

Me: Zayn you will do Law. Isn't you can't keep your mouth shut.yes

Zayn: Noo...dad...what? ...no please dad. I want to be a rapper.

Me: Forget about that silly dream of yours of becoming a rapper. (J ase was busy laughing)

Zayn: ohh so you're laughing at me
...nxx...p...erhmm.(J ase laughed more)

Me: J ase you will do something that has to do with the management of businesses. (Zayn laughed.)

J ase: No ...no pops ...like really. I want to do sports science.

Me: What? ...That's never going to happen. I know you guys think I'm being selfish. But I'm thinking of the future. I'm going to die and leave you guys with my businesses. No rapper can represent the family. We as business owners we need lawyers who are trustworthy. Someone we can trust. And that person is non other your own son. You jase. You will manage my businesses. I have plenty of businesses. I gave even give you one to own. Since

you guys are the older brothers. I want your other siblings to look into you. I want y'll to make sure your your siblings have everything they need.

Mrs K: My husband is speaking the truth . You now have to man up. Soon you will be starting y'll own families.

Me: yeah...I don't want my grandchildren to suffer. So tomorrow you guys are applying. Your mother will help you. Goodnight everyone.

Jase: night pops(I left them there busy talking to them selves.)

Kayla's POV

So I have been feeling very sick for the past few days. I decided to go to the doctor. And the doctor said I'm pregnant. I just don't know how to feel . I love Mr Kane alot. I want to spend the rest of my life with him. My former husband and I have been trying to have babies but couldn't. I think God

brought Mr Kane for a reason in my life. I was going to die without having a baby. I haven't told him yet. But I will eventually tell him.

Tony's POV

So I woke up early and got ready to go to the funeral. Zayn ,Zia and J ase were going along. So I was in my way to tell dad. I knocked than got in.

Me: Goodmorning dad

Him: ohh hey ...Where are you going...looking so formal.

Me: Well dad...A friend of ours passed on so we're going to her funeral.

Him: Ohh okay.

Me: Please tell mom too.

Him: Okay I will.

(I went downstairs and than I drove us to the funeral. It was already full so we were just standing at the back. Addison came to us. She was looking very beautiful in her black tight dress with a slit showing her flawless thigh.)

Addi: There are few sits at the front . You guys can sit there.

Zia: Thanks.(we went to sit there. The funeral went smooth. Everything was done. We went to the cemetery than came back to their house. We had food. So Carol's family left . It was now after tears party. Carol was a party animal . We started drinking and dancing. Addi was sitting next to Zia she was having a glass of wine. I didn't know she drinks. I kept stealing glances of her. She stood up and went upstairs. I followed her. She got into some bedroom. I got in too.)

Addi: Tony?

(I went to her and started kissing her . I took off her

clothes and placed her on the bed. I got between her thighs. I was already naked. I started leaving wet kisses on her body. I went down to her sacred place. I kissed it . Just when I was about to hit it raw she held my hand)

Me: What?

Addi: Condom?

Me: Don't worry. (I tried insert my manhood in her but couldn't)

Addi: I'm a virgin.

Me: Shit.(I started fingering her . She was now very wet . I tried inserting again. It than went in after alot of tries. She started screaming. She held me tight)

Addi: No ..Tony please stop. It's painful.

Me: Don't worry. ..the pain will go away just now .(I started moving slowly. Until I increased my pace . We did so many rounds. I went to her bathroom and ran a shower for us . There was blood in her bed. I took her bridal style to the shower . I went back and removed the stain comforter and sheet.i

went back and bathed with her. I kissed her back.)

Me: Thank you for trusting me.(She just smiled. I help her get dressed. She had a funny walk . So she just went to sleep.)

Me: I will be back right now . I'm going to buy you the morning after pill.

Addi: Okay ...thanks.

Addison's POV

I Was feeling like shit . How could I sleep with my late sister's boyfriend. He broke my virginity. I had no choice but let him. I would do anything to revenge my sister's death. Even if it means selling my soul to Lucifer. I would . When he's very close to me . That's when I will strike him down. He came back with the morning after pill. I drank it .

Me: Thank you .

Tony: you're welcome. (He got in bed and cuddled me)

Lali's POV

So Mat and I we were busy packing our clothes neatly. We took out our uniforms for ironing and our clothes. I bought a new school bag so I don't have to wash the old one. Zia sent me a message that they were in Carol's funeral. As much as I wanted to say my last good bye to her. I couldn't. I wanted to also apologize to her. For not finding her at the right time.

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:09] Lynne: Insert 22

Few weeks later

Not edited

Lali's POV

It was after school . Mat and I were busy with school work . There's something strange about her . Everytime I wake up in the middle of the night. She's always not in her bed and the door would be slightly opened. Anyways the winners for the Olympia were announced. It was a tie . So Tony and I had to divide the prizes because we both had same points.

Me: I'm tired now . Matric has alot of woke .

Mat : Yeah hey ...They give us alot of homeworks. Whereas the exams are around the corner.

Me: We need to start now studying.

Mat: You studying?

Me: Yes ...

Mat: But you don't even need to study . You're an A student. You are very smart Lali .

Me: I also have to study .

Mat: Okay...can you help me with Maths ?

Me: Sure why not.

(she brought all the resources we will need . I started teaching her.)

Tony's POV

School is fine . Everything is well . It's just with alot of work I have I can't even go out to party with my brothers. The university life is treating them well . Eventhough they party every Friday. They didn't want to stay at home . So they're staying in a flat. Don't no longer visit here every weekend. It's very boring without them . Zia and I are always busy with school work. About Addis on we are now very close. I think I'm starting to like her. We chat every single day . She's a nice girl. I'm planning to see her this weekend. Dad walked in .

Me:Ohh hey pops.

Dad: How's school?

Me: It's just tiring. There's a lot of work that needs to be done.

Dad: I see. So when is Lali coming back?

Me: She said when she finishes her exams .

Dad: Okay... I want to plan a family dinner. We can also use that time to celebrate her birthday.

Me: That a good idea. I will let her know.

(Dad left the room. Dad hasn't been himself lately. He comes home late and doesn't have breakfast with all of us . Things are just tense. It's like he just lost someone important in this or he is about to lose someone. Maybe one of his businesses is not doing good.)

Mr Kane's POV

I'm feeling guilty for what I'm about to do to Lali. She's my daughter. My first daughter. Yet I'm busy

planning her death. What can I do though. I have no choice. I have been ignoring her calls . I just don't know what to say to her . I hope God will forgive me for what will happen to Lali. Kayla has been very moody and she has also gained weight. Gauteng is treating her well . So I was on my way to meet Mr Owen . He said I must come by his house . I parked my car in and went inside the house. The cleaner took me to his office. He was drinking a whiskey and also smoking.

MrO: Ohh...my friend. I have been waiting for you . I thought you have changed your mind.

Me: Talk...why did you call me here.

MrO: Easy...first have a glass of whiskey. We will talk everything over it .

Me: I'm fine .

MrO: don't worry there's nothing in it . See.(He drank it from the bottle. I poured myself a glass of it)How are things at home?

Me: Good ...

MrO: And how is your mistress doing?

Me: My ?..m..my what? How did you know .

MrO : Relax Mr Kane . I have eyes everywhere.

Me: Don't ever touch her.

MrO: I would never . His ex husband would hunt me down and kill me .

Me: What?

MrO : Anyway I'm not there . So I called you here to give you this . (He went to his safe and took out a box. He set down and started punching a code on it .it opened. He took out a little bottle. It was made of steel. He gave it to me)

Me: What's this?

MrO: You see. I can't just go to your house and say Lali come with me .

Me: I still don't get your point.

MrO: So this you will put in Lali's food and drink . It will make her weak and unconscious for hours .

When she start feeling dizzy you must call me . I will come with the papers stating that I'm giving the companies. I will than take Lali. I have given you enough time . Plan everything smooth so that she won't suspect anything.I will make sure her mentor tell her nothing . (I just finished the glass and took the bottle. I was halfway the door.)

MrO: And Mr Kane . Don't cross me . Because if you do . Mmmh...you know what I'm capable of doing . (I just went to my car than drove home. I got there and went straight to my study room. I put the bottle Mr Owen gave me inside the safe . I went to speak to my wife)

Her: How did the meeting go

Me: He gave me something to put in Lali's food
That will make her unconscious.

Her: Poor Lali. She's going to die the exact same way her mother died. She is cursed.

Me: Don't ever speak ill of my daughter. I know

what I'm about to do is wrong. I know that I will be responsible for her death. But she's still my daughter and I love her so much . It's just that I can't protect her. It would have been easy if I was dealing with someone like me . With no supernatural powers.

Mrs Kane's POV

Okay. I'm beyond happy that Lali will finally be out of our lives. I have been hoping for days like the ones that are still yet to come. I wish I can be there to see Lali crying and screaming for help. She will die the same way that bitch her mother died. Ever since she came into our lives things has been going wrong. We have been losing family members . She is really cursed . I'm just grateful that finally I will be free from that evil and rude child. I'm also grateful that Mike decided to go back wherever he came from . But I do miss him very much hey. I have been sending people to spy on my husband. I

think he's cheating on me . So i was calling one of the guys i sent .

"Hello boss lady "

Me: Do you have anything handful i can use

"Yes . I will send you the location and address. Of the place he always visit. He some times spend the whole night there. "

Me: Do you know the lady he's busy with ?I need information about her.

" All I know is she was married. Her husband cheated with her sister so they divorced. But the husband want her back in his life . That he even sent people to find her . She's busy on the run . She has been to different places . But I think she's now settling here. "

Me: I'm sure my husband is the reason why she's settling here.

" yeah maybe. Because I have also contacted my people from the places she has been . They said

she only stay for a month in a particular place. "

Me: Okay thank you. I think I have enough information about her. I will transfer the money into your account. Before the end of this day.

" okay ...thank you very much . If you need us again. You know where to find us . We can even kill her for you if you want"

Me: No thanks . Don't worry. Leave everything to me

.

(I dropped the call . Okay so my husband is really cheating on me. I knew that my instincts would never lie to me . So my mission is to now pay that women a visit. I will tell her to cut off her ties with my husband or else I won't hesitate to kill her . Nxx bitch.)

IT IS NOW THE DAY WE HAVE BEEN WAITING FOR.

Lali's POV

Today I'm writing my last paper. Tony told me that dad planned a family dinner . So I just can't wait to see my siblings. I woke up feeling very down . I had an headache. It feels like something bad is going to happen to me or the person close to me . I hope everyone is fine . Let me call Nomhle. I haven't talked to her for the past few months. I hope she is fine.

Me:Hello

Nomhle: Oh hey Lali .

Me: How are you?

Nomhle: I'm fine . Do you want something from me?

Me: No ...I was just checking up on you . How are the exams treating you?

Nomhle: Lali ...I have to go .

(She dropped the call. Wow. There's something not

right about Nomhle. She was very down . She's not the Nomhle I know . I hope she's not going through difficulty. I will visit her tomorrow. Anyway I prepared for school. So our last paper was Afrikaans. So I will finish in less than an hour. Dad sent a driver to come and pick me up . So I went to the exam room and started writing. It wasn't hard . Mat and I finished.)

Me: How was the paper?

Mat: Easy hey... are you alright?

Me: Yes why?

Mat: Your eyes...they're red. It like you have trying.

Me: Really. ..I just have a bad headache.

Mat: I have some meds for headache. (she gave me . I drank them .)

Me: Let's go and change. I'm sure my driver is on his way.

Mat: Can you visit me ...please for the holidays.

Me: Ehhh....I will just send me the address. I will see when I can visit you.

Mat: Okay...please do come. There's something very important I need to tell.

Me: Okay ...I hope it about you leaving in the middle of the night and coming back in the morning.

Mat: What? HOW?...I ...

Me: Do you have a boyfriend?

Mat: No...

Me: So ?

Mat: I will tell you everything when you visit me.

Me: I will surely come .

(We went to our room. I put on a mini skirt ,white t shirt and Puma push ins. I'm not leaving with my clothes. I have plenty at home. Mat's dad. Arrived.)

Him: Hey girls.

Me: hello sir.

Mat: Hey dad.

Him: So you're my daughter's friend. (I nodded) She says a lot of good things about you when I call her. I have never seen my daughter this happy. Thank you.

Me: She is a great friend. I wouldn't trade her anything.

Him: It's nice to hear that . I was hoping that you would come with us . Atleast visit us for a weekend.

Me: I will . But not today . Dad planned something special for the family.

Him: Mhh ...I see . Good family you got . United.

Me: Yeah hey ...

Him: If I wasn't in a hurry . I would invite myself to that dinner(we laughed)Anyway good bye.

Mat: Bye love (We hugged)

Me: See you soon.

(They left. Mat's father is a nice person. He is of free nature. Anyway the driver arrived and we were

now in the road .)

Mat's POV

We just left and I miss Lali already . She is a very nice and loving person. I'm grateful that I found a friend like her . She helps me with school work. There's something special or good about her and also something strange about her .

Me: So dad when are going to the Oegrate?

Dad: When the time is right my dear.

Me: But dad I also need to go there. I need to gain more skills and home to control it.

Dad : Matilda I said. ..when the time is right

(He was now very angry. Everytime I ask about the Oegrate dad gets angry. So an Oegrate is a place where all werewolves live. It is their home . They are trained how to protect theirselves,how to fight

an enemy and how to control their power . So dad once told me that . The reason why we aren't allowed there because his father was banished from there. Because he was having an affair with a beast. So the beasts are said to be the greatest enemies of the werewolves. The hatred is passed from one generation to another. At the Oegrate there's an Alpha. He is more like a king . Dad is an Alpha's cousin. They don't get along . But dad and the Alpha's sons have a great relationship. They even helped dad when we got here with a place to stay. They also live here in Guateng. They go to the Oegrate when it's necessary. I just wish I can also go there and be with people like me .)

Mr Kane's POV

So my wife helped with everything. She cooked a very nice meal for everyone. The way she was handling everything you would swear the bottle was given to her. The driver called he said they are not

far so my wife started dishing. She dished for everyone. She poured the liquid into Lali glass of juice and also some in her food . She told everyone to sit down . Lali walked she greeted everyone. My wife showed her the place to sit.

Me: erhh...I'm so grateful that everyone is here. My wife and I planned this dinner. As a family we have been through so much . We lost people we love the most. Everything seemed shuttered. But look at us now . We have passed it . We have made peace with everything. That's because we are United. And always there for one another. Lali I know back than I wasn't a good father. But I want you to know that I love you and always will .

Lali: i love you dad. But I'm very hungry. (she started eating. I wanted to stop her but it was already too late . I just have to forgive myself)

Lali: Mhh ...very nice. I missed food made with love and warmth. (we all ate)

Lali's POV

I didn't realize that I missed them this much. We were all eating and chatting. Food was very amazing. It was very delicious. I finished eating . I was now drinking my juice. I wonder why the food was dished. Because we usually dish for ourselves. Maybe it's because it is a family .she's spoiling us. While we still eating. I started to feel dizzy . A headache hit me very hard . I held my head.

Zia: Lali ?Are you okay?

Me:(i faintly smiled) I'm fine ...I just feel a bit dizzy. Let me just go and take a nap . (I stood up before I could even go i fell down and fainted.)

Narrated

They took Lali to her bedroom. Mr Kane asked everyone to stay in their bedrooms. They did as

told. Mr Owen walked in with the papers. He was even wearing a new suit . While they were still signing. The guards took Lali's body to his car . Everything was finalized. Mr Owen drove to his secret house. He got there and tied Lali by very big and strong chains. He tied her hands and legs .

<<To be continued >>

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:10] Lynne: insert 23

Continuation

Tony's POV

So Zia,Zayn,J ase and I were in Zia bedroom. Since dad said we must be in our rooms . We were playing cards. I'm really worried about Lali. I hope it's not something serious. I wish I can just go and see her .

Me: Erhh...guys I will be back.

Zia: Dad said we must stay In our rooms.

Me: I'm going to drink water.

I went downstairs. Dad was sitting in the lounge . He was drinking a beer . Wow something serious is going on. Dad usually drinks a whiskey. I went and set next to him .

Me: Is everything alright dad?

(He wiped his tears)

Dad: Yeah...emm ...why aren't you in your room.

Me: I wanted to drink some water. Than I saw you . How is Lali?

Dad: Er...er..Lali ...we took her to the hospital.

(I could see that he was lying. But why would he lie)

Me: I see...what's wrong with her?

Dad: i don't know. But tomorrow I will check up on

her.

Me: I will come with you .

Dad: No ...

Me:bu...

(He raised both his hands. I stood up and went to the kitchen to drink water. I than went back to my siblings.)

Mr Owen's POV

It been hours since Lali has been unconscious. I was sitting on a chair facing her. Busy smoking and having a glass of Scotch . I don't know . I'm feeling restless and scared at the same time . I'm supposed to be happy but here I am feeling like this. I just hope everything will go accordingly. I decided to call my son .

Mike: Hey pops ...how are doing?

Me: I'm fine I guess. How are you guys?

Mike: We are fine. We're just worried about you .

Me: Don't be. I trust myself. Everything will go according to our plan.

Mike: Kiara and I were thinking of coming there to help you.

Me: Don't...I got this. I defeated her mother. The strongest person. She's nothing .

Mike: please dad...be safe.

Me: Don't worry. I love you guys and whatever happens after this always know that I love you all. You and Kiara have been by my side . You guys supported me. I'm very honored and grateful to have you guys as my children.

Mike: But dad why are you saying all of this things?

Me: I'm just saying my boy . Life is very unpredictable. In whatever you do you need to be careful and wise. All you guys have to do now is prepare a braai when I come back we will celebrate our victory.

Mike: ok dad .

Me: please give Kiara the phone.

Mike: ok

Kiara: Hey dad...is everything alright there? Do we have to call uncle Mondree ?

Me: No ...I will be fine my dear.

Kiara: Mom has been feeling down.

Me: Maybe she's caught flu . My dear please promise me that you will look after your mother even if I don't make it alive ...

Kiara: Please dad don't speak like that .

(Lali was now opening her eyes and trying to move)

Me: I have to go my dear. Dad loves you . Take care.

(I dropped the call)

Lali's POV

I had a severe headache. My vision was a bit blurry.

I tried to move but couldn't. My vision was finally clear. I was tied with chains. I wasn't able to move. I felt very weak to an instance my voice wasn't coming out. I couldn't even move an inch. Suddenly the lights went on. I closed my eyes as they were penetrating my eyes. I opened them again. Mr Owen walked closer to me . What? ...What's happening?

MrO: Hello to you too Lali.

Me: W...wh..what a..am.i...doing...here?

MrO:Here drink this you will feel better. (He gave me water. I drank it. I was feeling a bit better.)

MrO: I have been waiting for this my whole life. I didn't know it was going to be this easy to capture you . Well Your dad did an amazing job .

Me: What? Dad? What ...what did my father do?

MrO: What I can say is ...he brought you straight to me in exchange of my companies.

Me: So you managed to trick him.

MrO: You know the day your mother made my life miserable. I vowed to make sure that her children will feel the same pain I felt. I was imprisoned in the underworld. All my powers were taken from me and your mother was responsible.

Me: What do you want from me?

MrO: I just want your powers. Your powers my dear than I can let you go .

(He is being sarcastic because he knows exactly that if he takes my powers I won't be able to live .)

Me: I hope you know that I won't go down without a fight. Are you strong enough?

(He just laughed. For the first time in my life i was this helpless. I was trying to transform but the chains were too tight. In the meanwhile Mr Owen was busy burning a steel. He came closer to me with it . It was red because of the heat. He placed it on my thigh. The pain I was feeling was so extreme. I kept trying to transform but nothing.)

Me: No ...no...please stop ...stop...

MrO: The pain you're feeling right now is nothing compared to the pain that was inflicted to me by your people.

(He took out a knife from his pocket. He started running all over my body. I was now busy crying my lungs out. He stabbed me on my arm. He poured a bottle of a whiskey on the wound)

Me: NO ...PLEASE NO...J UST FUCKING KILL ME AND TAKE THE FUCKING POWERS YOU WANT.

MrO: I'm not done torturing you .

(He stabbed me on the stomach. I was bleeding very bad. I felt my soul slowly leaving my body . I was slowly running out of breath. I passed out . While I was still at it a voice of a woman came through.

" I'm very disappointed in you. I thought you were strong enough. Is this how you want your life to end?(I nodded no) So what are you doing? Why are you not making use of your powers? "

Me: But...but how?...you can see I'm unable to move .

" Fool. You were taught different ways to protect yourself not just by transforming. Remember you're the Adila. The strongest creature on earth "

The woman disappeared. I slowly opened my eyes. I was still breathing.)

MrO: oh... you're not dead. Even more fun.(He was busy sharpening a spear . I closed my eyes and tried to move again nothing. God is this the end of me? . Is this the reason you created me . To die at a very young age ? . I was crying. Mr Owe came closer with his spear . Just when he was about to finish me with it . A very firm and powerful voice came deep down from my stomach.)

Me: ÈHER...VUTHSG KERHSY LOIRU BEERK
FEÈCS XAFE BOUĞ REYÀ VEÁ REAŤ MAEÌ

WAQR HOKL (A person that got his powers rightfully, that has the beastial blood flowing in his veins and a very strong person can defeat the Adila)

The room was now spinning. The lights went on and off. The walls where the chains were attached was breaking. This time I transformed fully and broke the chains. I ran to him and threw punches until he fell. He also transformed. We started fighting. He threw a few punches on me. I was getting irritated. I pushed him forcefully and he fell. He transformed back to his body. That was his biggest mistake. I ran to him and ripped his stomach. I took his heart and other organs and placed them next to his body. I pulled his head off his body. I transformed back. I wrote a letter. I put everything along with the letter in a plastic. I took his empty body and burnt it. I made my way to his house. And dumped everything in his yard. I was now on my way home. The weather was very bad. It was raining and there was a storm. My clothes were covered in blood. I was walking barefoot on the street and still bleeding. I was even limping. I was beyond being broken. Just when I thought

everything is alright between my dad and I this happens. How could he do this to me? . He claimed to love and care for me yet he sells me to a monster. Just for companies. For fucking companies. While I was still walking someone harshly grabbed my arm . I looked at him .

Him: ARE YOU FUCKING CRAZY. I ALMOST HIT YOU WITH MY CAR . CAN'T YOU SEE WHERE YOU ARE GOING. AND WHY ARE YOU WALKING AROUND THE STREET ALL ALONE AT THIS HOUR. WHY ARE YOUR CLOTHES COVERED IN BLOOD ?HEE? ...ARE YOU DEAF? (I was still lost in my thoughts. He shook me . That's when I realized that I was actually bleeding very bad . My vision became blurry and I passed out .)

Austin's POV

So I was busy driving when I almost hit this girl. Who was busy walking not minding the cars on the

street. Her clothes were covered in blood. I was busy shouting at her. But she didn't seem to be paying any attention on what I was saying to her. I shook her suddenly she passed out. I went closer to her and noticed that she was bleeding. I picked her up and took her to the hospital I actually own. I changed to my working clothes than took her to the laboratory room since she was wounded. Her wound is still fresh. I left the other doctors still busy with her because I had to go home. My wife is pregnant and she's due in one of this days so i have to be with her everytime i get. My wife and I got married a few weeks back. We started dating when we were still in high school. She had miscarriage twice. I just hope this time around our baby will make it. I have told dad about this. He told me about chosen one shit. Which is what i don't believe in. He said I will only have a baby with my chosen one which is a total shit. No one can choose who I want to spend the rest of my life with. My wife and I don't usually go to the Oegrate. Since she's a normal person. The werewolves there can feed on her. So I'm a last born and dad said I'm the

next Alpha. Meaning when he die I will take over .
I'm not really interested in all that shit . My life
belong here not there. There are so many family
businesses that my brothers and I are managing. I
also built my own hospital. So I'm basically a
doctor and an owner of the hospital. I arrived . My
wife was already sleeping. I went and took a quick
shower. My clothes had that lady's blood.

It was now in the morning.

Lali's POV

I was woken up by the machines beeping. A nurse
came in . I tried to sit up straight .

Nurse: Easy ...you're going to hurt your self.

(I was feeling a bit pain on my stomach. That old
rag did a number on me .)

Nurse: How are you feeling?

(I just shrugged my shoulders)

Nurse: Okay ...erhmm. ..the police are on their way .

Me: What?

Nurse: Yes ...you were stabbed to death. It's a case. You will have to give your statement to them .

Me: I don't want to talk to any police. (I slowly stood up)

Nurse: Sit down please. You're going to hurt yourself. You're going to get me into trouble.

Me: I need to go ...and please don't try to stop me.

Nurse: You can't go like this . You haven't healed completely.

Me: I'm sure I can.

Nurse: okay put this on atleast.

(He handed me a Male's tracksuits .)

Me: Ermm ...can I use your phone?

Nurse : Sure.(I dialed Tony's number and called him . I asked which hospital is this from the nurse and

told Tony . In less than an hour he was here. We went to the car than drove off. I'm glad Tony wasn't asking me any questions because I'm really not in the mood. We got home . Everyone was busy having breakfast. Dad and his wife's eyes widened. It like they were seeing a ghost. My eyes were now filled with tears.)

Dad: Lali ? But?what are you doing here? ...I mean how come you're here.

Me: Mr Kane can I please speak to you Privately in your study.

Zayn: Lali what's with the formality?

Me: Not now please.

(Dad followed me to his study . He got in and I locked the door. I broke down into crying. He came close to try and comfort me. I pushed him so hard that he even fell.)

Me: Why? Why? Dad ...why would you hurt me like

this . I almost died because of you . You first killed my mother . You deprived me a mother's love.

Dad: I didn't kill your mother.

(I was extremely angry . The lights went on and off. It was windy that the papers started to fly around)

Dad: Lali ...what's going on my dear.

Me: Don't ever call me that. Why are you denying that you killed my mother . Why ?(Everything went back to normal. I was crying)

I know than you kept my mother a hostage for fucking 17 years . You teamed up with Mr Owen . So you were planning to do the same thing with me . But why dad. What did we ever do to you hee.

Dad: it wasn't. ..

Me: Please don't lie and say it wasn't your intention. I know that after you found out that mom is actually a beast you decide to treat her like a prisoner. I also know that you accepted me because you thought I am different from my mother but I'm not.

Dad: What do you mean by that?

(I transformed but not fully)

Dad: OHH SHIT ...WHAT IS THIS?

(I went back to normal. He was sweating)

Me: exactly I'm like my mother. And you will not tell anyone about this . Not even your wife . You know I was supposed to kill you long time ago for murdering my mother. But I didn't because I love you . You're my father so I would never do something to hurt you. But after today you're dead to me . You're no longer my father and I'm no longer your daughter. From now on i won't bother you with anything. I will also leave your house.

Dad: Lali ...Lali I'm very sorry my daughter.

Me: Don't ever call me your daughter. You pretended to care and love me . I want nothing to do with you .

(I left him there. I went to my bedroom and packed all my clothes. I called Mat to come and fetch me . She came and we went to her home . I wish I could tell all my siblings the truth. They were very hurt when I left especially Tony. So we drove in. She

showed me the room I will be using. I just went straight to bed.)

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:10] Lynne: insert 24

Not edited

Mat's POV

Lali seemed very shuttered and broken . I wonder what happened to her. When I last saw her she was very happy to go home . But now . The sad part is on our way here . She didn't want to talk to me . She was just staring outside the window. It was now time for super. I went to the room Lali was sleeping in . She was deep asleep. I touched her stomach and shook her a little. She jumped in pain.

Me: I'm sorry are you alright?

Lali: Ehm...yeah...don't worry about me .

(Her stomach was bleeding)

Me: Lali are you okay ?

Lali: Yeah ...I just need to change this bandage.

Me: I'm very sorry I didn't know you had a wound

Lali:(she smiled faintly and held my hand)It's okay .

Me: Okay I will be back shortly. (I went and took the first aid kit.)Now lay with your back so I can help you.

Lali: Thanks hey but i can do it myself.

Me: Lali ...please...i insist .

(She raised her hands . I put on the gloves and started cleaning her wound. She kept her eyes closed. I can imagine the pain she is feeling right now. After I was done I covered it with a fresh bandage.)

Me: Done.

Lali: Thanks very much .

Me: Ok ...I will bring you something to eat okay?

Lali: I'm not hungry exactly...but thank you.

Me: not happening. You need to eat so you can take the pill for pains .

(I went downstairs and warmed the food for Lali and I. Dad flew to Capetown yesterday. I'm glad Lali is here or else boredom would have killed me . I brought food.)

Lali: Thanks.

Me: You don't need to thank me for everything Lali . You're like a sister to me .

(She just smiled. She's very cute)

Lali: Can you please charge my phone for me.

Me: Sure.

(I charged it. We than started eating over a light conversation.)

Lali's POV

I'm one lucky girl in the world. To have a friend like Mat. I mean we just knew each other for few weeks. But it feels like we grew up together. She's taking a good care of me . I took the pill she gave me after I finished eating. And I was feeling a bit better. She helped stand up . I went to the toilet and urinated. I washed my hands . I looked myself at the mirror. Suddenly a woman appears on it. I looked back but she was only visible on the mirror.

" I'm very proud of you my dear . You defeated that monster. I'm sorry that you had to endure that pain before finally defeating him "

Me: who are you?

(She smiled. She was very beautiful)

" I can't tell you that . But always know that whatever you do I'm always by your side . Here drink this . It will stop all the bleeding and make you

feel better. You will only be left with scars."

(I slowly drank it . It was very bitter. After I finished it I drank alot of water)

" Good . Take care dear . Ohh before I forget. I know your dad is not perfect and has hurt you so much. But do in your heart find a place to forgive him . He needs you . Your family needs you by them . Alot is still going to happen to that family. And you need to be there to protect them and make sure they are safe . Especially your father. He loves you dear . He loves you so much. "

Me: I also thought that he loved me . But he has proven that I was just fooling myself. I hate him . I hate him with all I got .

" Lali I think you should put your hatred aside and talk to your dad. You must give him a chance to

explain what really happened on that day and why he gave you away to that monster. "

Me: I want nothing to do with that man .

" Lali hatred can be your downfall. So please avoid it . There are serious problems you need to deal with. "

Mat: Lali ...Lali are you okay in there...who are you talking to?

Me: Erhmm...I'm coming. I have to go now .

" Take care . Please talk to your father. "

(She disappeared. I went out of the bathroom. I wasn't limping anymore. I touched my stomach

and the pain was gone . It was like I was hurt a long time ago .)

Mat: And than? You got into the bathroom limping and struggling . Now you coming back looking all fresh .

(she laughed. Strange. Why isn't she freaked out . If it was Nomhle she would have created a sin . I'm sure the whole neighborhood would have heard.)

Mat: Anyway since you're feeling better let's go to the TV room and watch a movie.

Me: Sure.

Tony's POV

I'm very worried about Lali. I wonder what dad did that made Lali to leave . She didn't even tell me anything. What happened must have really hurted her. I have never seen Lali that broken . She's a very strong girl . She doesn't show her emotions.

But this time around she showed everyone that she's very hurt. I just hope wherever she is . She's safe . Her eyes was filled with anger and pain . I wish I can just take all the pain she's feeling and endure it . While i was still lost in my thoughts a call from Addison came through. I ignored it. She called again.

Me: Hey.

Add: (She was crying and screaming) T...Tony I'm very scared...The...they wer...were here...

Me: What are you talking about?

Add: please come and get me ...I'm very scared.

(I drove to her place. She was curled down hugging her legs and crying. I set next to her.)

Me: Hey ...stop crying ...I'm here now .

Add: Thank you for coming. (She hugged me so tight)

Me: So what happened?

Add: I think the people that killed my sister are after me.

Me: (I laughed a little) What?

Add: Yes they were here ...they threatened to kill me.

Me: Really?

Add: Tony ...I can't. ..I can't anymore. Can I stay at your house for a couple of days?

Me: Sure there's no problem. Go and take your and toiletries.

(She went upstairs. Who must have been here. I looked everywhere and tried to sniff everything but nothing. I hope she's not lying. But she looked so scared and she's not that type of a girl who lied. She came back we drove back home. Everyone was having super. It was very tense. No one was talking. I cleared my throat)

Me: Erhm...dad...this is Carol's sister. Do you remember the day we said we were going to a

funeral?(He wasn't even paying attention to me) so she's the deceased sister.

Mom: There's absolutely no problem my son. She can stay here as long as she want .

Add: Thank you very much Mrs Kane.

Mom: Call me Mom please. (we all looked at her. Why mom is this nice to Addison. She hate Lali yet she's very fond of a stranger.)Come sit next to me and have something to eat.

(She went and set down . I set down too and started eating. Since Lali left I have trying to call her but her phone is switched off. I tried to call her again. Still nothing. I was starting to get worried now.)

Mom: Who are you calling?

Me: Lali .

Mom: Ohh please can we just eat in peace. Can everyone stop mentioning her name . She decided to leave . We didn't kick her out .

(Dad stood up and went to his study. He had a glass of whiskey on his hand. He looks so broke . Whatever Lali said to him must have gotten to him so hard.)

Kayla's POV

So when mom was going out with her car . She noticed a black plastic bag in our yard . She called us . Mike opened it and what was in there it's something I can't even explain in words there was also a letter written.

" I warned him . But he didn't listen. I pity Mrs Owen . Because she knows nothing about what you guys and your dad were busy doing behind her back . I dare one of you to report me to the police . I will cut off all of your heads. And I mean it . No one messes with me and lives to tell a tale.

Yours sincerely

THE ADILA

Mom collapsed at the same time . We called a doctor. They did check ups on her and gave her few medication. She woke up . We tried to speak to her but she wasn't responding. So we decided to take her to the hospital. They said she just experienced a brain shock . Everything is messed up. I never thought that girl would be the reason for our loss. She seemed weak . We drove back home . I'm beyond being broken. Dad was everything to us . We did everything together. He loved and cared for us . We are what we are today because of him . I promise I won't rest until I wipe out all the Kane family. I won't even leave a dog . So we arrived home and I took mom to her bedroom. I asked the helper to bring her food. I went to dad's office. Mike was sitting there crying like a baby. He was drinking dad's Scotch.

Mike: NOOOOOO(he threw the glass on the wall and it broke)Why ? WHY DAD? WHY LALI?

(I was now crying too)

Me: I know it hurts so much . But please be strong for mom and I. Please stay strong . Our goal now is to kill every member of the Kane family. We will make them feel the pain we're feeling right now.

Mike: She's so heartless. Who kills a person than send the organs and head of that person to his house. Who does that?

(I hugged him)

Me: We need to find justice for dead. His death cannot go into vein. We need to fight that witch .

Addison's POV

So I'm finally inside the Mighty Kane household. I must say it's very breathtaking. The interior and exterior design. Everything is on point . Mrs Kane seems to be fond of me . That's great. I need to

gain everyone's trust. So when I finally put my plan into action no one will suspect me. I lied to Tony about those people. I'm glad he believed me . So Zia showed me the bedroom I will be using . It's very beautiful. Anyways Tony walked in.

Tony: How are you feeling now?

Add: Better. ..

Tony: okay ...goodnight. I was just checking up on you .

Add: Thanks .

(He went closer to me and placed his hands around my waist. He kissed me . The kiss was very passionate and slow. I stopped him)

Me: Goodnight Tony.(He continued to kiss me.)I'm really tired I need to sleep.(He stopped)

Tony: Okay. ..bye.

(He went out . I locked the door. Wheew)

Austin's POV

So I was sitting with my wife . We were watching TV . She seemed very down . This baby is really draining her . She looks so pretty with her big bump though.

Her: So what happened to the girl you told me about?

Me: When I went to check up on her. The nurses said she went home.

Her: But how can they allow a hurt person to go.

Me: That's what I was asking them .

Her: I just hope she's fine .wherever she is.

Me: yeah hey ...I wonder what she was doing on the street in the middle of the night. She even refused to speak to the police officers.

Her: That's strange. Why wouldn't she . Whereas she was stabbed to death. There's something more about this girl. Anyways I'm feeling sleepy now .

Goodnight .

(She stood up . When she was still walking she held her stomach. I went to her)

Me: Are you okay?

Her: Yeah...just a minor pain.

Me: Sit down and I will bring my kit and check you up .

Her: Babe ...don't worry . It will go away. Don't overreact.

Me: No I'm checking you . We can not take chances this time.

Her: Okay tomorrow atleast. I'm very tired I need to rest .

Me: Okay ...tomorrow morning before I leave for work I will check you up .

Her: Yeah yeah...can I go now.

(I picked her up bridal style. I placed her on the bed . And started to kiss her. I went between her legs.)

Me: I love you so much .

Her: I love you too.

Me: Thank you for being mine .

(She smiled. I layed next to her .)

Please like and comment

Will try to post again tomorrow.

[06/23, 08:11] Lynne: Insert 25

Lali's POV

I woke up and than took a bath. I kept thinking about what that lady said . I think I should really talk to dad . I need to hear him . Being angry at him won't change anything. After all he is my father. With all his flaws I still love and care for him . I may not just do it for him . But my siblings also need me . I can't afford to lose any one of them. I will go and see dad today . After that I will decide if I want him

back to my life or not . So I went downstairs Mat was busy making breakfast.

Me: Hey dear.

Mat: Hey how are you?

Me: I'm fine .

Mat: Here(she gave me a place that has toasted bread, an egg , bacon and a sausage)

Me: My God...are you trying to ruin my waist

(She laughed. She's such a sweet girl. We started eating. I finished than helped her with the dishes)

Me: Erhm Mat...I was thinking of going to see my dad. There's something important I need to discuss with him.

Mat: Sure ...I will drop you off. When you come back please tell me what happened? I really care about you.

(I sighed)

Me: okay.

(She drove me home. When I'm done schooling I need to learn how to drive hey . We arrived)

Mat: Call me when you're done so I can come and fetch you .

Me: ok thanks.

(We hugged. I took a deep breath than went in. They were busy having breakfast. There was also a girl sitting next to Mrs Kane . She looked a little like Carol .)

Dad: Lali.

Me: Goodmorning everyone. Dad can I ...

Dad: Lali I have something to tell you. Please follow me .

(He stood up and made his way to his study. I followed him)

Dad: Erm...I think it's about time I tell you the whole truth. What really caused me to keep your mother as a prisoner. So Lali when she was giving birth to you . I was also in the ward with her. I was holding

her hand. She tried to push for like 5 hours and you were still not coming out . Suddenly the room became dark . We started hearing strange voices. The room filled with wind . I saw your mother changing into something i can't explain in words . After that we heard a baby cry . Everything went back to normal and your mother too. I was so scared i left her there and went to cool off my head. I went to Tony's mom place. I told her everything. She said your mother is a very harmful creature. She feeds on human . She also said there are possibilities that you're also like her. So that day I injected her with a drug that made her unconscious. I than took her to a cage. Until last year . I met Mr Owen in some business function. We started calling one another. To a point where he found out about your mom. He said he can kill her for me and also claim back the powers she stole from him . He was also going to pay me very well.

Me: Wow so you were willing to kill the person you loved for money? But dad why ? You're rich yet you want more money .

Him: Lali dear ... I was still blinded by the fact that she's harmful. So Mr Owen knew that secret. He used it against me . He said if I don't give him you. He will harm my family and also tell you the truth.

Me: But dad...I tried to reach for you. I tried several times to talk to you but you kept ignoring me . I knew the truth . I knew everything.

Him: Lali at that time . I wasn't able to face you. I couldn't even face you . But baby I want you to know that I love and care for you truthfully. I also promise that I will never hide anything from you.

Me: So since you now know that I'm exactly like my mother. Actually I'm way powerful than her. Are you going to keep me hostage ?

Him: No...Lali my dear . I will never repeat the same mistake I did with your mom. I will support you my dear in everything you do . But please when you do find time . Teach me more about what you exactly are. Okay?

(I just nodded)

Him : I won't pressure you to forgive me . But Lali

please come back home. Please we miss you.

Me: I will ...but not now. When I have cooled down.
Dad can we keep this a secret. People must not know what I am .

Him: okay don't worry dear your secret is safe with me .And Lali dear you can take your time dear. As long as you will come back . Thank you for hearing me out . I know I'm not a best dad . But please forgive me dear.

Lali: I have to go now .

Him: bye .

(He attempted to hug me . I just went out .)

Me: Ohh before I leave. Who's that girl?

Him : Ask Tony.

(I went down stairs.)

Me: Erhmm ... I'm going now . Take care guys .

Zia: Lali...when are you coming back home?

Me: Soon (I was looking straight to that girl. There's something about her. She has some hidden agenda.

Something unsettling about her. But she's not a threat.)

Me: And Zia who is she ?

Zia: Carol's younger sister.

Me: owhh...hey ...how are you ?

(I went to her and hugged her. Her heart was beating very fast. I looked into her eyes. Her eyes are full of hatred. I need to come back home soon . I can't fail her too. She really need to change her way of thinking or she can end up dead.)

Her: I'm trying to cope without Carol...it's really difficult.

Me: I know hey ... anyway bye everyone.

(I texted Mat to come and fetch me . While I was still waiting for her Tony came to me . He hugged me. He is so kind towards me)

Tony:How are you ?

Me: I'm fine hey.

Tony: Don't lie to me Lali... I know you more than

anyone. How are you feeling.

Me: To be honest. I'm not fine .

Tony: Care to share.

Me: I will but not now . I will tell you when I have finally healed emotionally.

Tony : okay ..

(Mat parked in front of us .)

Me: bye Tony.

Tony: bye.

(We drove back to Mat's house. She made pop corn and took a bottle of wine and two glasses. We went to the TV room .)

Mat: It's about time we know each other more. I will be very honest to you and I hope you will too.

Me: Sure.

Mat: So Lali do you remember back in school when you said I'm always not in bed at the middle of the

night?

Me: yes i do and you said you're going to tell me when I visit you.

Mat : Yes . So Lali please don't panic about what I'm about to tell you.

Me: Okaaay.

Mat : Lali ...I'm a werewolf. So when the moon appears I change into a wolf. I don't know how to control that because I was never taught to. I sometimes unable to control my anger. I sometimes just change without me even realizing.

Me: But is there anywhere you can get help ?

Mat : Yes ...there's a place called Oegrate. Where all the werewolves live. But dad said we are not allowed there since his father dated a beast.

(My heart bit increased a little)

Me: B...but what's wrong with dating a beast.

Mat: Beasts are the greatest enemies of werewolves. They hate one another.

Me: But why?

Mat: It a hatred passed from one generation to another. I'm sure as we are speaking the werewolves are busy plotting a war with the beasts. I have also heard that the beasts have now become very vulnerable since their leaders died. They are hoping for the Adila to come and save them . The werewolves wants to invade their place.

Me: But Mat how do you know all this ?

Mat: You see Lali . I have done research in everything . I know everything about Vampires , beasts and other things . I have read so many books explaining about their way of living and how they protect themselves.

Me: You said there's a place you know . Where the beasts live?

Mat: Yes and it's called Drugiomin . I have searched for it and the condition of it is very bad . I just hope some day their Adila can come and save them .

Me: So you don't hate beasts?

Mat: What never. ..I don't . I hate werewolves. I know it may sound strange but I do trust me. They're selfish and evil.They said for my dad and I to come back and live in the Oegrade. We must come with an alive beast to be killed or a vampire. That way we can prove our innocence and determination to become one of them . I mean why can't they just forget about happened years back before I was even born . I also want to go to the Oegrade and learn more about what I am . I do read books but I can't train using them . I have said alot now . It's your turn.

(I just don't know if I should tell her the truth or not. I feel like I can trust her. At the end of the day I also have to speak to someone about this. Someone who will understand because has the almost similar thing.)

Mat: Lali I know that you're not normal. It's just that I'm not sure what you exactly are ? . So I would really appreciate it if you could be honest with me. Dear you can trust me .

Me: ermmm...what I'm about to tell you . Please

don't tell anyone . Not even your dad.

Mat: Trust me I won't. I would never . Even if a gun is pointed at me I won't. I promise you .

Me: I'm a beast.

Mat: Okaaay.

Me: Not just a beast. I'm the Adila. I'm what everyone is after. Every creature on earth wants to kill me and take all my powers .

Mat: Wow ...Lali . You're very powerful and no one. I mean no one can ever defeat you . I'm so lucky to have a friend like you Lali.

Me: Aren't you freaked out about the whole thing.

Mat: No ...i know that you mean good. You have good intentions. I just hope some day you would go and help your people. They need you more than they ever did.

Me: I didn't know all that hey ... I'm just glad that they are people like me out there. But I can't just go to them now. I need to atleast finish school.

Mat: I know . So what happened to you the day you

called me.

(I told her everything that happened. From the day I was born till now.)

Me: So if you were in my shoes what would you have done?. Forgive your dad and pretend like nothing happened. Or hold a grudge?

Mat: I know Lali your dad has hurt you so much . But he's still your dad. I would gladly forgive my dad. Lali there was a time in my life also where I hated that . I hated him for not allowing me to go to the Oegrate. At that time it was very difficult for me . I would stay as a wolf for days . I blamed him for being selfish. But when he told me the whole truth. I forgive him and understand the situation. I'm not forcing you to forgive him . But please do consider forgiving him . Because later on you will regret everything when he's no longer alive .

Me: I get you . I think I have forgiven him. But I don't think I will still trust him like I did before.

Mat: Little by little your relationship will eventually improve.

Me: You are the best hey... you're different from my other friend Nomhle. She would have said. Leave his fucking ass and never come back. I miss her though.

Mrs Kane's POV

I like this Addis on girl . I know that she's dating Tony. She is the kind of girl I want Tony to date. So I was getting ready to see the bitch who have been keeping my husband away from me. I have her address so everything will be easy. I drove to her place. I parked my car outside and asked the guards to let me in. I said I'm an old friend of hers. I knocked an old cleaning open and assembled me to her. She was having snacks. I looked at her stomach . She had a little bump . I held my chest. Tears were threatening to come out . Shit fuck Kane ...what have he done .

Her: Hello how can I help you?

Me: ermm...I ..I'm...

(Words were failing me . I just didn't know what to say to her . I was still surprised about the fact that she might be pregnant.)

Her: Are you going to say something or you just going to stand there like a statue .

(she's rude)

Me: Ermm...I'm Mrs Kane .

Her: Ohh...so you're are the wife that is keeping our man away from me .

Me: Excuse me ?

Her: Yes ...If maybe you came here to threaten me to leave Mr kane . Forget it dear. I'm not going anywhere. I'm here to stay .

Me: Listen here. I know you're running away from your ex husband. If you don't leave him I will tell him the whole truth.

Her: I wanna see you try . Let's see who he's going to believe. The person who is carrying his son or the person that miscarried and also cheated.

Me: Don't ever speak of my dead children like that bitch.

Her: Kayla my name is Kayla dear. And I think it's time to leave. Guards please take her out of my house and never allow her inside ever again.

Me: I will kill you bitch.

(the guards came and dragged me outside. She's very rude. I understated her. She doesn't know who she's dealing with . I will teach her a lesson she will never forget.)

Kayla's POV

I wasn't even shook by her threats. I'm not scared of her. I think it about time i tell Mr kane that I'm pregnant. I called his number.

Him: Hey love...how are you?

Me: I'm good . Can I see you now .

Him: ermmm ...no ...I will come by your place

tomorrow.

Me: It's very important.

Him: okay. ..I'm coming.

(After what felt like hours he arrived. I had prepared a dinner for us. He came to me and kissed my chick.)

Him: How have you been?

Me: well and you?

Him: I better not tell you.

Me: So I have a gift for you .

Him:okay.

(I took him by his hand to my bedroom. I showed him the pregnancy test I took three weeks ago.)

Him: My God babes...we going to have a baby . (he picked me up . I thought he was going to be angry that I only told him now. I have never seen him this happy before.)

Him: I love I love I love.

(He kept repeating)

Me: i love you too babe.

Him : Tomorrow you're moving in with me. That's not up for discussion.

Me: i don't think your wife will be happy.

Him: i don't care. It's my house after all. You make sure you pack everything Mrs kane to be.

Me: Really.

Him: I love you and I want to spend the rest of my life with you .

Me: I love you too.

Austin's POV

So I received a call from my brother. He is in Dubai. He said there is someone trying to ruin his business. So later on I'm flying to Dubai . He said he is a

vampire. I always hated vampires . They think they're better than other creatures. So we will sort him out . He is nothing compared to us.

Me: Please take good care of her mom. Call me when there's something wrong.

Mom: Don't worry. You know I take her as my own daughter. I love her so much . So I wouldn't mind looking after. It would be a way of thanking her for taking good care of you.

Me: Thank you very much mom .

(I went to my wife)

Her: So you're really going. Whereas you know I can give birth even now.

Me: Babe my is here . Don't worry. My brother needs me .

Her: okay ...bye . Remember if something goes wrong while giving birth. I will blame you the rest of my life.

Me: You see now babe. You're making it hard for me to leave. okay it's fine I won't go. They can kill my brother it's fine.

Her: What ? Who will kill him? What's going on Austin.

Me: My brother needs me that all I can tell you .

Her: I didn't know it was that serious. I'm sorry babe. Please go and help him I will be fine.

Me: thank you . I love you .

Her: I love you too.

(I kissed her and her stomach)

Me: Bye my little champion.

(I know my flight is later but I will first go to the office and hospital to make sure everything is accordingly.)

Kiara's POV

We cremated dad's body . It was just family members only. So I was with my brother in his office.

Me: How are you holding up ?

(He just shrugged his shoulders)

Me: Okay...what's the plan .

Him: We will use her stupid friend Nomhle to get to her.

Me: I see ...

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:12] Lynne: Insert 26

Not edited

Austin's wife POV

I'm trying to sleep but the pains are too bad. I keep tossing and turning. I woke up and went to the kitchen to drink some water. I took out a bottle of water from the fridge and poured in a glass. I started drinking. I finished I was now halfway the steps. I felt myself wet and my clothes too. I touched myself it was blood. I screamed.

Me: Moom !mom!...Guards.

(She came running)

Mom: What's wrong dear?(she looked at me) Blood? What happened?

(I knelt down because abdominal pains were very extreme. Mom went and called the guards to help carry me to the car. We were now on our way to the hospital)

Me: Mom what if my baby doesn't make it?

Mom: Don't worry my baby ...nothing is wrong with the baby. Things like this happens.

(The pain was not doing any justice. We got into

the hospital. They took me to my ward. They started checking me up)

Doc: So Mem when did the pains start?

Me: it has been a week now .

Doc: And you didn't bother informing a me

(So this is Doctor Tompson . He is my doctor along with my husband.)

Me: The pains weren't that serious. They would go away after some time.

Doc: So when did you start bleeding

Me: Doctor can you stop with all the questions. Can I just give birth now ...I can't anymore.

Doc: Okay mem .

Austin's mom POV

It was now in the morning. I haven't slept . I have

been sitting here waiting for a doctor to come out. I was starting to worry . I decided to call Austin.

Me: Hello my son ...how are things there?

Him: Fine ...I think I will fly tomorrow morning. How is my wife doing?

Me: The doctors are still busy with her.

Him: Her water broke?

Me: No ...she was bleeding and had pains .

Him: But mom why didn't you tell me . I'm flying back now .

Me: No my son...nothing will happen. I'm here to take care of her.

Him: No ...I'm coming.

(He dropped the call. While I was praying I was disturbed by the doctor)

Doc : Sorry to interrupt you .

Me: How is my daughter?

Doc: Erhm...mmm...mem ...I'm very sorry we were not able to save them . When she came here the baby was already dead . As she had an ectopic pregnancy we couldn't save her . Her organs were damaged which is why she been having pains and also why she was bleeding. I'm very sorry .

(I felt my heart brake . Tears filled my eyes . I cried. What am I going to say to Austin. Oh . Austin if you just told her the truth may be she would still be alive . My son is very stubborn. He was told that he can only have a child with his chosen one. Look now what happened. An innocent girl's life has been taken . She was so sweet ,respectful and also kindhearted. How I wish she was Austin's chosen one. What are we going to say to her family . I went to the car and drove straight home .)

Lali's POV

I was woken up by my phone ringing it was dad. I

answered.

Me: Hello.

Dad: Goodmorning my dear...how are you?

Me: I'm fine dad and you?

Dad: Fine...erhm...there's a family dinner. I wanted to ask you if you can come over.

Me: Dad ... I don't think it will be a good Idea. Remember the day y'll prepared a family dinner what happened? ...I'm sorry dad but I can't.

Dad: Lali I thought we talked through that. I apologized and promised that it will never happen again. Trust me . You can bring your own food if you want.

Me: okay ...

Dad: bye.

(I feel very bad that I have to bring my own food at my own home. Because my dad can sometimes be an ass. I bathed and went to help Mat . This girl

doesn't sleep hey. I kissed her chick)

Me: Goodmorning.

Mat: Hey ...

(Okay something is not right with her)

Me: Are you okay?

Mat: Yeah...I'm just angry at my father. He said I must fly to Capetown. There's something important.

Me: Okay...than why are you sad?

Mat: I don't want to leave you. Especially right now as you're going through so much.

Me: You can go sweet one. I'm fine. And dad invited me for a family dinner.

Mat: Really? You're going right?

Me: Yeah ...but I will bring my own food.

Mat: Don't do that. What will your siblings say.

Me: I know hey ...I also feel bad . Mat I was thinking of moving back home.

Mat: that a good idea . Don't get me wrong. I'm not chasing you away. I'm just happy that you will finally spend more time with your family. Lali life is too short to keep holding a grudge against someone.

Me: yeah hey .

(we ate . We helped one another to pack since she's also going . She dropped me off home . They were busy preparing for the dinner.)

Zia: Lali !

Zayn: Hey Lali .

(They all came and hugged me . God I love them so much)

Me: okay guys let go now ... i can't breathe.

Jase: How are you?

Me: I'm fine i was just missing you guys so much.

Zia: Ncoo...we missed you so much hey. Things were very tense here without you .

Me: So what's the occasion?

Zia: we are all clueless. Dad said we must decorate the dining room. He even hired chefs to prepare food.

Me: okay that's good.

(Carol's sister made her way to us)

Addi: Hey.

Me: Hello how are you?

Addi: I'm good and you?

Me: I'm good. Erhmm...guys let me go and change so I can help.

(I went upstairs. I packed everything into my wardrobe. I missed my room hey. I opened the windows and the door leading to the balcony. I stood there and looked outside. The sun was hitting different today. I'm in a happy mood today. I don't know why. I went back inside. I changed into my Fila leggings and an oversized T shirt. I put on my puma push ins. I went downstairs to help everyone

else. Mrs Kane was abit off . I wonder what's wrong with her. It was getting late now. Everything was looking beautiful and very heartwarming. The food was smelling so ambrosial. I just can't wait to taste it.)

Zia: Guys let's go and freshen up .

(I went upstairs and ran a bubble bath for myself. I soaked myself in. While at it I decided to call Nomhle. It kept ringing with no answer. I decided to call her mom .)

Me: Hello mama.

Her: hello my dear ... how are you doing?

Me: I'm doing fine ...how are you ?

Her: Very fine my dear. Why you no longer visit me?

Me: I've been a little busy . But tomorrow I will visit you guys .

Her: Okay dear.

Me: I've been trying to call Nomhle but she's not answering.

Her: What? .. Nomhle told me that she's sleeping over there. What do you mean by that.

(What? Why would Nomhle lie . I haven't talked to her for the past days. The last time I called her she was so cold towards me.)

Me: Erhmm...yeah ...I asked her to come. But she hasn't arrived yet. Ohh I forgot. She said she will start at the mall to buy snacks for us .

Her: Okay...I was so frightened hey. Please ask her what's wrong with her. She's been acting very strange. I think she has found herself a boyfriend.

Me: A boyfriend?

Her: Yeah ...she's always blushing when she's on her cellphone. If it rings she goes upstairs.

Me: I will ask her .

Her: okay bye dear .

Me: bye .

(What's going on with Nomhle. Is she mad. How can she lie about visiting me and the fact that she now may have a boyfriend. Nomhle has really changed. I tried to call her again she ignored. I sent her a message

" Since you're not answering my calls. It's fine I will tell your mom that you're not here. And I didn't invite you to sleepover. "

Sent. Just then she called me "

Nomhle: Lali

Me: Nomhle...where are you?

Nomhle: Ermm...I'm at friend's house.

Me: A friend's house? ...you never told me you have found a new friend.

Nomhle: Lali you're not my mom. That I have to

inform you everytime I do something.

Me: Since when Nomhle? We have been friends since childhood. We have been telling each other everything. Where is that coming from now? When did everything change.

Nomhle: Lali ...things changed the day you landed back into your home . You have been acting like a diva . Since than you haven't treating me like your friend. You always called me if there's something new you bought. You like bragging and showing off.

Me: What? Nomhle are you mad?

Nomhle: Lali I have to go now.

(she dropped the call. What's happening to Nomhle. I need to find out what's wrong with her. I can't just lose my friend actually my sister like this . I dried myself and put on a black body hugging dress that's above the knees a little. I went downstairs everybody was sitting down . I set next to Zia. We were all waiting for dad)

Zayn: Mom like really what's the occasion?

Mrs K: I don't know son ... Your father didn't tell me either.

(This Nomhle situation was really stressing me . I decided to tell Mat via WhatsApp. While I was still busy . Guards walked in carrying so many suitcases)

Zia: Okay what's going on ?

(we all looked at each other. While we were still amazed by that dad walked in with some lady. She's very beautiful. I looked through her soul. She's so kindhearted. I also see a baby boy . Ohh so she's pregnant. Mr Kane was beyond being angry . Her face was pale)

Dad: Good evening everyone. Thanks for preparing all this . So I want to introduce my soon to be second wife . Her name is Kayla. But to you guys

mom.

Mrs K: What?..but you didn't ask me if I agree or not

(Dad ignored her)

Dad: Kayla dear this is Lali , Zia, Tony, J ase and Zayn my children. That's is their friend Addison. This is my wife.

Kayla: Nice to meet you all. I must say you guys are beautiful. Especially you (she was Pointing at me)

Me: thanks...I'm just startled by your beauty Mem.

Kayla: mom ...please call me mom . And thanks (I smiled she's so nice.) Hello sister wife. (She was addressing Mrs Kane. She just looked at her . I think I like her already. Actually I love her. So the dinner went very smooth. She so funny hey . I think everyone likes her . Beside for Mrs Kane.)

Dad: oh another thing...from now on she will be staying with us . She's also pregnant. So please guys take good care of her.

J ase: Don't worry dad...she's in good hands.

(Mrs Kane stood up and went upstairs)

Dad: Excuse me .

(He followed her)

Kayla:As I was saying...(She continued with her funny stories. She also told us how she met dad.)

Mrs Kane's POV

I was extremely angry so I went upstairs. How can my husband do me like this. And the fact that everyone likes that bitch triggers me the most . I need to get rid of her . My husband walked in .

Him: Are you okay?

Me: ohh...you brought a woman here without even telling me . Do you think I'm okay?

Him : Okay...I'm truly sorry for that . But I was just overwhelmed that we will soon be having a baby. So I'm here to ask you if I can marry her.

Me: it's not like if i say no you will listen.

Him: That's very true... so I'm letting you know that I'm taking a second wife.

(He was on the door way)

Him: And please don't do anything that can harm her. Because I promise you I won't hesitate killing you . I know you very well.

(He left. This women is a problem. He just entered my house. But already my husband is threatening to kill me .

Austin's POV

I just landed. I decided to start at home and leave everything. When I got home mom was sitting on the couch busy crying. My mouth dropped.

Me: Mom ...where's my wife?

(She cried even more .)

Me: Mom please tell me ...what's happened what's going

Her: Son ...I'm very sorry . I'm sorry I failed you .

Me: Mom what do you mean ?

Her: She didn't make it. And the baby too.

Me: What ? That's not true. I'm sure you're joking right .

(I took my car keys and drove straight to the hospital. I got there and looked for my wife. Dr Thompson made his way to me)

Him: I'm very sorry ...we couldn't save her.

Me: What? (I held him by his clothes)

Him : Yes it's true. When she came here the baby was already dead in her . Her organs were damaged as she had an ectopic pregnancy.

Me: No ...that's can't be. (I let go of him)

I want to see her right now.

(He escorted me there. Her head and body was covered. I went to her . I uncovered her face and yes she's no more. I cried. I have never been this broken in my life . I feel guilty that I wasn't here and also that I never told her about the chosen one thing. I'm the reason she's dead . Eventhough I knew I can't have babies with her . I kept trying. I shouldn't have. If I told her she would still be alive . I'm the one to be blamed. I held her her hand and cried.)

Me: I'm so sorry love. I'm the to be blamed for your death. I knew the whole truth but didn't tell you. I will never forgive myself for that. You were so kindhearted and took very good care of me . You were the woman of my dreams. I promise you my love . To love you even in death. I will never replace you with any women . My heart will forever breathe for you until we meet again.

(I kissed her forehead and drove back home. I was so broken . I have never tried like this in my entire life. It like I have just lost my mother. She was everything to me . Her family didn't want us to get married. She disobeyed them for me . The least I

would have done is to be honest to her. But I failed. I failed her.)

Mom: I'm sorry my boy ..I know it painful. I know. I understand your pain. Never forget that I'm here for you. If you need a shoulder to cry on I'm here for you .

Me: Mom ...I'm the reason she's dead . She sacrificed her life for my happiness . I always wanted a baby with her.

Mom: Don't blame yourself . Please don't ever blame yourself.

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:12] Lynne: insert 27

Few months later.

Lali's POV

School has been very hectic. I have been studying so hard since soon we are starting our finals. Mat and I are more close than before. Life is just great. I never thought in my life i will also find happiness and joy. Back at home things are going very well. Everyone is happy beside for Mrs Kane. She has even lost weight. I think it's karma. She's suffering for her sins. Dad no longer gives her all his attention. She has tried so many times to kill the baby mom Kayla is carrying. Since I love mom Kayla so much I made sure that little brother is fine. That pushed dad even more away from her. Kayla mom has been treating me like her own daughter. She actually love and care for me more than my other siblings. She's a mother figure I have been wanting in my whole life. With regarding to Nomhle. I have given up on her. I found out that she's dating Mike . Mr Owen's son . I have warned her several times that he's not good for her. But she's so stubborn to listen me. She even said I'm jealous of her that she has found herself a cute guy . Her mom told me that her marks are dropping. Whereas she's supposed to be passing with flying colours as she is homeschooled

and also have private tutors. I never thought this day will ever come . Where the person I grew up with would turn against me . The person who took a very good care of me . Who comforted me during hardships. I'm really shattered by Nomhle's behavior. I just hope some day in her life she will find light and realise that she taking a wrong path . I have applied in different universities. I wanted to study in Capetown. But with everything going on . I guess I can't. My family is always facing difficulties. The happiness just doesn't last. So I'm forced to study here. It was almost sunrise . Since Mat told me about her problem. I have been supporting her. When she transforms I would keep her company in the nearest jungle. I must say she's a cute wolf. Her fur is white . I like touching it . It's very soft . We watch stars until the sunrise and she transforms back . We were now on our way back .

Mat : I love you Lali. You're very supportive.

Me: I love you more. You're a great friend. You also have a great and pure heart. I just pray it remains

the same.

Mat: Don't worry I will never change. I'm not like that ugly friend of yours Nomthi.

(We laughed)

Me: Don't speak of my friend like that (I playfully hit her back) And her name is Nomhle not Nomthi .

Mat : So Lali what do you want to study for

Me: At first I wanted to become an Oncologist Radiology . But I'm slowly loosing interest in it . I just don't. And father is also pressurizing me to the business management. Like I just don't like working in business. What do want to do?

Mat: I'm not sure either. But whatever you do I will also do it.

(we laughed)

Me: If I decided to work at shoprite would you too?

Mat: Yes why not? You're like a twin sister to me. I want to always be by your side.

(I held her cheeks)

Me: Ncoo my other half.

(We went in and prepared for school)

Mike's O POV

Our plan is working perfectly. We're slowly turning Nomhle against Lali. We are now towards our destination. We will attack Lali before she could even notice . I have been spending so much time with Nomhle. She's talkative and her voice is so irritating. I wish this is over now . She calls every now and than . She visits me more frequently. Even today she's coming to sleepover. About mom . She has not recovered yet . We even hired her a nurse to take care of her . Instead of becoming better she's getting worse. She has started talking to herself. I just feel sorry for her. When I see her my heart breaks into peaces. I promise when my hands lend on Lali I'm not going to spare her life. She has caused my family pain . But her days are numbered. Dad failed to kill her . But my sister and I won't.

Nomhle arrived.

Nomhle: Hey babe

(she kissed me on the cheek . I rolled my eyes without her noticing me)

Nomhle: How are you

Me: I'm fine . Aren't you suppose to be in school.

Nomhle:.I'm being homeschooled remember. So today I'm not learning. yoooh...I missed you.

Me: But you saw me yesterday.

Nomhle: You know I just can't leave without you. A minute without you near me feels like a whole month.

Me: I think you're exaggerating now.

Nomhle: I'm not . I'm deeply inlove with you .

(I just kept quiet)

Nomhle: Mike. Do you still love me

(I cleared my throat)

Me: Yes ...mhh...why are you asking me that babe .

Nomhle: It's just that the past few days . You haven't been giving me your attention. It either you're busy on your phone or you're with your sister.

Me: I'm a businessman. I think you have forgotten that . And my sister is my life . Babe family comes first. Don't you think you must go home and do some studying. The finals are near right?

Nomhle: yeah but I'm not going anywhere. I'm spending a night here.

Me: Okay see you later than .(I took my phone and car keys)

Nomhle: Mike stop. Where are you going to .

Me: I need some fresh air .

Nomhle's POV

Just like that he's gone. Our relationship has took a quick turn . Mike has changed. He has changed into

a cold and rude man . At first I was his queen. He promised me the world and treated me like a queen. I have been feeling very sick lately . I'm even vomiting. I have also gained alot of wait. Mom keeps giving me nasty looks. So being home just triggers me. While I was still sitting a call came through. It was Lali . Why can't she leave me alone.

Me: Yes what's do you want.

Her: Nomhle...how are you .

Me: WHAT DO YOU WANT LALI

Her: I'm just checking up on you. I know you hate me to the core. But please always know I still care about you. I will forever be. So that's why I'm advising you for the last time . Leave Mike. He's not a good guy for you . You're worth of someone who's kindhearted and has a pure heart.

Me: Lali do you some how want him. Are you jealous of me

Her: What?

Me: Yes ...Lali ... Mike is a good guy . He treats me like a queen. He's the best guy I would ever ask for.

Her: I give up ...I give up on you. But Nomhle atleast please take your studies serious. It's your last year so please nail it. Please make mom proud . And Nomhle your mo. J ust called me. Why you no longer spend nights at home. Where are you exactly

Me: I'm at Mike's place.

Her: What Nomhle... are mad ...finals are around the corner and you're busy with Mike. Why Nomhle... why are you doing this to yourself. Why are you destroying your own future.

Me: Lali I have to go .

Her: Nomhle...

(I dropped her call. She likes acting like she's holier than everyone else nxx. This is my life I can do whatever I want .

Mr Kane's POV

I must say life is so great. I'm very happy . All my businesses are doing well . My family is happy. And Kayla. I thank God for bringing her into my life. She's taking a good care of me and my children. Her tummy is now very big. Tony's mom has tried so many times to kill my baby . With Lali in picture . She did not succeed. Lali is so determined to protect the family. She has also taught me a few things about her beast. I never thought such things do exist in real life. Kayla is very close with Lali. Which makes me more happy. Lali deserves all the happiness and warmth she can get . She's a special child. I wish her mother also told me about her beast. Things wouldn't have turned out like this . Anyways Kayla and I were on our way to see a doctor. Just to make sure the baby is doing well . We got to the doctor and did check ups. And well the baby is fine. We were now at Wimpy. I held both Kayla's hands.

Me: I love you. Thank you for carrying my child.

Her: You are a kind , good and loving men . I love

you .

(I kissed both her hands)

Me: So have you decided the wedding day .

Her: please don't get me wrong but I can't marry you

.

(My heart beat increased.)

Me: What?

Her: Yes...I need to first give birth and work on regaining my flat stomach. Than I can decide on the wedding day .

(I just laughed.)

Me: you scared me hey.

Odin's POV

Things between Avani and I are not good. She has been ignoring me . And I must say I have also lost interest in her . I was busy looking at Lali's pictures

on Instagram. I must say she's very beautiful. But she's more beautiful in person. I think I should try my luck. I hearted all her pictures and sent a direct message to her. I just said hi.

Mrs Kane's POV

I'm so angry at myself . For failing to get rid of that women in time. My husband has turned against me . He no longer spend time with me . I need to do something. I need to find information about this Kyla. I decided to call the guy that helped last time to find her address.

Him: Madam...I feel very honored to receive a call from you.

Me: You guys did a great job last time. But I have a very important job for you guys now.

Him: Anything boss lady

Me: I want more Information about the Kayla. I want

to also know more about her ex husband.

Him: Okay madam.

Me: When can I expect all my information.

Him: I will call you when I have found any information.

(I dropped the call. She doesn't know who she's dealing with. I will find her ex husband. And tell him about her whereabouts .)

Austin's mom POV

I have decided to move on with Austin. He needs me. He has been drowning himself into alcohol. He no longer goes to work. He's blaming himself for his wife's death. He loved her. He really did. And I don't think he will ever be able to love someone else. I just feel sorry for his chosen one . He is so broken . I was busy preparing supper he walked in. He wasn't drunk today. Okay.

Me: Hey my son

Him: Hello mom ...how are you ?

(He kissed my cheek)

Me: I'm fine. How are you .

Him: I'm fine mom .

Me: I'm happy to see you sober and not blaming yourself for everything.

Him: Mom I have realized that blaming myself won't make me heal . I have also decided that I will stay at the Oegrate for two weeks. J ust to clear my head.

Me: okay...when.

Him: Tomorrow we can go . I know you're missing your husband so much .

(I laughed and playfully hit him with a dich washing cloth.)

Please like and comment

Another insert will be posted. I'm still busy with it.

[06/23, 08:13] Lynne: insert 28

Lali's POV

So we finished our finals the . I'm now back at home. Everything is just hectic. Kayla mom and Zia are busy helping Addison, Mat and I choose the dresses we are going to wear for the matric dance . I must say I'm feeling very happy to see all my favourite people together. I have been chatting with Odin . He's not that bad and .And Addison has also changed. She's now different from the day I first met her. I just hope she has made peace with what happened to her sister. So Mat and Addison had found themselves dresses. I just don't know which dress to choose. They're all beautiful. Ohh I also now know how to drive. Tony taught me but I don't

yet have a license.

Zia: Look at this one Lali .

Me: No I can't wear this dress it's too revealing.

Mat: But Lali it's fine though. You need to show them your perfect body .

Addi: Yes Lali ...

Me: For goodness sake I'm not wearing that dress.
What about this one.

(I picked a white one. They all laughed)

Zia: What? You're joking right.

Me: I'm not .

Kayla: Can yll leave my baby alone. Lali if you like it .
Take it . But I will ask the designer to change abit
and make a modern dress. It's really beautiful. I can
imagine you in it. It will also have pure diamonds.

Mat: Okay we're all now sorted.

(So we as siblings planned that after the matric dance we will gather at jase's friend house and have a little party there. J ust to celebrate.)

Austin's POV

I'm now feeling well. I have finally let my wife rest in peace. I haven't been in a relationship. I have been spending alot of time with Emilia . She's my fuck buddy. No strings attached. I must say she knows how to keep a man happy. She's also my PA. I have distanced myself from the hospital. I now run my businesses. When I'm at the hospital I just miss my wife. I just feel guilty that I was not with her when she was facing the most . I haven't given up on my career. After some time I will go back at work. Mom is now back at the Oebrate. I really miss her hey.

Addison's POV

Okay guys I really don't know what's happening to me. When I came here . I was determined to destroy this family. But I'm slowly falling for Tony. He has been a good boyfriend lately. I have also been dreaming about Carol. She keep telling me that If i don't want to end up dead like her i must just let go of the thought of killing Tony. I must forget it. Tony walked in.

Him: Hey ...why are you sitting here alone.

Me: ermm...I just feel like being alone.

Him: okay ...have you found a dress for the matric dance.

Me: Yeah. And you? Have you found a suit for yourself.

Him: I'm not going to it.

Me: what? Why.

Him: why should I go .

Me: Don't you want to say your last goodbye at your classmates. Because you will soon cross paths.

Him: I don't give a damn about them. You guys will be bust with the matric dance. I will be busy drowning myself into alcohol.

Me: you guys like alcohol hey ...even your sisters.

Him : yeah hey ...

Mrs Kane's POV

So I found information about Kayla. It's not very useful. But the information about his ex husband is very useful. But I couldn't get his number. I found out that he was actually born here . And he also have a brother here but they don't get along. I have trying to find his brother but I can't. They also told me that he changed his surname after his father gave all the inheritance to his younger brother. They said he is a very dangerous man. So I shouldn't mess with him . That gave me a fright a little but I still need to find him . He is the last option i have to get rid of this women. Tony walked in. He is the only child that care about me. He always checks up on

me.

Tony: Hey mom

Me: Hello my boy.

Tony: How are you doing

Me: I'm fine you.

Tony: please don't lie to me. I know you very well. Is there anything bothering you.

Me: Your father...he has been distant towards me since that women came here.

Tony: mom I think you should start liking her. Or atleast pretend .That way dad will be happy and things between you and hin will be back to normal. I really hate seeing you like this. You have even lost weight.

Me:I know hey...stress has been killing me. Thanks for you for being here for me.

Tony: You're my mother. It's my duty to make sure you're fine.

Me: Have you decided on what you will do ?

Tony: Yeah ...I'm thinking of doing medicine. But you know your husband. He won't allow me to.

Me: If you really want to do it . I can convince him for you .

Tony: really?

Me: Yeah...he's my husband after all. I know where to touch him so that he can agree to whatever I say .

Tony: I better leave you. Before you tell be about you guy's intimacy .

(He laughed and got out. He has really grown up. I wish his dad was still alive to see him . Taking care of me . He has always been by my side . He supports me in everything. He didn't have a problem with me moving on . And also getting married to my husband. I know I have never been a good mother to my children. They were mostly raised by their aunts. Like J ase. My first born. He was raised by his aunt. Tony was raised by his uncle . He has a very strong bond with him . Well Zia was lucky . Atleast I got married to his father. So I was there

when she was growing. My previous life is something I'm not proud of. As I was from a poor family and also uneducated. I had to date different men to provide for my family. The only thing I'm proud of is no matter how not close I was with my babies but I still loved them . And i didn't abort them . Tony's father was married. But he loved me . He made sure that i got everything i wanted. He even took me back to school . He is the only man I would gladly say I loved . Mike . Mike was just an asshole. He loved girls so much. When I was pregnant J ase he supported me . But when I was again pregnant Ana. He ran away from us. He even said he doubts that J ase and Ana are his . But I loved him hey. Well I'm sure y'll are asking yourselves why I'm not talking about Zayn. Well Zayn is not biologically mine. But I do love him. I love him like my own son . The only person I have a problem with is Lali. So my husband never really told me more about Zayn's mother . All I know is she died . So I took a very good care of him. He considers me his mother. I think what Tony said will work on my favour. I need to pretend to be close to Kayla. So that when she

thinks I'm now her friend. I will get rid of her.

Lali's POV

The matric dance was going to start at 8pm. So Mat and I were getting our make up down. Guess who hired the makeup artist?.Mrs Kane. I had to ask Zia to also do it because I don't trust her. And I also know she will never hurt her baby. So since we were from different schools. We were going our separate ways. I was driving. Yes I took dad's Charcoal Ferrari. We got and and I drove to the location our school is holding our matric dance at. We got there. Everything looked very beautiful. Everyone was looking stunning but not more than Mat and I. The program was read. It was really fun . We danced and hugged. I'm really going to miss my class mates. They were very supportive and loving. It was very fun being around them . I just can't wait to also experience the Varsity life . Anyways it was now 12pm . We were driving back. I was feeling very bad

that Mat won't come with me to the party. You guys know why . She can't control her wolf. I wish I can help her. I wish I can spend the whole night with her like I used to. But that I'm sure everyone is waiting for me at the party . I was dropping her off to her house. I parked outside.

Me: I'm really sorry. I'm sorry that today i won't be with you tonight.

(She held both my hands)

Mat: Lali don't worry about me. You need to also have fun in your life.

Me: But it feels so bad.

Mat: As I said I will be fine.

(She had tears in her eyes. They started falling. I hugged her)

Me: I'm sorry ...

Mat: I just wish I can also be like everyone else. Also live my life to the fullest.

Me: Is there a way I can help you.

Mat: There's no way ...i just need to go to the Oegrate. There's no other way. Dad tried really hard but he can't.

Me: Tomorrow you're going there.

Mat: Lali...you don't understand. I can't. We can't.

Me: The other day you said they want you and your father to bring a beast in order to prove your honesty.

Mat: Yes... I still don't get you .

Me: You will bring me to them . I ...

Mat: Not happening. I will never in my whole life put your life in danger. Lali they will imprison you and kill you .

Me: I don't care as long as you guys will be allowed to live there . Or come when ever you guys want .

Mat: No Lali ...I said no .

Me: I have a plan ...

(She raised her eyebrow. I told her my plan .)

Mat: But Lali what if you don't make it.

Me: Don't worry Mat ...I'm strong . I have been through so much.

Mat : Lali I'm very grateful to have a friend like you . You are so kindhearted. I love you .

Me: Okay go now and tell your father about my plan . So tomorrow in the evening we can go . He must tell the Alpha that he's bringing a beast as a sacrifice and a prove .

Mat : Okay ...thank you once again.

Me: Okay let me get going.

(I drove to where the party was held. I believe in my self . I just hope everything will go according to my plan. The place was already full . I sat next to the girls.)

Addi: We have been waiting for you ? Where is Mat .

Me: Erm...mhh. she wasn't feeling well . So she went to her house.

Zia: Shame . . . she will miss out . Anyways let's drink .

Me: You shouldn't drink to much you still have next year to complete.

(We laughed. She made puppy eyes)

Me: I'm just joking my sister. Okay?. Don't cry.

(We all laughed. She hugged me . The party was very lit. While I was still drinking and dancing. Odin made his way to me.)

Odin : Hey ...

Me: Hi ...

Odin: How are you .

Me: I'm fine and you

Odin: I'm fine... How's the party.

Me: It very lit hey...I just can't believe that finally I'm done with school.

Odin : Mhhh ...

(I was busy telling him about school. He placed his finger on my mouth for me to keep quiet)

Odin: Enough now...you have been talking non stop.

(I just laughed. He cupped my face and placed his lips on my. I pushed him a bit.)

Me: What are you doin...

(He shut me up with a kiss. Okay ... I kissed him back. It was a slow and deep kiss. Tony made his way to us.)

Tony: LALI!

(He was shouting. He pulled me by my hand. It was very painful.)

Me: Tony you're hurting me . Let go of my hand .

(I was like I was speaking to myself. He took me to a room upstairs. He locked it. Okay... This one is over protective.)

Tony: Lali why are you doing this to me.

(Okay I was confused.)

Me: Tony what do you mean

Tony: Why do you always hurt my feelings.

(Okay I was beyond being confused. What is it he's talking about . Why is he speaking like I'm his girlfriend and I just cheated on him)

Me: Tony you're starting to scare me now. What are you talking about. Why are you speaking like this.

(He came straight to me. His eyes were blood shot red . I took few steps back. Funny enough I reached the wall.)

Tony: Lali ...can't you see it in my eyes that I love you .

(WTF...)

Me: L...love...m..me...what?

Tony: yes...I love you from the bottom of my heart. I loved you since the first day i layed my eyes on you. My feelings for you became stronger when you moved in with us.

(Okay now i understand why he was awkward that day I was introducing myself to them)

Tony: I have been wanting to tell you. When you told

me that you were dating Aben . I was so heartbroken. When my mother was also treating you bad . I would feel sorry for you. Now you were busy kissing with Odin. That triggered my anger.

Me: But why Tony...why are you doing this to yourself. You know very well that I take you as a brother. Actually you're my brother.

Tony: No ...no I'm not... We are not born by the same parents.

Me: Still Tony ... you are a brother to me.

(He cupped my face . I just closed my eyes. No matter what happens. I will never reveal myself to him . I will never show him what I am . He kissed me . I pushed him and slapped him. He came back in a very high speed. He kissed me. It was a rough kiss. I was saved by a knock on the door.)

"Lali are you in there"

It was Zia's voice.

Me: Yes wait for me ...I'm coming right now.

(I unlocked the door and opened it slightly so that she won't see Tony.)

Zia: What were you doing in there.

Me: ...Er...erhm...I was using the bathroom.

Zia: Okay .

(yes we drank so much. But I was no longer feeling the party . I kept thinking about the scene that took place upstairs. It was now in the morning. We made our way home. I just bathed and went straight to bed. I need to be fresh for the evening. I called Mat and told her that the plan is still on)

Mat's POV

Lali called me . She told me that the plan is still on. I have been trying to convince dad but he's too stubborn. I had to tell him the truth about Lali. But I

didn't tell him that she's the Adila. But he was still being stubborn.

Me: Dad please. Lali can do it .

Dad: My child. I know Lali is very worried about you .
But we can't sell her to them . They are very evil.
They will no hesitate to brutally kill her.

Me: Dad I already told you the plan .Believe in us.
We can do it.

(He kept quiet)

Dad: Okay...but if her plan doesn't work . We will
have to run back here.

Me: Give them a call than .

(Dad spoke to the Alpha. He was on the
loudspeaker. His voice was very deep, firm and
scary . Dad had to please him . He finally agreed. I
just hope everything will go well. We were now
packing our clothes.)

Lali's POV

It was now on the evening. I told dad that I'm visiting Mat. They fetched me.

Me: I have some where to go to first. Can you please take me there.

(I directed Mat's father. I was going to Mrs Khumalo's house. I need her to pray for me about what I'm about to do. I know it's very dangerous. I just want God to help me . We got there . I got inside. Mat and her dad remained in the car . Nomhle was busy on her phone. She has gained weight. Mrs Khumalo was busy reading her bible . I smiled this women will never change.)

Me: Hello mom .

Her: Lali...hey dear.(She got up and hugged me)

Me: Hi Nomhle.

Nomhle: Hi(she than rolled her eyes)

Mrs K: I don't see your bag . Aren't you sleeping over.

Me: No I'm actually passing. I just you mom to pray for me . I'm about to do something dangerous.

Which can cost me my whole life.

Mrs K: Lali what's going on .

Me: I really don't have much time to explain. I just want you to pray for me . I know you're the person who can communicate more with God. I need him guard me .

(We closed our eyes. We held hands and prayed. We finished)

Me: Thank you very much. I should get going .

Mrs K: Please be safe.

Me: I will .

Mrs K: I will also pray alone for you .

Me: thank you ... bye ...

(I went back to the car .)

Me: We can go now.(I smiled.)

Mat: Lali there's still a chance. We can still go back.

Me: Don't worry...I got this . (Mrs Khumalo's prayer gave me more strength.)

Austin's POV

So I just arrived at the Oegrate. Dad said there's a person who brought a beast for sacrifice . So as the next Alpha I must be the one to kill it . After three days of torture.

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:13] Lynne: Insert 29

Nomhle's POV

Mom was busy praying. I feel like she loves Lali

more than me . I decided to go to Mike's house. I got there . He was busy talking to her sister.

Me: Hello everyone.

Kiara: Oh hey Nomhle. (She looked at her brother than chuckled) Ehrmm. Let me leave the two of you .

Me: Hey love

Mike: Hi

Me: I have been feeling very sick lately. I was even vomiting.

Mike: What? And you're telling me now .

(He stood up . He was halfway the door)

Me: Mike...where are you going to?

Mike: I will be back.

(Mike has really changed. This relationship of ours is slowly coming to an end. I love him . I love him with my whole heart. I went to sit on the bed. After sometime he came back . He threw the pregnancy test at me . Okay so he thinks I'm pregnant. Nxx . I

took them and went to the bathroom. I peed than waited. After some time they had 2 red lines . Oh shit I'm indeed pregnant. I sat on the floor and sobbed. What am I going to say to my mother. I went out to Mike crying. I showed him)

Mike: Tomorrow morning we're getting rid of that thing growing into your stomach.

Me : What? That's not going to happen. I won't kill my first child. I know it will be difficult to let my mother know but I'm keeping this baby .

Mike: I wasn't asking you . I was making a statement. Tomorrow morning we're getting rid of it.

Me: Not happening.

Mike: We will see.

Lali's POV

It was very far . We finally arrived. There was two big long and strong gates . It had a picture of a wolf. I was starting to get scared now . My heart was

beating. So the plan was to fool the Alpha. So Mat said they will imprison me . So when they are taking me to that cage I will try to flee . So I had to pretend to be passed out. The gates opened. I kept praying. Mat's dad drove in . He parked the car . I have never seen so many people like this . They were busy moving around . Males and females. So Mat's carried me to that palace. My eyes were closed I have to make it look real .

Mat's dad: The great Alpha , His wife and sons . I come here in peace. I want to fix the betrayal my father did to you all. I brought this with me .

(My eyes were still closed .)

Alpha: I need her blood. So that we can be sure that it a real beast.

(His voice was very firm and scary. Just then I felt something cut my hand . It was very painful but I can't just give in now .)

Alpha: Indeed it a beast. Take her to the cage .

(i assume he was saying to one of the guards. One person carried me . When we were out . I opened my eyes a little. When we were now away from people. I jumped off him and held his throat. I pressed it until he was unable to breathe. I carefully looked around. I ran to the opposite direction. I don't know this place but I know where the gate is . So I can't go that way since they're guards there . I need to find another way out . Just when I was running. I heard noise. I looked back . They were more than fifty wolves making their way to me . I ran but they were too fast . One ran too fast and threw me across the ground. It was so painful. As much as I want to fight them I can't. It will declare more war . They may want to harm the other beasts who live at the Drugiomin. They all made their way to me . One put it leg on my neck .)

Alpha: Stop.

(they all transformed back . Oh shit I'm in deep trouble. The Alpha made his way to me .)

Alpha: I see you're trying to be brave . Son do you want to end her life now or after three days

(His son made his way to me . His face looks familiar . He eyes widened when he saw me . He's the guy who took me to the hospital.)

Him: Dad...I will kill her on the third day.

Alpha: Okay ...guards take her ...

Him: No I will take her.

Alpha: Are you sure?

Him: Yes .

(He grabbed me by my arm . I looked at him . We were going . I looked at where he was grabbing me . I felt goosebumps on my stomach. I looked at him . He's so handsome and has one deep dimple . His cologne was hitting my nostrils. He opened the caged and showed me to get in)

Me: Please...please help me.

Him: What are you doing here...who are you.

Me: Well ...I'm trying to help my friend. Mat ...you

guys said they must bring a beast so that they can be accepted to live here again.

Him: Well that's my father's rule.

(He threw some clothes at me . It was the same as of the ones that the ladies were wearing.)

Him: I want you to put this on . You will come with me . Don't make any silly move . They must not suspect that's it's you. My house is that side. (He handed me a tray that has a glass of water. I made my way to his house. No one was questioning me. I got in . I wonder why he's helping me out . But anyway I'm grateful. I went to the rooms upstairs. I got in one of them and locked the door . Oh shit I left my phone at the car . My neck was hurting very bad . I took a quick nap . I was woken up by a knock on the door.)

Me: Who is that?

Him: Ohh now I have to explain myself in my own house.

(i opened)

Him : We're going back to the city.

Me: Is my friend safe .

Him:Don't worry about them . They're fine .

Me: Okay thanks.

Him : It's nothing.

(I was following him to his car . I had to lay down so that the guards won't see me . The windows were dimmed. I had the gates opening. He drove off. I raised my head. We were now on the main road . I was feeling very sleepy so I slept. He woke me up .)

Him: I will take you home tomorrow.

(it's not like I have a choice. I followed him inside. Wow his house is breathtaking but not more than him. He's so cute .)

Him: You will use one of the rooms upstairs.

Me: Thanks...thank you for everything.

(I made my way upstairs . I got in and locked the door. He knocked again. I opened)

Him : Here take this. I'm sure you won't be able to

sleep with that J ean and bra on. And here are the pills for pains. Your neck looks bad .

Me: Thanks.

(it was his sweatpant and his vest. He is very intimidating . I took a quick bath and put on the clothes. I went straight to bed)

Mat's POV

I was so broken . I wish I can help Lali out of here . But I can't. There's no turning back. The Alpha was busy talking to dad .

Alpha: You will be using your dad's house.(He was saying to dad . Two guards walked in .)

First G: Sir the that Lady is not in the cage .

Alpha: What? What do you mean by that . Take me there.

(I did a small prayer for Lali's safety. We all went to the cage . It was opened. The Alpha was very furious.)

Alpha: Where did she go ? Call the other guards to help you look for her. I'm sure she's not that far.

(He kept quiet for some time)

Alpha: Wait ...where's Austin... Where's my son...I just hope she didn't harm my son. Guards where's Austin.

G: I saw him driving out with his car .

Alpha: Okay ...that's strange. Why would he just leave without telling me . Was he alone in the car .

G: Yes .

Alpha: Okay ...let me go and call him .

(I kept looking at dad. I whispered on his ear.)

Me: Dad...dad don't you think we must go and find Lali before they find her .

Him: No we can't. If we do that he will suspect us .

Me: I'm very worried about her .

Him: Don't worry dear she will be fine. That girl is very strong. After all she's an Adila.

The Alpha's POV

I'm very confused why Austin just left . Whereas all of his brothers fled to come here. I went to my bedroom and called him .

Him: Dad.

Me: Where are you ?

Him: Erhmm...dad ...I had to go . I have a very important meeting. But I will come back tomorrow.

Me: Okay... That girl escaped . She's not in the cage

Him: What? How's that possible. I looked her inside. And even checked twice.

Me: There's something about that girl. When I was checking her blood. I felt a very strong power . That girl is very powerful.

Him: eerh...dad...I have to go now .

(There's something about that girl that is uncertain . So she decided to escape. That a total disrespect. I'm an Alpha and no one double cross me . She has declared a war. Tomorrow when Austin is back. I will tell everyone to start preparing for a war with the beasts. In two month's time we will be attacking at the Drugiomin. We need to get rid of the beast for once and for all. I never told Austin that his chosen one is a beast. But he knows that he has a chosen one. I did that because if I told him he would have stopped us from killing all the beasts. I want to make sure even if I die the hatred for the beasts is still carried on .)

Austin's POV

I don't know why I saved her. I just felt the need to save her . She's the same lady I took to the hospital. She's very beautiful. Her skin is so smooth. I felt

that When I was grabbing her arm . My heart was beating very fast . I kept stealing glances of her. She's very beautiful. Her pink lips were so juicy. Her eyes. I would kill to look at them my whole life . Okay what's happening to me . Even when I took my clothes to her . I felt like I have known her for years. I feel the connection with her . But I can't show her that . I'm just glad didn't suspect me of saving her . So tomorrow I will have to go back to the Oegrate. I slept . I woke up and went downstairs. There she was making breakfast. It smelled so good. She looks good in my clothes even though they doesn't fit her . Her waist is very thin .

Me: Goodmorning.

Her: Hey .

Me: up already?

Her: Yeah here .

(She made burgers and fried chips. It looks so good. I started eating.)

Me: So tell me who are you exactly...where are you from...how do you know Mat and his dad.

(She smiled. Her smile is so warm and cute . She kept talking. I was just staring at her. I didn't even hear what she was saying . I kept looking at her. She kept speaking and taking a bite of her burger. Even the way she chews is cute . She waved on my face.)

Her: Hello ...are you even listening to me .

Me: Yeah ...well ...ermm...

Her: So what I said .

Me: Sorry my mind is very occupied. What were you saying .

Her: Oaky ...I'm Lalimi but you can call me Lali...

(She introduced herself.)

Her: And you're?

Me: Oh...me ...I'm Austin. My father is the one you saw yesterday basically. I'm the last born . I'm a doctor. Own a hospital and businesses.

Her: Mhh I see.

Me: Can you stay over until I come back.

(I don't know why I said that . But I felt like saying it. I don't know what's happening to me . It feels like I'm not incontrol of my own self.)

Me: Erhmm...never mind what I said ...I was just...

Her: Don't worry. If you want me to stay I will. After all you saved my life . When you get to the Oegrate please check if Mat and her dad are okay for me . And also ask her to give you my phone . I left it in the car .

Me: Okay ...let me get ready to go .

Her: When are you coming back .

Me: I'm not sure.

(I took a shower . Put on my clothes. I went downstairs and said my good bye to her . I drove off to the Oegrate. She's a nice lady . I so good being around her .)

Lali's POV

I was all alone in this big mansion. I don't know why I agreed to stay . Like I mean I don't even know him . But he looks like a nice guy . He's handsome. When I was having breakfast with him I kept looking at him . Especially when he was telling me about his self. I finished cleaning and went to his room. It's very beautiful. There was a big picture on the wall. It was him and a lady. A very beautiful lady . I looked around . I went to his wardrobe. I took out his t shirt and another sweatpant and a hoodie. It was a bit cold today . I went to the room I'm using. I soaked myself in the bath. After that I put his clothes on I took. I went back to doing a tour of this house. I even went outside. He has a big garden. It has trees and flowers. There's even a batch. I went back inside. His office was locked so I couldn't get in. I went back to his room . I opened the drawers . I found an album. It had wedding pictures of him and that lady who is on the picture on the wall. So he's married. I wonder where she is . They looked very

happy. I put everything back and went to the kitchen and started cooking.

Mike's POV

Nomhle is very stubborn. I told her today we're going to a doctor to do an abortion. I had to drag her into the car. We got to the doctor's surgery. She was being stubborn she didn't want to .

Doc: I'm sorry sir but we can't do it without her approval.

Me: Nomhle what the fuck is wrong with you ?

Nomhle: No ...I'm not aborting my baby.

She doesn't know me . We went back to the car. I drove to Macdonald. She was very confused I ordered for the both of us.

Me: Nomhle...I'm very sorry love . I'm sorry . When you told me that you're pregnant I just panicked. After all you're carrying my first baby. Please forgive me.

(She kept quiet. I can't ruin my plan now because of this . I will have to pretend to care for her. I held her hands.)

Me: I'm sorry...please forgive me .

(she had tears)

Nomhle: okay I forgive you ...please don't ever hurt me like that .

Me: I promise it will never happen again.

(we drove back to my house)

Me: I have to go somewhere. I will come back later.

Her: Okay.

(I drove back to the doctor.)

Me: I need pills for abortion.

Doc: What? You know I can't give you.

Me: Do I pay you to question me ?

Doc: I'm sorry but I can't.

Me: If you don't want to lose your medicine certificate. You will give me those pills

(He gave me . I went and bought take always from Wimpy. I bought Nomhle a strawberry milkshake. I put two pills inside. I arrived . She was busy watching a magazine that had clothes of babies.)

Me: Hey love ...I'm back.

Nomhle: Oh hey...you're back?

Me: Yeah. I got you something.

Nomhle: oh thanks ...I'm very hungry.

(She started eating. I ate too. She drank her milkshake.)

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:14] Lynne: Insert 30

Three days later.

Lali's POV

It has been three days since Austin hasn't come back. To be honest I have been very bored . I miss being with my family. It was early in the morning. I did a bit of cleaning. I bathed than made a smoothie for myself. I decided to cook . Just when I was busy cooking I felt warm hands hug me from behind. My heart beat increased. It's not like I was scared. I was feeling some typer way. It was a very strange feeling. I turned to face him. Our eyes met . I stared into his heart . They were very cute and so warming. His body was very close to mine. I could feel his heart bit. I cleared my throat.

Me: Erhm....h..hey ...how are you .

Him: I'm good ...It smell nice. What are you cooking.

Me: I'm making a beef curry.

Him:Haven't had it in a long time . Here is your

phone .

Me: Thanks.

(I tried to switch it on but the battery was dead. I asked him to charge it for me . He came back. I started dishing as the food was ready.)

Me: So how's Mat doing.

Him: She's fine.

(We started eating. We finished I washed the dishes.)

Me: Your wife is very cute hey... Where is she anyway?

(His facial expression changed. His face became pale. It was like he was going to rip my throat right at this moment. I just didn't know what to say .)

Me: Er..erm.

Him: I think you should go now.

Me: Sure.

(I looked down and made my way upstairs. I put on my Jean and t shirt I was wearing that day since I

washed it . I took my phone and switched it on.
There were so many missed calls from Kayla mom,
Mat , Dad and my siblings . I will call Kayla when I
get home . I went downstairs)

Me: I'm ready to go.

(We made our way to his car . He drove off. I gave
him the directions . The drive was very quiet. I kept
stealing glances of him)

Me: I'm sorry if my question offended you.

(He just kept quiet. Nxx. It better that way . I
wonder what's going between him and his wife .
Maybe she cheated on him or something.)

Him: Miss Kane never in your wildest dream ask me
about my wife. Don't remind me of the pain I'm
trying to heal from . Why were you even in my room .
Touching things that doesn't concern you.

(i just kept quiet. Until he parked at the gate .)

Me: Thank you and I'm sorry . I'm really sorry .

(I closed the door and made my way in . When I got
home they were all watching TV. But I couldn't see

dad. Maybe he's at work .)

Me: Hello family.

Zia: Wow Lali...(She came and hugged me)

Zia: I missed you so much. In fact we missed you so much.

Me: I missed you guys so much too.

Zia: Wait what happened to your neck .

(Everyone came to me . Oh snap...what am I going to say because they don't know where I went .

Neither do they know what I really am.)

Me: Ermm...you see...(i couldn't think of anything.)

Kayla: Zayn hurry and call the doctor.

(i held his hand)

Me: Don't I'm fine . I'm really fine. What happened is ...Mat and i went to the mall. So when we were waiting for her dad outside. Few thugs made their way to us . So they tried robbing us. I tried to fight them . But one strangled me . J ust dad Mat's dad

arrived and fought them off.

(I really hate lying to them but what can I say . Even if I tell them they won't understand.)

Kayla: I'm very sorry dear ... I'm sorry I wasn't there to protect you.

Me: please don't put the blame on yourself. I'm perfectly fine .

Kayla: Go upstairs and get some rest . I will bring you pain blocks.

Me: Thanks...how's the baby doing.

Kayla: Fine...now go go

(I went upstairs. Tony followed me . Not again. I got into my bedroom. He did too)

Him: I know you were lying downstairs . Lali I know you very well . What happened?

Me: Tony ...that's where the problem is

You think you know me too well. But you don't. You really don't. About that night. I just hope you didn't mean every single word you uttered. I just hope you

were just under the influence of alcohol.

(He sighed and set on my bed)

Tony: Lali ...I love you. I love you with my whole heart. I just wish you can give me an opportunity to prove my love for you. Please Lali just give me a chance to love you and treat you like a queen of which you are .

Me: Please leave my room. I'm very tired .

(He made his way to me)

Me: Tony leave.

(He went out . I locked the door. He has lost it . I would never date my brother. I know he's not my biological one but still. Anyway I was busy looking through my contacts. I saw a number saved Austin. He must have saved it . I sent him a message.

"I'm very sorry once again. I didn't mean to bring back the pain you're trying to heal from. But I didn't know. "

(Sent. I took and quick bath after I was done . I called Mat .)

Her: Hey my hero.

Me: Hey sister...how are you

Her: I'm fine just exhausted. This training is really tiring.

Me: I'm glad finally you're getting help.

Her: And it all because of you. Lali I'm really the most lucky person to ever exist in the world. To have a friend like you . Who sacrifices her life to help her bestfriend. Friends like you are very hard to find nowadays. So I'm keeping you forever. I don't even know how to thank you. Lali may God bless you and always keep your heart so sweet and pure forever. I love you .

Me : Ncoo...I love you more.

Her: So tell me how did you get Austin to help you. Because this people are very evil and coldhearted. How

Me: Coldhearted? I don't think Austin is like that

Her: You wish ... So there's something important I need to tell you Lali.

Me: Yes sure .

Her: Lali do you remember when I told you about the beasts living in Drugiomin .

Me: Yes.

Her: Here they are busy plotting to attack them . They want to get rid of beasts for once and for all. Lali you need to help them . In two month's time they will going there. Lali you need to hurry and prepare them for war . You need to help them . They too have given up in life . You need to encourage and remind of who they are. Lali without you they are doomed.

Me: But how am I going to do that Mat.

Her: Lali you need to do some research and find where the Drugiomin is located. Don't worry after one week I'm coming back. I will help you go there. Don't worry Lali we're in this together.

Me: But Mat I don't really want a war to occur.
People may die there.

Her: I know Lali. But there's no time . They will have to fight against the werewolves. If they don't all the creatures will see beasts as weak creatures and do whatever they like to them .

Me: Erhmm...I will do a research than wait for you so we can go .

Her: Okay sweetheart. Please be safe . Take care

Me: Thanks for letting me know.

(It is always problem after another. When will I ever get peace in my life . Why can't I also live my life normal .

" Because you're are not normal Lali"

(It was the same women who was at the mirror that day)

Me: I'm just tired of everything. I'm tired . Can't all the powers I have be passed to someone else.

"Don't ever talk like that dear. You haven't experienced hardship as yet. Lali there's still more to come . And you cannot lose hope now . Lali you're a target to everyone. You were chosen to be the Adila . Because you're strong enough to face difficulties and hardships. "

(I just kept quiet)

"Lali dear Mat was brought into your life for a reason. She also have very strong powers. You and her will rule this world to good . She's is kindhearted as you're. You too were bound to meet. I'm very grateful you Mat her this early. And Lali dear you can do it . Please protect your people at the Drugiomin. They need you "

Me: is it necessary for them to fight against the werewolves ?

" I know you only want peace. But this time around they will have to fight.The beasts need to regain their dignity. They need to show all the other creatures that they are strong . Yes there will be peace between beasts and werewolves but not now .

Not now dear . "

(She smiled)

" Help him . Help him heal and move on. Tell him you're his queen and you will always be there for him. "

Me: Who ? (She smiled even more. She's very beautiful)What are you talking?

"I have to go now my dau...(She cleared her throat)dear ."

(She disappeared. What is she talking about. Sometimes these people speak in riddles . I heard a knock. I went to open.)

Kayla: I brought food for you.

Me: You shouldn't have but thanks mom. I will eat with everyone downstairs. Thanks very much .

(We went downstairs. We were all eating. Dad has arrived.)

Me: Hey dad.

Him: Hey my dear ...I'm glad you're back we missed you so much.

(We all started eating. Tony kept looking at me . It was a bit uncomfortable.)

Me: Hey bro are you okay.(I said to him . He became more angry)

Tony: Yes why are you asking

Me: you don't look okay though.

(He just looked at me . We all finished eating than went to our separate rooms. I just go in bed than slept .)

Austin's POV

I thought I have grieved enough. I thought I have adjusted well without her . But it clear I was just fooling myself. I was drinking a whiskey and looking at my late wife's pictures. I was crying. I received a message from Lali . I just read it . I logged in into my Instagram. I started looking at

Lali's pictures. She's really beautiful. I was feeling a bit better now. Why I suddenly feel better after looking at Lali's pictures. There was also a pic where she was smiling. I found myself smiling too. I held my heart as it was beating very fast. There's something about her. Something that heals my soul. Something that makes me feel better. I stopped drinking and went to bed.

IT WAS NOW IN THE MORNING

Mike's POV

I woke up. Nomhle was not in bed. I heard water running. I went to the bathroom. She was busy bathing.

Me: Goodmorning.

Her: Hey babe...

Me: How's the baby .

Her: we are fine.

Me: Babe don't you think you need to tell someone about the pregnancy.

Her: No ...I can't tell my mother now . I'm scared. I have disappointed her .

Me: Isn't you said your mother adores Lali. Ask her if she can tell her for you.

Her: You have a point. Lali has a way to calm my mother .

Me: J ust invite her over for breakfast.

Her : Okay.

(That's step two of my plan . The abortion pills I put at Nomhle's milks hake take time to show that the baby is dead .)

Lali's POV

I woke up to Nomhle calling me .

Me: Hello .

Her: Mhh hey Lali ...I'm sorry to disturb you .

Me: You're not .

Her: Lali can you please come over here. I need you to help me with something.

Me: Don't worry I was planning to visit you and your mother today . I will come by .

Her: No...actually I'm at Mike's house. Please come there.

Me: What? Nomhle what are you doing there ?

Her: Please Lali come.

Me: No I won't.

Her: Lali ...I'm pregnant.

(WHAT? Instead of being disappointed I was angry. I was angry at both Mike and Nomhle. How can they

be this irresponsible. And Nomhle. Her mom is going to be shuttered.)

Me: I'm coming over right now.

(I hanged up . I made my bed than took a quick shower. I put on my ripped boyfriend J ean and a sweatshirt. I put on my Air force. Everyone was still asleep. I took the car keys and drove to Mike's place . I parked the car in and went inside. Nomhle was sitting at the lounge. Mike was sitting with her.)

Mike: Hey ...

Nomhle: Thank you for coming.

Mike: Babe ...I have an early meeting to go to . Lali please make her something to eat .

(J ust before I could say anything he went out . I went to the kitchen and made Nomhle a sandwich and juice. I don't have an appetite to eat . I'm just angry. I gave her the food.)

Nomhle: Aren't you eating?

(I just raised my hands. To stop her from talking

further. She finished her food . I took the plate to the kitchen. I came back to her. I slapped her so hard.)

Nomhle: WTF.

Me: Nomhle are you mad ? ...How can you fall pregnant...how ? You know very well that your mother is very fragile yet you do this . Why Nomhle. Your mother gave you everything you ever wanted . The least you could have done and make her proud. Nomhle there so many different contraceptives. Why didn't you prevent? Why? .

Nomhle: Lali I didn't call you here to judge me or lecture me . I want you to tell mom that I'm pregnant.

(Suddenly I have a sharp pain on my stomach. I blinked. I looked at Nomhle there was blood on her legs .)

Nomhle: Please Lali you know how to speak to my mother and make her understand.

(I blinked again. Everything went back to normal. I touched her stomach.)

Nomhle: Lali is everything okay...what are you doing.

(it's too late. The baby is already dead. I just stood up)

Me: I have to go .

Nomhle: What bu...

(I went back to the car and drove back home . They were having breakfast)

Zayn: Hey Lali ...mom made pancakes...come and eat.

(I had tears in my eyes .)

Kayla: Lali are you okay ? Where are you coming from?

Me: I went to see Nomhle.

Kayla: Okay...is everything alright.

Me: Please excuse me .

(i ran upstairs . I got inside my bedroom and cried. Yes i was against Nomhle being pregnant. But I was going to support. Everything I said I said out of anger. But what happened to her baby. I closed my eyes. I saw Mike going to a doctor and threatening

the doctor. After that the doctor gave him some pills of which he put in Nomhle's milks hake. I was breathing very quickly now . I held my chest. Why would Mike kill his own baby. Something is not right . I sobbed. I couldn't help my bestfriend. Tony came inside and locked.)

Me: Tony ...I'm not in mood please.

(He said nothing. He just set next to me and cuddled. I cried even more. I know Tony has been acting very bad towards me . But he's always there for me . He always find a way to comfort me. He is the only person I usually tell when something is bothering me . After sometime I stopped crying.)

Tony: Now you can tell me what happened.

Me: Nomhle is pregnant.

Tony: So?

(I can't tell him what I saw . He will start asking me how and staff.)

Me: I just feel sorry for her mom. She's very fragile. She's going to be heartbroken when she hears that

her daughter is pregnant.

Tony: Mhh ...whose baby is she caring.

Me: Mike's baby.

(We remained like that for some time . He than lifted my chin up to face him . He leaned over and kissed me . I returned the kiss . Was disturbed by a call from Austin. I cleared my throat.)

Me: I have to take this .

(Tony left my room)

Me: Hello .

Austin: Mhhhey Lali ...how are you ?

Me: I'm not really fine how are you.

Austin: Now that I have heard your voice. I'm feeling way better.

(OKAY)

Austin: I was hoping you could come over . I have something to discuss with you.

Me: I'm sorry but I can't. I will see you tomorrow.

Austin: Okay there's no problem. Bye

Me: Bye.

(I took my phone and started doing a research about where to find Drugiomin. I wrote down few things . I found the map . I saved it on my phone. I went downstairs.)

Me: Girls let's go out .

Addison: Really. Let me go and change.

(in less than 15 minutes they came back. We got to the car. I was driving. We got to the mall. We started by doing shopping. We bought so many matching things . We than decided to go to a cinema . After that we went to Macdonald. We ordered. After some time our orders came and we ate. I just needed to cool of a little.)

Tony's POV

I knew that Lali loves me . I was feeling very happy . The kiss was so warm. We really connected. I kept

thinking about it . I received a call from uncle.

Him: Hey my boy how are you.

Me: I'm fine uncle. Everything is perfectly fine in my life .

Him: Mhh...its about that girl you were talking about

.

Me: Yeah...she loves me.

Him : Did she tell you that

Me: No but her actions says it all. Today we even kissed.

Him : That's good .

Me: So what did I do to receive a call from you?

Him: Son...they're rumors going around that the werewolves are going to attack the beasts.

Me: So

Him: We will also go there.

Me: But why because it's between them not us .

Him: The Adila won't let it people die. The Adila will come out of the whole it's hiding from and fight for it people. We will finally find out who is the Adila. Than we can deal with it once and for all.

Me: Wow...you are very smart uncle. So when will that happen.

Him: I'm not really sure but soon. I will find more information and I form you okay?

Me: Sure .

Him: I have to go now .

(I just can't wait to kill the Adila . My life is like this because of it.)

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:15] Lynne: Insert 31

Nomhle's POV

I couldn't sleep. I had abdominal pains. I kept tossing and turning. I looked at the time it 00:09 . I looked at Mike he was fast asleep. I woke up and went to drink water in the kitchen. My stomach felt heavy. I don't think that's normal for a pregnant woman. I went back to the bedroom. The pains got stronger. I was now crying. Mike woke up .

Him: Babe? Babe are you okay ?

(I cried even more)

Him: what's going on

(He went and switched the lights on . His eyes widened)

Him: Babe you're bleeding. What's happening.

(I looked at myself I was Indeed bleeding. I started panicking. Mike carried me to his car and we drove to the hospital. We got into the hospital. They immediately took me to ICU . I was bleeding so much. I started feeling dizzy. I passed out .)

Mike's POV

Very good . Now it's time for step three of my plan .
I dialed Lali's number and called her.

Me: Lali ...please hurry to the hospital. Nomhle is here. Please hurry.

Her: What happened?

Me: She was complaining about pains . When I looked at her she was bleeding. I decided to take to the hospital.

Her: Okay I'm coming. Please send me the name of the hospital she's at.

Me: Okay.

(I sent it . After some time she arrived. I just threw myself at her. She pushed me very hard and slapped me twice . I held my cheek . I just looked at her)

Her: Don't you dare pretend to be honest. You know very well what you did to her. You're the one who gave her the abortion pills.

(okay who told her.)

Me: What ? Why would I kill my own baby.

Her: I am supposed to ask you that . Why would you kill your own bay ...why Mike.

(I just kept quiet. She set down on the chairs . I also set down .)

Lali's POV

It was now 5am and the Doctor hasn't told us anything nor came out of the ICU. I went to get coffee for myself. I set down again. I decided to call Kayla mom.

Her: Hello .

Me: Hey mom sorry to wake you up . I just wanted

to let you know that I'm not at home . I'm at the hospital to see my friend.

Her: Why is she sick.

Me: Not really...

Her: Okay I will let your father know .

(She hanged up. I don't know if I should let Mrs Khumalo know or not. If I tell her now she will start panicking. I will call here after I have seen Nomhle. The doctor came out and made his way to us)

Him: Are you guys Miss Nomhle's family?

(I looked at Mike.)

Me: I'm her sister.

Doc: And you sir ?

Mike: I'm her boyfriend.

(Mxm)

Doc: Does any one of you know why she took abortion pills ?

Mike: What? Abortion pills?

(I just looked at him . He's pretending as if he doesn't know. Whereas he's the one who gave her them .)

Doc: she lost the baby . The pills she took are very powerful and dangerous. There was no chance of saving the baby .

Me: How is she doctor? Can we see her ?

Doc: She's still unconscious. She's now out of danger. We will take her to her ward so you can see her.

(The Doctor went away. After some time he called us to see her. I went inside. She was sleeping so peacefully. I spent a few minutes with her . I need to go and bath I will come see her again. I went home . They were just watching TV)

Kayla: How's your friend.

Me: She miscarried.

Zia: Ohh shame poor Nomhle. How's she.

Me: She's still unconscious. I'm going back to the

hospital after I'm done bathing. When she wakes up I want to be there for her.

Kayla: You're a good friend Lali dear.

(I smiled and went upstairs. Mrs Kane has been very nice lately. She has been very nice to all of us . I just hope she's not plotting any distractions and evil things. I went upstairs and bathed . I than drove back to the hospital. When I got there she was awake. I brought her food from Nando's.)

Me: Hey ...

Nomhle: What are you doing here?

Me: What? I came to see you.

Nomhle : Why Lali ? Why did you kill my baby?

Me: What? ...me? K...kill your baby?

Nomhle: YES YOU KILLED MY BABY. THE DOCTOR SAID THE ABORTION PILLS THAT I DRANK WERE PUT ON MY FOOD. AND YESTERDAY YOU MADE FOOD FOR ME . YOU HATED THE FACT THAT I WAS PREGNANT.

(I was so heartbroken that Nomhle thinks I could kill her baby. I would never do anything to hurt her . My eyes had tears.)

Me: Nomhle...you know me very well. I would never do anything to hurt you. I care for you so much .

(I was crying)

Nomhle:DON'T YOU DARE PRETEND TO CARE FOR ME WITH YOUR CROCODILE TEARS. LALI I DON'T EVER WANT TO SEE YOU . NEVER AGAIN. IF YOU SEE ME COMING YOUR WAY . CHANGE DIRECTION. BECAUSE IF I SOME HOW FIND YOU ...I WILL KILL YOU .

(Mike got in . I took my bed and was about to leave .)

Nomhle: And Lali don't leave your poisoned food here.

(I took it and went to the car . I drove back home . I just went to my bedroom and locked the door. I cried myself to sleep. After some time I was woken up by Austin's call .)

Me: Hello.

Him: Hey ...when should I fetch you.

Me: I'm sorry I'm no longer coming.

Him: Lali are you okay?

Me: I have to go now bye.

(I hanged up. I'm not in the mood to talk to anyone.)

Mike's POV

Nomhle was discharged today. She said she don't want to be in the hospital now. We got home . She looked very angry .

Me: How dare Lali kill my baby...I swear when I see her ...I'm going to kill her with my own hands.

Nomhle: Leave that to me . I will be the one to kill

her. She killed my first baby. I'm not going to let her live happy. She will pay with her life for what she did.

Me: But..

Nomhle: No ...I will do it . You can only help me by telling me how I can get rid of her .

Me: babe are you sure?

Nomhle: I have never been this sure in my life . I'm going home today. I will wait for your call to tell me how and when it must happen.

(That's my girl. She went upstairs and took her bag)

Nomhle: Please drop me off at home.

Me: okay .

(I drove her to her house. I kissed her she went in . This is called for celebration. I called my sister. We need to celebrate. I drive to home. My sister was busy on her laptop.)

Me: Hey young one.

Her: Oh hey ...how are you.

Me: I'm fine.

Her: So how are things going ?

Me: She said she's the one who will kill Lali.

Her: Wow that went fast. I thought it was going to take her forever.

Me: That's why I came here. So we can celebrate. Our plan is working.

(She went and came back with two glasses a bottle of whiskey and wine . I poured myself a glass.)

Her: let's go and sit at the patio.

Him: Cool.

(We went there.)

Me: So how is mom doing.

Her: There is no improvement . She's still the same .

Me: I can't wait to see Nomhle pulling a trigger at Lali .

Her: I can't wait too. The best part is Lali won't be

able to do anything. She would never harm nor kill her friend.

Me: Yeah that's why I chose Nomhle.

Nomhle's POV

I got home and soaked myself in the bath . I'm going to tell my mom everything. She needs to know that her precious Lali killed my baby . I got out of the bath and put on my tracksuits. I went downstairs. She was busy with a call . I waited for her until she was done .

Her: Nomhle dear ...what's happening? What's happening in your life . Where have you been.

Me: That's not important right now . Mom Lali has hurt me . She has broken me .

Her: What? Lali would never do that . I know her very well.

Me: Mom you don't know her .

(I was now crying)

Her: Nomhle dear what happened?

(She set next to me and made me lay on her thighs.
She was brushing my hair.)

Me: Mom...she killed my baby ? .she killed it .

(She stood up)

Her: Ini? (what?

Me: Yes mom I was going to tell you. My I was pregnant Mike's child . He loves me mom. He is going to marry me.

(She slapped me so hard)

Her: are you even hearing yourself. Nomhle you're too young to think about getting married. I have done so many things for you. I made sure you don't suffer or end up depending on a man .

Me: Mom Mike loves me .

(She slapped me again)

Her: STOP TELLING ME ABOUT YOUR SHIT BOYFRIEND. DO YOU HEAR ME? YOU HAVE FORGOTTEN ME I SEE.

(she went upstairs and came back with a belt . She started whipping me)

Me: mom!please...please stop ...I'm sorry mom...it will never happen. I'm very sorry.

(She stopped. She was even sweating. She set down and started crying)

Her: You really know how to break my heart. We have been through so much. You have seen your stepdad abusing me . And yet you still want to have a husband.

(I just kept quiet. She helped me stand up and took me to my room. She ran a bath for me and put salt in . My body was hurting. She did a number on me . I was now sitting at the bath. She was busy helping me bath.)

Her: I'm sorry my baby. I'm sorry I...

Me: No mom ...I understand. You were very angry.

Actually I'm the one at fault. I'm very sorry for disappointing you.

(She cupped my face)

Her: We all make mistakes in life . Please promise me you will never in your life hide something from me .

Me: I promise.

Her: So what did Lali do ...

(I told her about everything she did)

Her: That's unlike her ...I'm sure there's some misunderstanding. Lali would never hurt you .

Me: I first didn't believe it . But after the doctor said the pills were put on my food . I felt so shuttered. I never thought Lali would hurt me . Thanks God I'm still alive . Because the doctor said the pills that she gave me are very dangerous.

Her: ohh thanks God. I need to call Lali. I need to hear her side of the story.

Me: ohh so you don't believe me .

Her: I do my dear ... I just want to ask her what really happened. Why would she cause you so much pain.

(She went out . You would bet Lali is her daughter. She cares for her more than she cares for me . I slowly dried myself and put on my pjs and went to sleep)

Mrs Khumalo's POV

I'm sure there's some misunderstanding. Lali would never do that to Nomhle. Someone is framing Lali. She take Nomhle as her sister. They have been friends for years. Why would she hurt her now. Lali has a very good heart. She will never even hurt a fly . I called her and asked her to come over. She arrived and threw herself to me . She cried. I brushed her back.

Me: Don't worry my dear . I know you didn't do it . I know you will never hurt her .

(She continued crying)

Me: it's fine baby .

(I gave her a glass of water.)

Me: Now tell me what really happened.

Her: Well... Yesterday Nomhle called me and said she wants to see me . I didn't want to but she pleased me to come . When I got there her boyfriend said he's leaving I should prepare her a breakfast. I went to the kitchen and prepared it .she told me that she wants to me to tell you that she's pregnant. While I was still sitting I saw...

(I can't tell her that .)

Her: erhmm...I than went back home . In the middle of the night. Her boyfriend called me and told me she's in the ICU.

(There's something that Lali is hiding from me . I wonder what is it. I just hope she didn't do it .)

Nomhle: I think you forgot the part where you slept

me .

(I looked at Lali)

Her: Yes I slept you because I love you . I care for you. I was very angry .

Nomhle: Mhh I see ...your anger led you to kill my baby.

Her: That's not true Nomhle.

Me: Lali I think you should leave.

Her: What?

Me: Please.

(She slowly got up and went .)

TWO DAYS LATER

Lali's POV

I woke up and went downstairs. Everyone was sitting at the table having breakfast. They all looked

at me . I know why. I have been locking myself inside. I didn't want to talk to anyone. It was just me and my God. I have been trying to get to Nomhle but she ignores my calls and messages. I ended up sending her a long ass message. I told her that Mike is the one who killed her baby. I also told her that if she hates me it's fine the feeling is mutual. I'm tired of feeling guilty for something I didn't do . When all the apparitions warned me about Nomhle I never believed them . Now I see what they meant.

J ase: Finally you decided to come out .

(I faintly smiled)

Me: I'm sorry for pushing all of you away. I was just going through alot. But I'm fine now .

Mrs Kane: Lali we are family. We share our sorrows and happiness .

(Everyone looked at her. Okay. Is she repenting or it's just pretence.)

Me: I know and I'm sorry .

(we all ate . Mom Kayla stood up to the kitchen.
She held her stomach.)

Me: Are you okay mom?

Kayla: yeah...

Dad: Are you sure.

(Suddenly her water broke . We all stood up and
went to her . Dad held her . He took her to the
hospital. We all went there. Dad went in with her .
While she was still giving birth . I noticed Mrs Kane
crying. I went to her.)

Me: Are you okay?

Her: NO!...ermmm ...sorry I'm fine. These are tears
of joy. I'm happy that your father will now have
another son.

Me: Mhh I see.

(We all waited outside. I kept quiet praying that
everything goes well. After hours. It was now

afternoon . Dad came out wearing a very big smile .
We all went to him)

Me: Is mom and the baby fine.

Dad: Yes ...she gave birth to a very beautiful and
chubby baby boy .

(We were all happy we went in to see her . She
looked very tired. I cupped her face)

Me: How are you feeling mommy.

Kayla: (She smiled) I'm just tired.

(I went to the baby . I looked at it . I did a small
prayer.)

Me: May God protect you little champ .

(We were all very happy . She and the baby will be
discharged tomorrow. We all went home . Dad
chose to stay with them)

Zia: guys don't y'll think we should throw a
welcoming party for the baby and Kayla mo..

(Mrs Kane just went upstairs)

Me: That sounds great.

(We all went to the mall to buy things we will need .
And I bumped into Austin. He was going with
another woman. She looked very beautiful. They
were holding hands . I felt my heart brake. I don't
know why. I felt anger building up . I decided to go
to them)

Me: Hey Austin.

Austin: Lali? How are you?

Me: I'm good and you?

Austin: good too. Long time no see.

Me: Yeah ...hey .

Austin: Ohh this is my PA Emilia. Emilia this is Lali
erhmm ...my ...

Me: Girlfriend...I'm his girlfriend. Nice to meet you
girly .

(I don't know why I said that . Anyways she kept
giving me nasty looks when I was busy talking to
Austin.)

Me: I will visit you when I get time .

Austin : I would very happy. It was nice seeing you.

Me: Likewise. I have to go now bye.

(I went back to my girls .)

Addison: Mhh I see...someone has a boyfriend.
What's his name?

Me: He's not my boyfriend. He's just a friend.

Zia: Mhh a friend. But he was looking at you like
you're his girlfriend. It like his life depended on you.

(I playfully hit her)

Me: Stop it now . Did you guys get everything.

Zia: Yeah we can go now.

(we drove back home. We started decorating. The
cooking we will do in the morning. We finished and
went to sleep. Addi , Zia and I slept together in my
room)

Austin's POV

Lali is always beautiful. Looking at her just make my heart dance . I saw that she was angry that when she saw me walking with Emilia. Anyways Emilia was sleeping over at my house today. She has been trying to have sex with me . But I just don't feel like it . I feel like I would be cheating Lali. I think I love Lali. I finally understand the way I have been feeling about her. It's love . When she comes over. I will tell her everything.

Mrs Kane's POV

I can't do it anymore. I can't pretend anymore. But ever since I started. My husband has been spending time with me too . I guess I will have to continue with the pretence. At the hospital I was so heartbroken. I remembered the day my husband told me that I lost my babies. The pain I went through was slowly reoccurring. When Lali came to

me .I almost snapped. So the kids are busy preparing for Kayla and the baby. I went downstairs to help . After everything was done we waited for them . They arrived. The kids said surprise. Kayla was very happy.

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:15] Lynne: insert 32

18SLV

Nomhle's POV

Well things between my mom and I are going very well. She has distanced herself from Lali. I now spend most of my time with her . So I was getting ready to go meet Mike and Kiara. We have been very busy planning Lali's death. They even told me that Lali was responsible for their father's death. I wasn't surprised. After what Lali did to my baby. I finally saw her true side and that she's capable of

killing a person. So asked the driver to take me to Mike's place . I told mom that I will sleepover. To my surprise she just gave me the morning after pill. I arrived. They were sitting at the patio having drinks. I greeted them . I sat next to Kiara. I'm now more close to her than her brother. We started chatting. It was very nice . They also told me when we can implement our plan. I will be the one to kill her and I can't wait to finally find justice for my deceased baby .

Tony's POV

Lali has been ignoring me lately. She was in her room. I got in. She was busy smiling on her phone. I hope she's not seeing someone. I locked the door.

Me: Hey .

Her: oh hey Tony...

Me: How are you.

Her: I'm good and you .

Me: I'm good .

(I sat next to her in bed . I made her face me . I tried to kiss her but she pushed me)

Me: What?

Her: .Erhmm...Tony I'm really sorry .I can't really. It just feels weird. I just can't.

Me: But Lali the other day you...

Her: It was a mistake. A total mistake. I was feeling down and needed a shoulder to cry on. You came to my rescue and comforted me . Things led to another. But really please try to forget it .

(I tried to kiss her again)

Her: Tony no ...this...us ...it won't work really.

(I was very angry . I got out and went to Addison downstairs.)

Me: Can I talk to you upstairs .

Addi: Sure .

(She followed me to my room. When she got in . I locked the door and pinned her on it . I started kissing her and undressing her . I carried her to bed and got between her legs . We were both naked . I started going in and out of her .)

Odin's POV

I have trying to get to Lali . But she no longer answers my DMs . I asked Zia to give her number on WhatsApp. She did . I invited her . She was online.

Me: Hey it's Odin.

Her: Hi .

Me: How are you doing .

Her: Well and you .

Me: Well too. You have been ignoring my Dms so I decided to ask Zia for your number. I hope you don't mind.

Her: Nah I don't.

Me: Erhmm...Lali I kinda wish to know you .

Her: you know me .

Me: No I...mean like go out on a date with you .

Her: Mhh I see.

Me: Is that a yes.

Her: I really don't know. I'm very busy these days .

Me: Please let me know when you're available.

Her: Okay. How's Avani doing.

Me: We are no longer together

Her: Shame...what happened. Because you guys were love birds.

Me: We were no longer clicking .

Her: Shame ... you guys looked good together.

Me: Yeah we did . But I now want to move on and

find someone can spend most of my time with .

Her: Good luck on that.

Kayla's POV

I have never been this happy in my life. Kane has been treating me like a queen. I have nothing to complain about. My ex husband never treated me like this . He was a jerk. I was breastfeeding my baby. He's really cute . He looks more like his dad . My sister wife's sudden change does not sit me well. She can't just change to a good woman . She hated me so much. Why is she now being nice . Anyways Kane got in.

Him: Hello my people.

Me: Hey daddy.

Him: Kayla... Thank you very much. Thank you for making me the happiest man in the world. You are kindhearted and loving . You have showered all my children with love . I really appreciate you. And for that . Will you please marry me .

(He knelt down and took out a small box. He opened it . It was a ring . A very beautiful ring . I put the baby back into it cot. I was now in tears. I nodded)

Me: Yes a thousand times Yes.

(He slid it on my finger. I looked at it . It was very beautiful and had pure diamonds.)

Me: I love you ... I will forever love you.

(He kissed me .)

Him: Thanks for saying yes (He kissed me again.) I have to go now . I love you .

(I went downstairs and called everyone. I told them that their dad just proposed to me .)

Lali: Wow ...it looks so expensive and beautiful.

Me: It is babe.

Zia: Wow .

Zayn: Dad is so cool .

(Mrs Kane and hugged me . It was a very cold one.
I hope she's not pretending.)

Lali's POV

Anyways we celebrated. Kayla mom looked so happy. So I went upstairs to get ready. I promised Austin to visit him .I know it late but i won't stay long. I told everyone that I'm going to Mat's house. I put on my skinny ripped jean , Van's t shirt and sneakers. I took the car keys and drove to his place. I parked it and went I inside. The lights were switched off. There was a table that has two chairs.

Red candles were lit. I hope I didn't come at a wrong time. Maybe he's having a dinner with his wife . Just when I was about to go out he said.

Him: Where are you going to?

(I turned back and looked at him. He was wearing a suit. He looks handsome. He made his way to me . He looked at me and laughed)

Me: What?

Him: No it's nothing. Please go upstairs to my room and put on the dress that's on the bed . I'm going to have dinner with you wearing a Jean .

(I was still amazed by his handsomeness . I went upstairs. It was a black dress . I put it on. It was hugging my body perfectly and it wasn't too short . There was also black stilettos on the floor. I put them on . I wonder how he knew my size. I noticed that the picture of his wife was no longer on the wall. I wonder what happened to the two of them.

Anyway I went downstairs. As I made my way to him. He was busy staring at me with his eyes wide open. You would swear he's seeing a ghost. .

Me: Hello mr .

Him: Wow...you ..you look so beautiful.

Me: Thanks .

Him: please sit down.

(He pulled a chair for me . A waiter brought food. He even hired waiters. Dvs n - Hallucinations was playing. We finished eating .)

Me: it was great .

Him: I'm glad you liked it.

(I just smiled)

Him: My wife died .

Me: I'm very sorry I didn't know .

Him: we will talk about all that some other day . Lali I love you.

(I looked at him. I softly said)

Me: I love you too.

(It came out as a whisper. He stood up and put his hands around my waist and kissed me . The kiss was very slow and passionate. He carried me upstairs. We got into his room . He carefully placed me on the bed . He got on top of me . He continued kissing me . He would leave my mouth than suck my neck. He was only in his briefs. He stood up and took them off. I looked at his manhood he was very huge .I swallowed hard.)

Me: Erhmm ...let's go back and eat.

(He just smiled and got between my legs again. He kissed me again. I felt him trying to push his dick in my cookie.)

Him: fuck...you're so tight love .

(I was very nervous I won't lie. He tried for a couple of time . I than felt some pain and I screamed. I closed my eyes than he stopped)

Him: please look at me .

(I slowly opened my eyes.)

Him: Please trust me ... it's going to hurt a little but don't forget I love you.

(I just nodded. He kissed me one more time and pushed himself in again. I felt a very extreme pain and i screamed out loud with my tears coming out. He stopped and wiped my tears.)

Him: look at me please.

(I did)

Him: I love you and Lali I mean it . Ever since I layed my eyes on you. I haven't been able to stop thinking about you .

(He kissed me again)

Him: i love you .

Me: i love you too.

(He started moving slow deep in side me . I closed my eyes because it was very painful. He went in and out of me while groaning . The room was filled with moans and groans. He pulled my right leg up and continued going in and out of me . He was now moving very fast. I felt his body tensing up . He

went more fast . My legs shook and I grabbed his back more tight . He didn't stop . He increased more and finally stopped and then I felt him release some liquid. His wolf reacted and made a big growl. And my beast did the same . He's the one. He was breathing so hard. He rested on top of me . He kissed me again .)

Him: Thank you.

(I just smiled. He got up and went to the bathroom. I heard water running . He then came back with a warm towel . He wiped me as I had blood . After that he carried me bridal style and gently put me in the bath . My cookie was in fire but as soon as water hit it . It became better. After some time he joined me in. He carried me again to bed . The duvet was changed . He gave me his t shirt I put it on and sleep . I'm very tired .)

Addison's POV

Tony wasn't himself. He was busy going in and out

of me . But he wasn't looking at me . I cupped his face . He was sweating.

Me: Are you okay?

Him: Yeah .

(He didn't stop humping me . I stopped him before he could even release his juices on me .)

Him: WTF

Me: if you don't tell me what's bothering you . I will go and sleep with Zia.

Him: Come on

(He tried kissing me . I just stood up and went to the bathroom. He followed me)

Him: Okay I'm sorry . My mind is just occupied .

Me: please close the door on your way out.

(He came close to me . I pushed him)

Me: No .

(He slammed the door and went back to his

bedroom. I took a quick shower. Tony has been behaving very strange lately. I'm sure there's another girl in his life . But why would he cheat on me . I love him wholeheartedly and make sure I satisfy him with everything . I put on my pjs and slept.)

Austin's POV

I was busy staring at Lali. She's more cute when she's sleeping. I cuddled her . I can't believe that she's my girlfriend. Any men would kill to be with her . He has broken the wall I built in my wall. I never thought I will ever love again. I love her so much. And I think I'm already obsessed to her . It was now early in the morning. I got between her legs and kissed her . She smiled and returned the kiss. I tried pushing my dick in but it wouldn't go in. After some time it finally slid in. She closed her eyes. I helped her take off my t shirt that she was wearing. I kissed her . I started moving slowly in

her.)

Me: Fuck !

(I started increasing my pace while groaning. Her moans made me move fast even more. After some time I pulled out . I put both her legs on my shoulders and slid back . I started moving fast again. She held me too tight . I pounded her so hard she was screaming)

Her: A..Austin!

(I kissed her . Still moving fast. Her body shook but I didn't stop. I hit it hard throughout her orgasm. I went in and out of her fast . After some time I pulled out and carried her to the bathroom. I gently put her on top of the cupboard for towels. She wrapped her legs around my waist . I started moving slowly in her. After some time my grip on her waist became tight and I increased my pace . I kept increasing my pace . Another orgasm hit her. I didn't stop . I continued moving fast in her. I went on and on until I felt my body tense up. I went more deeper and harder . I slammed into her hard and cursed as I

was releasing my juices in her . I pulled out and gasped for air.)

Me: Are you okay.

(She faintly smiled)

Her: I'm okay ...but my cookie is not .

Me: Nccoo...I'm sorry babe.

(I went down and kissed it . We both took a shower. I pinned her on the glass wall of it and carried her . I started moving very fast in her . She held onto me tight as orgasm hit us both . I kissed her we finished bathing . I carried her to bed . I started applying lotion on her body . I gave her my sweatpant and a t shirt.)

Me: I'm going to buy food . I will be back soon .

(She just nodded and drifted off to sleep . My babe is really tired . I took the car keys and went to the Pharmacy. I bought her the morning after pill . I went to Macdonald and ordered burgers and drink . I drove back home . I put everything on the table in the kitchen. I went upstairs to wake her up . I kissed

her forehead)

Me: I'm back...let's go and eat.

Her: Sure .

(She stood up . She was struggling to walk . I just laughed at her . She looked at me very angry.)

Me: ermm...let me help you.

Her: I'm fine ...continue laughing.

(I just carried her to the lounge. I brought her food . We started eating. After she was done I took everything to the kitchen and came back with water and the pills . I gave her.)

Her: Thank you .

(she drank them . We than cuddled on the couch.)

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:15] Lynne: insert 33

Kayla's POV

I just called Lali to come back home . I was busy preparing dinner for everyone. The baby was with the girls . I started setting the table . I put everything there . Lali walked in . She had a funny walk . A mother can see when her something happened to her daughter. And also feel that her daughter is no longer a virgin. I know I'm not Lali's biological mother. But I have connected very well with her. I can safely say I know her from top to bottom. I went to her and whispered to her ear.

Me: Can I talk to you upstairs .

Her: Sure .

(She followed me to my room. We got in and I locked the door . We set on the bed)

Me: So How's Mat .

(Her eyes moved around.)

Her: Erhmm...mhh...s..sh..she's fine.

Me: Mhh I see.

(I cupped her face)

Me: Lali dead ... I'm very fond of you . I love and care for you deeply. I take you as my own daughter. I just want you to be honest with me . I can see that something has changed about you. I also know you were not at Mat's house I can feel it. Lali a mother is someone you can share your secrets with . You can trust me . I promise to support you in everything dear. All I want from you is open your heart for me. Let me show you a mother's love . Let me take a good care of you. I'm not forcing you to tell me the truth. But if you do my heart will be at ease. Because at this point I don't know if you were forced or...

Her: erm...Mom ...I have a boyfriend.

(She was very shy .)

Me: Okay...how long have you met him.

Her: I'm not sure really. But we made things official the day I left this house.

Me: I see ...and you have given him your...your .(I cleared my throat)you know what I mean right.

(She held her laugh)

Her: Yeah ... i know it was too soon but I felt like it's was right thing to do .

Me: Mhhh...I see ...is he a good guy though? Do you trust him with your heart.

Her: Yeah...he's a nice guy . He was even gentle with me .

Me: Lali dear men are very deceptive. They claim to be good ,loving,supportive and honest. Whereas they are not . Believe me I'm talking out of experience. I have been there too. Lali I have been in a toxic marriage. When we were dating he was all nice and romantic. After we got married. Things changed . He started cheating and disrespecting me in front of his friends. I became a laughing stock to people. Different girls would tag me on social in their photos with him. The worst part is he never hid it from me that he was cheating. I stayed with him . Because I loved him and he was also handsome I won't lie . Lali dear love is a very dangerous and selfish thing . Love is the most

downfall to us women . Because we love with everything we have . It makes you forget about all the pain the one you love caused you . I bared all his cheating ways but when he cheated with my sister and they were even expecting a baby. That's when I realized that by staying with him I'm only making fool of myself. I tried divorcing him but he don't agree to sign. He kept threatening me that if I don't come back to him . He will kill me . Strange right . After so much pain he has caused me . He still wants to hurt me more. Why should I stay with someone who doesn't value me . Someone who's selfish and do not consider other people's emotions. I had given up in love . But your father came . He found me broken but he mended all the pieces of my broken heart. I never thought I would love again. Here I am all happy with him. He truly loves me and wants best out of our relationship. So what I'm trying to say is don't let the looks fool you. I'm not judging you dear but I think you should have atleast spent more time with him. Understand him and know what kind of a person he is . See if he loves you truly or only want sex from you . Before letting

him into your sacred place.

(She rested her head on my lap.)

Her: You're the best mother . You know since I grew up without a mother figure in my life . I have always kept things to myself. I have always made decisions on my own. To be honest I taught myself wrongs and rights. How I wish I was raised by you. You are a very strong woman .

Me: I'm here now dear. Whenever you want to talk about something bothering you. You can come running to me . I will never turn my back on you. You're my first daughter.

(She smiled.)

Me: Don't get me wrong about what I said . I'm not trying to make you feel guilty for becoming sexually intimate with your boyfriend. I was just warning you.

Her: Don't worry I understand very well.

Me: And you also know that every mother wants to see their children achieve in life . Man can delay

your success. Did you guys use protection

Her: No ...but he did give me a morning after pill.

Me: That's better. Lali dear I want you to be with that guy . Spend more time with him . But deprive him sex. Do not become sexually intimate with him for a month or two. That way you will be able to see if he truly love you or he's just using you for sex. I promise you . You won't regret okay.

(She nodded)

Me: Is he handsome though . Because you can't just give your cookie to a baboon looking guy

(We both laughed)

Her: He is very handsome.

Me:mhh I see. Be careful. Handsome man are very loose. They move from one girl to another. That's why I chose your dad.

(We both laughed even more)

Me: I'm joking. Your dad is way too handsome. Even now when I look at him . I get wet at the same time.

(We laughed even more)

Her: It feels so good to talk to you about things like this .

Me: I know hey ... So how was your first time ?
Painful right

Her: I don't even want to talk about it .

Me: I know hey ...anyway let us go and eat . I'm sure everyone is wondering why we are not back yet .

(We stood up)

Me: And Lali dear ...fix your walk . Your dad will notice that something happened.

Her: okay I will try.

(we went downstairs. Everyone was now done eating they were now watching TV. We took our food and joined them .)

Zia: Finally you have brought our sister back ...I wonder what were you guys talking about.

Me: it between a mother and her daughter.

Zia: Mhh .

Dad: I was hoping we could have a vacation somewhere out of the country. Just spend some time together as a family.

Jase: Wow dad that a good idea.

Mrs Kane: Since Lali joined this family we haven't went to any vacation or just go out as a family.

(That was not even necessary to say . Lali just smiled and shook her head . She so sweet that one .)

Me: I think it a good idea too. What do you girls say.

Zia: We are thousand times agree right Lali.

Lali: Eehmm...y..yeah I guess.

(I looked at Addison. She was looking down)

Me: Addison baby. ..you are also a member of this family . So there's no need to feel excluded.

(She smiled. I'm very happy that I'm able to put a smile on the faces of these children. I just love them .)

Dad: So where can we go to .

Me: Mhh...Anywhere away from Guateng. What do you guys think .

Zia:let's to Mauritius.

Mrs K: Yeah it even better there.

Dad: What do you think Kayla.

Me: As long as the children are happy to go there. I'm happy too.

Dad: Okay...I will check all my schedules for next week than we can go .

Me: Okay.

(We watched TV until late . We than decided to all sleep.)

Lali's POV

I was now in my room busy chatting with Austin. He's really funny hey . My stomach was in stitches. I said my goodbye to him. I was now busy thinking about what mom Kayla said . I will really put Austin

to test for two months. I will not have sex with him for the next two months. Than after I can see if he really loves me or not. But am I saying. He is my chosen after all. He is bound to love me . But we can not force things . I wonder what would happen if him and I don't end up together. Like if he is not the man of my dreams. Sometimes these old people want to control out lives. Like why can't one find a person to spend the rest of her or his life with on his own way. Why do they have to choose for us . But I do believe in Austin. I trust him . But if he doesn't treat me well I will not be forced to spend the rest of my life with him. Come rain or storm. I will never be with someone who does value you me . After what mom Kayla said to me . She has showed me a different side of love . She has made me question love . I'm very grateful to have someone like her in my life . I than drifted to sleep . I was now early in the morning. I was woken up by a call from Mat .

Me: Hey girlfriend.

Mat: Hey love ...I'm back .

(I sat up straight)

Me: Really... I'm coming to fetch and we are definitely going out .

Mat :I can't wait to see you . I have alot to tell you about .

Me: I just can't wait .

(I took a bath. I really love being around Mat . She always have something interesting to say . I went downstairs and helped Kayla mom prepare breakfast.)

Kayla: You know your dad can be strange sometimes.

Me: What he did now

Kayla: He does n't want a maid here. Why ?

(I just shrugged my shoulders.)

Kayla:I have to talk to him about that. We can not always do the cleaning and cooking. Atleast we can cook. But cleaning is really tiring.

Me : I'm going out with Mat today afternoon though.

Her: Mhh really Mat? Or the other Male Mat .

(I just laughed)

Me :The real one .

Her: Okay .

(We finished and than called everyone downstairs.
We all started eating)

Zia: Lali we have to go and do shopping for the vacation today.

Me: ermmm...I'm really sorry . I'm going out with Mat today.

Zia: Mhh... I need to have a serious talk with Mat.
She's hijacking you from us .

(We all laughed)

Zia: like for real. ..you visited her for a whole three days. Again today you're going out with her .

(I looked at Kayla mom and we laughed.)

Me: Don't worry sister. You will always be my number. It's just that I have important stuff to talk with Mat about .

Zia: Mhh.

(We finished. I went upstairs to choose an outfit I'm going to wear. While I was still busy Nomhle called me . I answered)

Me: hello .

Nomhle: Hey Lali... Can I see you tomorrow.

Me: No .

(I hanged up. I'm not going to entertain her . She pushed me away from her and accused me of killing her baby. What does she want now from me . Ayy she must go fuck herself. I blocked her number . I can't have people like Nomhle in my life . I was now getting ready. I put on a floral dress and sandals. I let my hair loose. I took the car keys and drove to Mat's house. I got in . She was waiting for

me . With her dad.)

Me: Hello everyone.

Mat's dad: ohh our hero . Lali I don't know how to thank you. I'm out of words . No one has ever done this much for my princess . You have a good heart dear . I wish you live happy. So please take this . (it was cash .)

Me: no ...I won't take your money. I did what I did out of goodness. Not that I wanted money. I was just helping my best friend out . I'm sorry but I can't accept it .

Mat: Please Lali take it. What you did...

Me:no I won't. ..don't even try to change my mind .
Can we go now.

(We made our way to the mall. We did shopping and bought takeaways from spurs. We also bought three bottles of red wine . We bought glasses. We drove to the park. I parked the car there and we started eating and talking.)

Me: So how was the training?

Mat: yooohh...it was very tiring. I would always sleep with my body hurting . but it was worth it. I was hoping we can go out for clubbing. Since I can now live freely.

Me: we can all go tomorrow.

Mat: So what's going on between you and Austin?

(I cleared my throat. She laughed)

Me: Why are you asking

Mat: Because he has been asking me about your likes and dislikes.

Me: well we're dating . I don't want to say we're in a relationship as yet .

Mat: mhh ...he's very handsome you go girl. So have you given him .

Me: what?

Mat:the cookie.

Me: Funny enough yes. So he's my virginity breaker.

(She coughed as the wine was choking her. I hit her back . She started laughing)

Mat: So you were still a virgin.

Me: yeah.

Mat: Yhoo...to even tell that I lost my virginity in grade 10!.

Me: What?

(I laughed)

Mat: I'm serious. I was under peer pressure. Can you guess where.

Me: Probably in your father's house.

Mat: At the school toilets.

(I laughed even more.)

Me: Yhoo ...you need God. To imagine. When I was in grade 10 . I wanted nothing about boys.

Mat: So how many boyfriends have you had.

Me: Austin is my second boyfriend.

Mat: What ? I find it hard to believe that. I mean Lali

you're so beautiful. The first time I met you. I thought you had millions of boyfriends.

(we laughed even more)

Mat: but Lali on a serious note. Can you ask Austin to hook me up with his brother Nick.

(I laughed)

Me: I don't even know that Nick you're talking about. I only know that he has two brothers. And he is the last born.

Mat: Nick is the middle one. The older one is married. Lali he's very handsome but not more than Austin. Austin is fire out of all his brothers. If he weren't your boyfriend I would have hit her myself.

(I laughed even more.)

Me: He is hey...that's what worries me more. He's every girl's crush. Mat do you believe in those "Chosen things".

Mat: To be honest. I don't. There was a point where I believed in them . After all every creature has a chosen one. Dad told me that . The chosen one

thing is a selfish thing that is made by those who are dead. They put you in so much danger . It their way of using you for their own benefits.

Me: What do you mean by that?

Mat: Well ...My mother died because of that . I won't really tell you what happened. Because I don't want to go back to the pain I felt after loosing her. I known dad always take a good care of me but I also need a mother figure. I also want someone to talk to about things that only a female can understand.

(I rubbed her hand)

Mat: When mom died . That was very broken . He couldn't even move on. I even wish now that dad can find someone to spend the rest of his life with. I wish to also have a little brother or sister. But what can one do . Because you can only have babies with your chosen one. Mom was dad's chosen one. Now that she died . Dad will never have a baby.

Me: That's so wrong . How I wish I had power to change all of that. Austin is my chosen one.

Mat: Yeah i know .

Me: How though.

Mat: No it a secret between me and myself.

Me: Ohh really.

(We were now tipsy. And there is still a bottle of wine still sealed.)

Mat: so when are we going to the Drugiomin.

Me: I don't know hey. But I did research about it .

Mat: Maybe we can go next week.

Me: I don't think so ... my family are going for vacation in Mauritius.

Mat: Mhh really

Me: yeah you can come with if you want .

Mat: really.

Me: yeah.

Mat: So how is your other friend doing.

(I told her everything that happened between Nomhle and i)

Mat: How can she accuse you of such thing . She

clearly doesn't know you well .

Me: yeah hey...I thought I had a friend in her. She even have the audacity to call me today.

Mat: I hope you told her to shoot her self.

Me: i blocked her...

Mat: that's even better.

(we were now very drunk . So Mat decided to sleepover at home . We woke up very late the sun was already out . I had a very bad headache. We took bath together. I borrowed her my clothes. They don't fit her wall as I'm abit tiny from her. I gave her velvet dress as it can stretch. We went downstairs and had breakfast with everyone.)

Me: Ermm...dad...Mat want to tag along when we are going to Mauritius.

Dad: Okay there's no problem with that.

Kayla: it's going to be even more fun .

(we finished breakfast. We as girls gathered in my room)

Me: Guys tonight we're going out to a club .

Addi: really ...that's music to my eyes.

(The boys got in)

Jase: We are also going with y'll.

Me: That's even better.

Zayn: What time?

Mat : emm...we can go by 8pm .

Zia: For now can we go shop for the vacation.

(I laughed. This girl is so obsessed with shopping. Anyway I drove us to the mall. We bought swimming clothes and some shots. We than went to Macdonald . We spent most time there . We were busy talking. It was now very late we went back home . I dropped Mat at her house I will fetch her later. We got home and watched TV. Kayla mom told us that food is now ready. We went to the dinning room. We ate than went to our separate rooms. We were all getting ready to go. I put on my black ripped skinny, white t shirt, Sneakers and a leather jacket. I tied my hair into a messy bun . It

was now 8 on the dot . I atleast need to tell Kayla mom. I just can't do something without tell her. I went downstairs. She was in the kitchen.)

Me: Eehmm...mom we're going out .

Her: okay dear please be safe ...

Me: thanks.

Her: now go go before your dad comes out of his study.

(So we were driving different cars. Tony was driving the guy's car and I was with the ladies. We first took Mat and went to the club. There was a free table so we went to it. We ordered siders ,beers and four bottles of vodka. It was very nice . Mat looked very happy. I was sitting next to her . She pulled me to the dance circle. We started dancing . She than pulled me back to the table we were sitting at)

Mat: Lali Nick is here... he's here.

Me: Where?

Mat: there.

(And guess what Austin was there too.)

Mat: let's go and greet them .

Me: what? No ...you go ...I'm not going there.

(She pulled me but Tony quickly grabbed my arm .

He pulled me into him . Mat went to them)

Tony: Dance with me .

Me: what? Why?

Tony: Since I can't have you as my girlfriend.

Atleast dance with me .

(His hands were around my waist.)

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:15] Lynne: insert 34

Narrated

Lali: Tony please let go of me .

Tony: Why ? Why exactly Lali. I love you . I love you with all my heart . Why can't you love me back .

Lali: Tony I think you should go home and sleep.

Tony: I'm not going anywhere.

Lali: Okay let go of me .

(Lali tried to remove Tony's hands from her waist. But Tony grabbed her arm tight.)

Lali: Tony you're hurting me .

(Lali kept stealing glances at Austin. She was concerned that why is Austin not making any move)

Tony: Look at me .

(She didn't. he forcefully made her face him. He started kissing her on her neck .)

Lali: Tony what are you doing. Can you just stop .

(Finally Austin made his way to them . He slapped Tony so hard that his mouth started bleeding. He took Lali with him . She made her sit on his lap.)

Austin's POV

At first I thought Lali was enjoying it . But when that guy kissed her neck . I decided to go to them . She was now sitting on my lap. I wrapped my arms around her . She put her head on my shoulder.

Me: Are you okay

Lali: Yeah.

Me: Do you know him

(She signed)

Her: Yeah...he's...well...my brother?

Me: What?

Her: Well his mother is married to dad.

Me: okay...so what was he trying to do exactly

Her: He has been asking me out .

Me: Mhh I see.

(I kept looking at him . I will teach him a lesson. He

doesn't know me .)

Me: Erhmm...babe these are my brothers. Nick and Ondreaz .

(They extended their hands for handshake.)

Nick : Nice to meet.

(Lali whispered in my ear)

Lali: Do they still recognize me .

Me: Don't worry about that . I told them everything and my happiness comes first.

(We kissed . We had so much fun. I didn't know Lali can dance until today. Mat and Nick were now love birds. Every single minute they would kiss. It was time to go . I dropped Lali off at her house and went to my house. My brothers came along . We continued drinking.)

Nick : I must say your girlfriend is beautiful. If she weren't yours I would have asked her out .

Me: I'm the luckiest man .

Ondreaz: But I don't see your relationship with her

lasting for long. I mean if dad finds out that you helped her . Tables will turn .

(That's my older brother. I sometimes feel like he hates me . May it the fact that I will be the next Alpha not him.)

Nick : As long as we keep it a secret dad will never find out .

Me: Yeah . So Nick when are you going back to Dubai.

Nick : I not going back there. I will now work here.

Me: Is it because of Mat.

Nick: Yeah...I think it about time . I also start my own family.

(While we were still busy talking I received a call from Emilia. I ignored it . I told her what was happening between us is over . But she doesn't listen. She keeps calling me .)

At an undisclosed area

Emilia: Mom . Did aunt Nora have a kid?

Hermom: I don't know...why are you asking me that?

Emilia: No it's nothing.

Mom: It seems you have forgotten that I was banished from the Drugiomin. So things that happen that side I don't know. My family cutted all ties with me .

(Emilia kept quiet)

Mom: But one day...one silly day I will revenge all that . I will make sure everyone single pers on from the Drugiomin suffer. How are things between you and your boyfriend.

Emilia: Well some new bitch is trying to replace me.

Lali's POV

I woke up . I had a really terrible headache. I turned and saw Mat sleeping. I laughed and covered her

with a blanket. I went to bath and went downstairs. I made two ice coffees for the both of us . She was awake so I gave her the coffee.

Mat: Thanks. Yoooh...I have a severe headache.

Me: Me too hey...Mhh so you and Nick.(I cleared my throat)

Mat: I think he's into me . I think he feels the same way about me . And you and Tony . What was happening.

Me: Friend I never told you. Tony has been asking me out.

Mat: What ...isn't he your brother.

Me: he's a stepbrother.

Mat: But still.

Me: So one day we kissed. Now he thinks I feel the same way about him .

Mat: Mhh...you kissed .

(She gave me a nasty smile)

Me: Stop it.

(i threw the cushion to her)

Mat: Let me let dad know that I'm fine. Before he starts worrying about his princess.

(She talked to her dad and took a bath. After she was done we went downstairs to have breakfast. Everyone was already there.)

Me: Goodmorning.

Kayla: Goodmorning my two dears.

Dad: I checked my schedule. Next week I'm free. We can also go tomorrow.

Kayla: Wow that's even better.

Dad: Kayla you must book the private jet. We will use it .

Kayla: Okay love . Girls when y'll are done eating go and pack your clothes.

Zia: Yhoo ... I can't wait. Lali please come and help me choose which clothes I can pack .

Me: Okay ...than after we will go and take Mat's clothes at her house.

Mat: Yeah ...i also need to tell dad.

(we went to Zia's bedroom. All her clothes were scattered on the bed . We helped her choose and then drove to Mat's house . She told her dad and took her clothes. We came back home. We were now just chilling by the pool)

Zia: So Mat and you Lali why didn't you tell us that you have boyfriends .

(We looked at each other.)

Me: Don't worry sis...I was going to tell you. I was waiting for the right time .

Zia: And you Mat?

(She was busy smiling on her phone .)

Me: Friend ?

Mat: Guys I have to go ...i need to see someone.

Me: Mhh...Nick right?

(She nodded and smiled. He really makes her happy.)

Addison: Hey guys (She signed) Things between

Tony and I aren't well.

(what? I didn't even know they were dating)

Me: You...you guys are dating

Zia: Yeah... I also had to find out on my own. She hid it from us.

Addison: guys I think he's cheating. When we're intimate he no longer looks at me .

Me: Maybe he's going through something.

Addison: You think so

(I just nodded)

Addison: Lali can you please speak to him for me .
You guys seem close .

(I swallowed hard)

Me: Not exactly.

Addison: Come on Lali ...just please ask him if he still loves me . So if he does my heart can be at ease. And if he doesn't anymore I can stop troubling him and move on with my life.

Me: I will try.

Addison: can you please go now ...

Me: N...no..now ?

(She held my hands)

Addison: Please...I really love him . And I don't want to lose him .

Me: okay.

(I stood up. This is going to be hard for me . I really don't want Tony next to me . I went upstairs to his room. He was laying on his bed with only sweatpant on . His muscles and six pack were out there . I cleared my throat. She stood up and went straight to me . He slowly pushed me until I reached the door he locked it . I was breathing very quickly. He went back to his bed . I took a deep breath .)

Me : Erhmm...mom.. hey.

Tony : Hey Lali ...what do you want here in my room ?

Me: Actually Ermm...i came here because I'm concerned about your relationship with Addison.

(he raised his one eyebrow) Specifically I'm concerned about Addison. She loves you . She deeply love you . She said lately you have been ignoring her.

(He kept quiet)

Me: Tony do you still love her? Because there's no use keeping her while you no longer love her . It's hurting her .

Tony : Lali why you never told me that you have a boyfriend?

(I swallowed)

Me: Erhmm ..mom

Tony: I thought you and I share everything.

Me: We used too. Since you started behaving that way with me . Things have really changed.

Tony: Lali I'm sorry... if only you told me before. I wouldn't have done all that . Lali I love you and if he makes you happy . I will bury all my feelings I have for you. Are you happy with him

Me: Yes ...he cares for me and makes me happy .

Tony: That's good . I'm sorry once again. I hope you forgive me .

(I went to him . I hugged him)

Me: I forgive you. I missed you buddy.

Tony: I missed you too . Come join me . I was watching a movie here on Netflix before you disturbed me .

Me: Sorry .

Tony : No problem.

(I Layed down next to him. We watched the movie . I really missed him. And everything he said I could see in his eyes that he meant it.)

Me: Do you still love Addi though.

Tony: Yes ...so much ...it's just that I have been very confused. But now the confusion I had is cleared.

Me: That's good. You need to talk to her . And tell her that you still love her.

Tony: Yeah.

Tony's POV

I know I said all of those things to Lali. But I didn't mean any of it . I just said all that for the sake of her happiness . If she's happy than I'm happy too. But my love for her will forever remain. May be some day she will realize that I love her . I love her so dearly. She will forever be the love of my life . I wonder if Lali knows that his boyfriend is a wolf. But she doesn't seen like someone who believes in those things . Many people all the creatures are just myths . Whereas they exist. I also told her that because I don't want to mess with Austin. Yes I know him from the underworld. Him and his brothers are respected. So if you still want to live you better be on a good side with them . But I never thought Lali will fall for someone like him . I mean his family is very evil. They hide all their dirtiness with money . To even imagine that he's a doctor. He kills and saves people at the same time . I don't even want to tell uncle that he slapped me . He will start panicking and suggest that I run away. I just

have to lay low with Lali. But I will eventually prove to her that I'm the one for her . So we were watching a comedic movie. Her smile just makes me feel better. I kept looking at her . I wish she can see through that I really love her .

Her: You have been quiet. What are you thinking about?

Me: No ...I was just thinking of buying a gift for Addison.

Her: Wow...that's even better.

Me: So how long have you dated him .

Her: I think it has been a week or less .

Me : mhh I see. Did he tell you everything about himself.

Her: Yes ...why are you asking.

Me: Lali do you believe in ...like creatures .

Her: What do you mean by that.

Me: Like do you believe that Vampires , beasts ,

Wolves, wizards etc. Do exist.

Her: No...I don't. Those are just myths .

Me: no ...that's no true. They do exist.

(She laughed)

Her: You watch alot of movies you.

Me: I'm serious come see this .

(I made her stand up . I stood in front of her . I showed me my fangs and my skin was changing. She wasn't scared or shook. That confused me .)

Me: Aren't you scared.

Her: ermm...I am ..jhoo Tony.

(I could see that she was pretending.)

Her: So how come you can walk on the sun.

Me: I'm not a fool vampire. My mother is a human. My dad was a vampire. That makes me a half vampire.

Her: Mhh.i see. So what happened to your father?

(I went and stood by the window. I was looking

outside)

Me: What I can tell you is he died . And the person responsible will soon pay.

Her: Who is that person though . Who would do something like that.

Me: it's the Adila.

Her: What? HOW?

(I turned to her)

Her: what I mean is why would ...I have to go bye .

(She went out . Okay that was weird.)

Mat's POV

So Nick fetched me . We went to Austin's house. When we got there . The place was a little packed. It looks like there is a mini party . We got in . He said I must go and help at the kitchen. He showed me the kitchen. When I was going I saw Austin. And there was a girl sitting on her lap . I went to the kitchen.

There was a very beautiful lady busy preparing food . I greeted her.

Me: Hello.

Her: ohh hey.

(She wiped her hands and hugged me . Okay)

Her: I assume you're Mat .

Me: Yes.

Her: Mhh...you're more beautiful in person. Nick showed me your pictures.

(I just smiled)

Her: So I'm Charli. Ondreaz wife .

Me: Ohh ...nice to meet you . Is there something I can help you with .

Her: Ermm ...I'm almost done but you can help me dish for everyone.

Me: what's the occasion

Her: Nothing serious really. It just a family dinner.

Me : Family dinner?

Her :yeah...Nick's cousin are also here . Only mother and father are not here.

Me: mhh I see... and the lady who's sitting with Austin...who is she?

Her: Well he introduced her as his girlfriend. Her name is Emilia.

Me: What? I mean wow.

Her: don't worry. I know that he's dating Lali . It's just that his cousins can not know . Because if they find out . They will straight away tell the Alpha.

Me: mhh I see.

Her: I wish I can also meet Lali. But I must say she's also beautiful.

Me: yeah she is.

(Anyway we gave everyone their food . After they were done we washed the dishes . We than went to sit next to our mens.i kept looking at Austin. The way he was holding that girl . They would even kiss . I was so disgusted I decided to ask Nick to take me

back to Lali's . When I got there they were already asleep. I went to Lali's room she wasn't. She was moving up and down.)

Her: Ohh finally you're back.

(She hugged me)

Her: I have been waiting for you .

(She told me what Tony told her .)

Me: It's better that way .

Her: Did you and Nick have a great time together.

Me: Not really. There was a family gathering.

Her: Really? Austin never told me .

Me: Even if he did. You wouldn't have been able to go to it .

Her: Yeah ...hey...but atleast let me know .

Me: let's sleep. ..I'm very tired .

(I won't tell Lali about Emilia. I don't want to cause any problem to their relationship. They look good together.)

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:16] Lynne: insert 35

Lali's POV

I almost told Tony the truth yesterday. I'm grateful I was able to hold myself . So we woke up and prepared for the vacation. We will be flying later though because dad has a meeting to attend before leaving. So we were so hyped up . We couldn't wait to go . We were just chilling at Zia's bedroom.

Zia: I can't wait to finally get to Mauritius. I can't wait to see guys from there . I heard they are very good looking.

(We laughed)

Addis on: Lali thank you very much for talking to Tony for me . Yesterday we made love until morning. You know he first...

(we laughed)

Me: You don't need to tell us about the... you know right.

(She laughed)

Addi: it was so great hey . I'm very happy that things between him and I are now back to normal .

Zia: That's great .

(Austin is calling.)

Me: Erhmm...ladies i have to take this .

(I went to my room)

Him: Hello my queen.

Me: Hey Mr ...how are you.

Him: I'm good just missing my babe .

Me: Shame .

Him: Can you spend a night over here . Please.

Me: Sorry ...I won't be able to . My family and I are going for vacation.

Him: Mhh...poor me . Can't they just go without you.

Me: No ...I also want to spend time with them and also enjoy myself.

Him: I see.

Me: And maybe get myself another handsome boyfriend.

Him: Excuse me?

Me: I'm joking ...chill.

Him: you better be joking.

(i just laughed)

Him: So when exactly I will see you .

Me: As soon as I come back .

Him: And when is that?

Me: I don't know when we will come back hey .

Him: okay.

Me: Why you didn't tell me about the family gathering that was held at your house .

Him: I was going to tell you .but still you wouldn't have been able to come . Remember my father

wants you dead. You were a sacrifice and on top of that you escaped.

Me: Don't worry I understand.

Him: I have to go now . Safe journey. I love you .

Me: I love you too. Thanks.

(He hung up . I went back to the girls . Dad came back and we were now on our way to the airport. We got into the jet . The view was very beautiful.)

Austin's POV

When I was busy talking to Lali . Emilia walked in she was butt naked .

Me: you're still here ?

Her: Yes ...I was hoping we can ...

(She made her way to me .)

Me: can you please leave my house . I won't repeat myself.

(She set on the bed and started playing with herself. She was even moaning. Very tempting. I love Lali so much and so passionately. But I'm also a man . I have my own needs . I went to Emilia . We kissed. I carried her to the drawer. She was already wet so I went in and out of her . We kept changing positions. I was now hitting it from behind. I was holding her tiny waist so tight . J ust when we were still busy Nick walked in)

Nick: WTF?

(I pulled out quickly. I threw some cash on her .)

Me: Get dressed and call an uber to take you.

(She did as I told her . I took a quick shower and got dressed than went downstairs. My cousins and Ondreaz have left. Nick was busy watching TV . I set next to him)

Nick : And than what was that?

Me : What?

Nick : That was happening upstairs .

Me: Nothing.

Nick: Mhh I see. Austin do you really love Lali ?

Me: Yes I do . Trust me I love her with all my heart.

Nick: if you really love her . You better end things with that bitch Emilia.

Me: There's nothing going on between Emilia and I.

Nick: Ohh ...really?

Me: Yeah ...she's just my fuck buddy .

Nick : I see. You have changed . Your wife's death changed you for the worst. You have become a fuck boy. Please Austin if you're not ready to be in a relationship with Lali. Let her go . It will be better than breaking her heart like this .

Me: You know Austin something strange happened when Lali and I were sexually intimate.

Nick: What happened?

Me : After we were done my wolf reacted and her beast did the same ...

(His eyes widened)

Me: I'm really confused. When My late wife and I

were intimate such thing never happened.

Nick: Who else have you told about this?

Me: No one just you.

Nick: Austin...don't tell anyone. Not even mom. Lali can be your chosen one . She can be your mate . And the day that happened you guys were mating . Meaning if Lali is in danger you will feel it . When she is physically in pain you will also feel her pain. If she's extremely angry in a dangerous way you will feel her anger . The same will happen to Lali when you're the one who is experiencing the things I mentioned.

(I kept quiet as I was still digesting all what he has just said)

Nick : The reason why I say don't tell anyone is because. From the Oegrates no one wants peace with the beasts. If dad find out that you have found your chosen one he will not hesitate to kill her. And I mean it . He can kill her. And you know mom. She always support him in everything.

Me: So Nick ...what's going to happen at the war ...I

can't let dad harm Lali and her species .

Nick: To be honest...I don't really know what will happen on that day ...but what you can do on that day is to make sure Lali is away from the Drugiomin. She can get hurt . You need her in your life.

(I was now feeling guilty for sleeping with Emilia. I never thought Lali could be my mate . I was feeling like shit . How am I going to face her .)

Me: I feel like shit bro.

(He patted my shoulder .)

Nick : You need to tell her lil bro . You tell her. Anyway I'm now going back to my house. And Austin don't tell Ondreaz about everything we discussed.

(I nodded)

Lali's POV

We arrived in the morning. It was very hot . So we

checked in into this Five star hotel . Mat , Zia and I decided to share a room. Well Addison is sharing with Tony . They look so happy together. I texted Austin that we have landed safely. Since we just arrived we decided to go out and just do a tour of this hotel . We will go out tomorrow. After we were done we went back inside. So we were just chilling and choosing the outfits for tomorrow.

Zia: So what are we doing tomorrow

Mat: We will go out for shopping have a lunch in one of the restaurants.

Me: Okay ...

Mat: Maybe later we can go out for clubbing.

(I just laughed. Mat is now addicted to clubbing.)

Me : You love clubbing hey.

Mat: Remember Lali there was a time where I wasn't able to . So I'm filling for that time .

(We laughed even more . Zia didn't get the joke . We laughed at her)

Zia: You guys are weird. Guys Odin has been asking me out

Me: Really?

Zia: Yeah ...I mean I had a very big crush on him .

Mat: So what are you going to say to him school girl.

(We all laughed)

Zia : I don't know Lali ...please advice me .

Me: What I can say is follow your heart. If you feel like you love him . Than you guys can date .

Zia: Mhh I see.

(it was now 18:00. We were all going to gather downstairs for dinner. Mom , Mrs Kane and dad were already there. We sat down . Addison and Tony came down. We all ate over a light conversation. After we finished we went back to our room . We slept. We woke up very early. We took a bath . I put on my skinny jean and an off shoulder crop top . I wear my push in sandals. I tied my hair into a neat bun . I took my hand bag . We went downstairs and had breakfast than left . We went to

every store . We bought alot of clothes . After we were done went to a restaurant. We ordered sea food . It was very nice . We than went back to the hotel. Dad called us all to his room .

Zia: Hey dad ...Yhoo we had so much fun today.

Dad: That's good. Okay tomorrow we are all going to the beach as a family.

Zayn: Okay .

Kayla: Than later we can eat out .

Me: Sounds great.

Dad: You all can leave now .

(We went to our room . We are getting ready to go out . Zia was busy searching on her phone for any bar we can go to .)

Zia: Found it ...but we will have to dress formal.

Mat: That's not a problem .

(I put on my red silk body hugging dress . It was knee long . I put on a black heel. I took my hand bag.

We asked a driver to take us there . We arrived.
When we were about to get in a bouncer stopped
us.)

Him: booking number.

Mat: What? What booking number.

Him: You book when you want to be in this bar .

Me: Okay can we book now .

Him: No ...but since you ladies are beautiful. You
can come in.

Me: Ohh ...thanks very much.

(So it was Zia, Mat and I. Addison and Tony went
out . We got in . It wasn't as full as I expected.
Everything looked so beautiful. Everyone was
wearing formal. We went and ordered three bottles
of wine and a vodka. So we were sitting at the bar
stools. The music was playing down. A soft music
was playing. This is boring hey . I miss the one we
usually go to. There would a dance circle and staff.
I decided to be busy on my phone .)

Mat: Lali ...that guy has been looking at you.

Me: Which one ?

Mat: The one in a black suit .

(I looked at him. Indeed our eyes met . I just turned back to Mat . He is a dark chocolate black guy . He is handsome I must say.)

Mat: Yhoo he's so handsome. Let's go to them

Me: What? Are you mad ...we don't even know them .

Mat: Come on Lali ...let's just have fun

Me: No we are not going to them .

Zia: Come on Lali ...They are three of them and we are three.

Me: God guys ...behave...we will seem like loose girls.

Mat: Whatever...Lali you're boring .

(I went back to my phone . I took a few pics and put it back to my bag . I turned at Mat and Zia they were no longer sitting next to me . These girls are trouble. When I was still searching for them. Someone tapped my shoulder. I looked at that person. It was

that same guy . He looked more cute . He was also smelling nice . He extended his hand)

Him: Can I dance with you .

(I kept looking everywhere for the girls . I saw them sitting with the guys who were with this guy)

Me: Erhmm ...Nah ...

Him: Come on .

(He put my hand on his shoulder . He was holding the other one . His other hand was grabbing my waist . He is a good dancer I must say . We danced while talking.)

Him: So what a beautiful diamond like you doing here .

(I chuckled)

Me: I came to have fun with my sisters .

Him: Mhh I see ... so what is your name diamond

(He twirled me and than grabbed me back to his chest . Our breaths met . I moved a bit from his body .)

Me: I'm Lali ...Lalimi.

(He chuckled)

Him: Lalimi ?

Me: Yeah ...it's a long story behind my name .

Him: I see .

Me: And you're Mr?

Him: I'm Khulekani ...you can call me Khule .

Me: Mhh nice to meet you Khulekani . So where are you from.

Khule: Let's go and sit there ...so we can talk.

(it was a table for two . He sat next to me .)

Khule : I'm from Capetown...and you?

Me: From Guateng.

Khule: I do have few businesses there .

(I just kept quiet.)

Khule: is there a guy in your life.

Me: Yeah...

Khule: He's lucky.

Me: And where's your girlfriend

Khule : Well dating is not my thing. It has been a year since I haven't been in a relationship.

Me: Why though ...because you look like a guy whose life is so determined and you're also handsome.

Khule: Well ...all my relationships do not end well ..

Me: I see ... I think it's time to go now .

Khule: Sure .

(I went to where Mat and Zia were . I greeted the guys)

Khule: These are my brothers.

Me: Nice to meet you guys ... Mat we have to go now ...

Mat : Nah Lali ...it's still early .

Me: No we have to go .

Zia: You can go ...they will drop us off at the hotel.

Me: Who is they exactly? You guys just met them .

Mat: Come on Lali ... We are just having fun .

(I can't leave them here . So I sat down . Khule sat next to me .)

Khule: Are you okay?

Me: Yeah.

(I was sipping my glass of wine . My phone rang it was Austin. I answered)

Me: Hello ...Hello

(I couldn't hear him clear as the music was now up and people were talking. I sent him a message and switched it off.)

Khule: Is everything alright

Me: Yeah ...that was my boyfriend.

Khule: Can I have your numbers .

Me: Mhh...I don't think it's necessary.

Khule: Come on ...I'm not asking you out . I just want your number.

(We both laughed. I gave him . So we were busy talking . It was now time to go . Mat an Zia were so drunk . So the guys decided to drop them off .)

Khule: Can I drop you off.

Me: Nah...don't worry I will call an uber .

Khule: I insist.

Me:like really don't worry.

(He opened the door for me)

Khule: Do I have to drag you to the car or you will walk by yourself.

(I just got in. I don't want to be embarrassed. He was driving a jeep . He played the music. It was Finesse by Bryson tiller.)

(He was singing along with it)

Khule: I want my baby to have your eyes...

(I was now in stitches. I mean the dude has a beautiful voice but he can't sing)

Khule: Do you have a problem with my singing miss.

Me: No ...no you're the best ...in fact you should become an artist.

(We both laughed. Finally arrived at the hotel .)

Me: Thanks .

Khule: Pleasure...hope to see you again .

Me: Bye ... (I went in . And went to our room. Zia and Mat were busy snoring . I took their clothes off and placed blankets on top of them . I took a quick bath and drifted to sleep.)

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:16] Lynne: insert 36

Lali's POV

Well I must say Mauritius was nice . I had a lot of fun with my family. It felt so relaxing and refreshing. For a couple of days I forgot about all my problems . We were now at home . We just got back but I feel

like I already miss Mauritius. With Khule we are just friends. He is a cool guy . He never even once asked me out. That's great. So Mat and I planned to go to the Oegrate tomorrow. Many days have passed . There's no time . So I was busy packing the clothes I will need . After I was done I went to dad in his study . He was busy on a video call. So I waited for him to finish. After what felt like an hour he finished.

Me: We just got back and you're already working .

Dad: Yeah hey ...did you guys enjoy at Mauritius.

Me: very much ... I miss it now .

(He chuckled)

Me: So I wanted to tell you that tomorrow I'm going somewhere. It has to do with me being a beast .

Dad: Okay ...

Me: I have found where other beasts live . So I need to be with them .

Dad: Okay ...I see. If there's something you will need please let me know.

Me: Okay ...

Dad: So when are you leaving ?

Me : Tomorrow morning. I'm going with Mat.

Dad: Lali you need to get a license. I know you can drive but ...you know.

Me: Yeah I know ...I will get it when I come back .

(That's a least of my problems.)

Me: please tell Kayla mom that I will be visiting Mat for a few days .

Dad: You too are very close ...I like that.

Me: Yeah ...she's kind and so sweet .

Dad: Yeah ...

Me: I have to go now .

(I went back to my room to sleep . I need to rest as I will be driving for long tomorrow. I set an early alarm than slept .)

Nomhle's POV

I know I wanted to kill Lali . But I'm starting to feel scared . I have never killed a person before. And Kiara and Mike are busy encouraging me to do it . So Lali blocked me I now can't get through to her . I have tried for a longest time to get to her . I can't even go to her father's house. The security is very tight. I need to come up with another plan to kill her. My mother and I were busy watching TV.

Her: What are you thinking about?

Me: Nothing important...I was just wondering if my baby was going to be a boy or girl.

(She just sighed)

Me: Mom if I may ask ...what would you do if someone caused you so much pain

Her: What do you mean exactly

Me: Like would you revenge ...

Her: Never ...I would just tell my lord than he can decide what to do to him/her. Dear do you remember that your stepdad used to abuse me so much . But I never plotted anything against him. All

I did was to pray . I prayed so hard that some day may I find peace. It seems my prayers were heard. Where is he now ? ...So dear prayer is the best weapon that no one can ever take from you . You just need to have faith and open up your chest to your lord . Worship him .

(I just nodded)

Her: I know Lali caused you so much pain. But pray ...pray to God that she receives the punishment for what she did to your innocent baby.

Me: I see ...

Lali's POV

I was woken up by an alarm. It was 4 o'clock. I woke up and took a quick bath. I put on my black cargo pant and white t shirt . I put on my sneakers and put my toiletries in my bag . I went to the kitchen and made a strawberry smoothie. I than drove to Mat's place . I got in she was already waiting for me .

(I laughed)

Me: Are we going to spend a whole month there?

Mat: Why are you asking?

Me: Two suitcases.

(I laughed even more her father joined me.)

Me: Anyway let's go...

(I helped her with one suit case. We were now on the road.)

Me: Let's buy takeaways from Steers. Just in case we get hungry on the way .

Mat: Sure .

(We bought them and snacks. She also bought 2 bottles of wine)

Me: I will not drink.

Mat: We will drink it there.

Odin's POV

Today I have a date with Zia . I don't really love her . So I went to her house and picked her up . We went to a very expensive restaurant. I pulled a chair for her . She sat down .

Me: You looking beautiful.

(She blushed)

Her: Thanks .

(The waiter made his way to us . We ordered. While waiting she was drinking wine and I was having a glass of scotch.)

Her: So what happened between you and Avani. Because I mean you too were love birds . You were always together.

Me: Well what I can tell you is . Not all relationships can last forever. And there are things that keep a relationship going. Like if you guys give one another time, unconditional love and support. When the relationship lacks all that . It becomes toxic. So what I can say is we were no longer clicking. We

were both ignoring each other.

Her: Mhh I see .

Me: So do you have a boyfriend or had one.

Her: Well with my past boyfriends . I wouldn't say we were in a relationship. We were just having fun.

Me: What would you say if I told you that I also want to have fun with you.

Her: F..fun?

Me: Yeah ...

Her: w..well

(Her face was a bit disappointed. I wonder what's she thought .)

Her: Well I wouldn't mind. You're a handsome guy. Any girl will want to have FUN! With you

(She shouted the fun part . People were now staring at us .)

Me: Are you okay.

(She fake smiled)

Her: Yeah ...Excuse me

(She went to the bathroom.)

Mike's POV

I was with my sister at the office.

Kiara: I have always knew that Nomhle is weak.
What's taking her this long to kill Lali.

Me: I trusted her ...it seems we have to do
something else that will make her want to kill Lali
right at this instance .

Kiara: Something like what?

Me: I'm not sure yet...but we need to harm her
mother. And make it look like it was Lali.

Kiara: How exactly...

Me: I don't know...but I will surely come up with a
strong plan.

Kiara: Okay ...I will wait... why can't we just kill Lali for ourselves.

Me: You saw what happened to dad. Do you also want to die that way

(She nodded no)

Me: It better to use Nomhle so it won't backfire to us.

Kiara: I see.

Austin's POV

I was busy thinking of how I'm going to tell Lali. She will be heartbroken. I mean we have just started dating now this happens. I decided to call her.

Me: Hey.

Her: Hello boyfriend.

Me: How are you

Her: I'm good and you

Me: I'm good too... Can I see you this evening.

Her: No ...I won't be able to.

Me: There's something important I want to discuss with you .

Her: Can't we discuss it through the phone

Me: No ...

Her: Sorry hey...I'm away from home. And I don't know when I will come back.

Me: Where are you exactly

Her: I have to hung up now...I'm driving..bye.

(She dropped it . I hit my head. Shit .)

Lali's POV

After a long ass tiring drive we finally arrived. The time was 17:30 . It was not yet very dark . We got out of the car . We made our way to the gate . It looked so old . It was even breaking. It wasn't

locked so we opened it and drove in. There were so many houses. They were in a bad state. No person can live in such house. They were also kids playing outside. There was a big triple story house . It looked so old and the paint was washed off. I parked the car and went to the kids.

Me: Hello .

(They just looked at me and ran to different houses . What? Mat made her way to me .)

Mat: Are you okay.

Me: Yeah... I'm just confused why ...

Mat: Lali !Lali !look ...let's run .

(I turned back. I have never seen so many people like this . Some started transforming.)

Mat: Lali let's run

Me: No I won't...you go back to the car .

Mat: no I won't leave you here.

(Three beasts made their way to us . It grabbed Mat

by her throat and threw her across the ground. It than made it way to me . It looked really angry . I kept moving back it was busy growling. I fell. From no way an old women made it way to it . She was using a stick to walk.)

(She shouted)

Her: SHE'S FINALLY HERE...SHE FOUND US...WE'RE SAVED.

(Everyone was now busy talking. They transformed back to their bodies. The one that was in front of me also transformed. It was a guy. He was busy looking at me like he want to eat me up . We went back to stand with others . But he never stopped looking at me . I went to Mat ...)

Me : Are you okay

Mat: Yeah...my back hurts a little and my throat.

Me: I'm very sorry friend.

(She smiled)

Mat : Don't apologize. We're in this together. Okay .

(I nodded. I helped her up)

Me: Please sit in the car.

Mat: No I won't...I will stand next to you.

Me: No ... what if they hurt you again. I will never be able to forgive myself.

Mat: Lali ...don't worry...nothing g will happen to me .

(We both went back to them .)

The old lady: SHE'S THE ADILA...SHE'S WHAT WE HAVE BEEN WAITING FOR . FOR ALL OUR LIVES. SHE'S HERE TO SAVE US .

(Some one spoke from the crowd)

" She came here with a wolf ... How can we trust her "

Me: No ...she's my friend. She's harmless.

(A women also spoke)

"And you ...how do you know that she's the Adila. She doesn't look like it . She's just a young girl who don't know what she wants in future. "

The old women: Never speak to the Adila like that .
My dear show them that you're the Adila.

(She was talking to me . I took a deep breath . I slowly transformed fully. I growled. They all growl . I transformed back to myself. They started talking to themselves. They than all bowed to me and started singing. Some went to their houses and brought instruments made . They started making noise.)

" Finally we're saved "

(That same guy kept giving me the most scary looks . He went away from the crowd.)

Me: I will be back .

(I followed him . He was moving very fast.)

Me: Wait .

(He stopped. I made my way to him)

Him: What do you want?

Me: Are you okay

Him: Why do you ask

Me: Because I want to know.

Him : Why now? Why after this long you decide to come now. You know we have all been living in fear and poverty. All creatures used to come here and do whatever they like. When we go to the city. They used to chase us out of it . Why ? Because we have no leader. Why did you come now . Heee.? To laugh at us and the condition we're living in .

Me: Well ...I just found out about this place . I didn't know such place existed. If...

Him: You know what you're wasting my time. Save your explanation for those people who are interested to it.

(We went away. I went back to everyone.)

Mat: Are you okay?

Me: Yeah...

(The old lady made her way to us. She bowed)

Me: Seriously granma... you don't have to bow to me everytime. You are old it must be very tiring to keep bowing.

(She just smiled)

Her: You're so kind my dear. Anyway bring your bags so you can go to the Indruig.

Me: If I may ask what's that?

Her: I will tell you on the way .

(We took our bags . Mat left one suitcase and took the other one . We were now going)

Her: So the Indruig is that house.

(She was pointing at that big triple story house that we saw .)

Her: Your great great great grandparents lived there. It is only for your family.

Me: It's so big though.

Her: Yeah...in those days your family was very big. Things changed when your mother moved to the city. Her sister being evil . Your family was split apart. Your grandmother died . So I was a close friend of her. She once told me that . As she dies they will be a baby girl born. To take care of this place . The Adila. She has different powers that no beast has ever had . I waited for you long time ago .

The day you were born . There was a very bad storm here. It broke most of the windows of the Indruig and destroyed it . That's because you were supposed to be given birth here. I was even starting to lose hope that you will ever come here. This place needs you more than ever . They want to finish us off . I'm glad you're here. You know we have been living very hard. You know here they are different people who schooled and went to universities. But they can't work in the city. We as beast we were prevented to go to the city by the leaders of different creatures. We had no say to that because we had no leader. No one was there to fight for us . We just kept quiet. But since you're now here . I hope we can regain our dignity and the strengths . You know them going to the city to learn was very difficult. They used to live in fear . They changed places . Atleast they finished. The problem is they can't work . But since you're here I know you will do something. Back in the days beasts were very respected. They were known of bravery and they never lost any fight that was formed against them .

Me: So how is the relationship between the beasts and wolves.

Her: Don't even go there. We are enemies and no one can change that. You know the Alpha used to send people here to abuse us . We hate them with passion. They are very evil .

(I swallowed hard)

Her: Dear even if you try to bring about peace. It will never work . People here hate them . They want nothing to do with them . That's why they wanted to hurt her .

Me: Mhh I see.

(We went in this house. I was very dirty . The walls had spider webs. There was no electricity. So she lit a candle. There was a big lounge. It had so many old couches. We then moved to the dining room. There was a very long table with so many chairs.)

Her: You see...They used to have all their meals here. All these chairs would be filled.

Me: What? But there are so many chairs here.

Her: I told you before. Your family was very big .
You know they were also servants who were treated
like the members of the family. Your grandmother
was very kind hey .

(We moved upstairs. They were so many steps .)

Her: I don't think I will make it to the top. I'm now old
. But you girls help me so I can show y'll everything.
I know we won't finish all bedrooms. They are just
much . But we can go where all the family belongs
are kept.

(We helped her. We finally reached the top. We
were all very tired . She was leading the way . She
tried to open the door but it was locked.)

Her: ...erhmm ...It's locked. I can't even remember
where all the keys were kept. But we can go to your
mom's bedroom.

(We made our way there. Luckily enough it was not
locked . We opened. There was a very big four
poster bed and it had curtains around it . It those
beds that have curtains around them . It looked very
genuine and strong. The old lady went and opened

the drawers and found an album.)

Her: Do you want to see the pictures of your mother.

Me: I would love to .

(We sat on the old dusty couch that is in here. She opened the album . It was first the pictures when she was young)

Her: You really took after her. You look like her. She was really beautiful and kindhearted like you. She loved peace.

(I kept looking. We finally reached the pictures when she was my age. She looked exactly like me . Even her smile . We flipped and there was pictures she was all grown up . Her face looks familiar. She's the lady that used to appear on my mirror. I don't know how to feel. All along I couldn't see that it was my mother.)

Her: ermmm...you guys can choose a room to sleep on . I'm going back to my house.

Me: What? No we can't sleep here. Only the both of us.

Her: Dear this is your home . It's the safest place you will ever be at .

(I looked at Mat)

Me: Will you be fine sleeping here with me .

Mat: What? You don't even need to ask me . I'm definitely sleeping here.

The old: now you girls help me with the stairs.

Me: sure.

(We helped her . We decided to look around this massive house)

Mat: it's so big .

(We were using our phones for light. We made our way to what looked like a kitchen. It was very big . It is also filled with furniture. Everything was placed accordingly. There is a cupboard for different types of glasses, Cups, plates, bowls etc. Yes the furniture is old but it's very strong and of high quality. We went to other rooms . Each room is triple my room back at home and it had two doors . Most of them have balconies)

Me: So where are we going to sleep.

Mat: I don't know. Shit ...we didn't even bring any blanket.

Me: let's go to mom's room. Maybe we will find something.

(We went there. And opened the wardrobe. There were so many clothes. Especially dresses. We found one blanket. It smelled so horrible. The thing about this house we haven't come across any rat . Which is strange usually the houses that were long not used would be filled with rats. Anyway we put on our pjs. I guess we will use our nightgowns as blankets. We used one one bedroom that was downstairs. I was a bit dirty but better than the other rooms . We removed the duvet from the bed and slept on it .)

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:16] Lynne: insert 37

Lali's POV

We were woken up by the noise outside. Okay what's happening.

Mat: Lali what's that.

Me: It's people's voices.

(We woke up put our gowns on. I went to the door. I put one door as they are two. My eyes widened. It was so many women. They had buckets full of water. They were even young girls. One lady bowed down and spoke)

Her: We came to clean .

(well I can't say no. The state of this house is very bad .)

Me: really? ...thank you very much .

Her: it our duty as your people to make sure you live in a healthy and clean environment.

Me: Thanks very much .

(I opened both doors for them . Mat mad I went to

the car to eat. After that we went back in. Luckily there is water in this house. It's just that the bath rooms are very dirty. So we used one shower. It wasn't clean but we had no choice but to use it as it is. After we were now we put on our clothes and went to help. One lady came to us)

Her: I'm sorry but we cannot allow you to work.

Me: Why

Her: You're are like our God. So we can't let you do all this work.

Me: don't worry dear. I want to .

Her: Like seriously I can't.

Me: ermm . Is there a nearest town

Her: There is but but it a bit far.

Me: okay.

(Mat and I made our way to the car . We need to buy a few things to clean and some paint. We drove there.it was very far but we finally got there. We made our way to a hardware. Luckily I brought my card here. We bought alot of paints and cleaning

supplies. I wanted to buy the vacuum cleaner but I can't since the electricity there is not working. We bought some groceries and two blankets. We need to fix the electricity so all the blankets there are washed. We bought so many cold drinks for the cleaning woman. We drove back. When we got there they were still busy. We gave them all the cleaning supplies. The painting will be done tomorrow. I called dad)

Him: Hey ...how are things going

Me: Well ...I have used alot of cash from the card sorry.

Him: Sorry for what...the money you have just used is nothing. You can spend it all if you want.

(I just laughed)

Him: How are you.

Me: I'm fine and you

Him: I'm fine...we're just missing you.

Me: I miss you guys too.

Him: I have to go now dear ...bye.

Me: Bye .

(We gave them cold drinks as it was very hot . That old lady who was with us yesterday. Made her way to us.)

Her: Did you girls sleep well.

Me: Yes we did.

Her: That's good.

(It was now very late . We went in .)

"We will finish tomorrow "

Me: Thank you very much .

"You don't need to thank us. We were doing what we were supposed to do. "

(They all went out . Everything looked new. It was even smelling fresh. We put all the groceries we

bought in the kitchen. We made our way upstairs. More rooms were cleaned. A few are left . We went back to the kitchen and made sandwiches for ourselves. We set at the dining table and ate.)

Mat: It's very big hey...it like a mall.

(we laughed)

Me: So when are you going to choose a room for yourself.

Mat: Ehmm ...I will eventually but now I want to share with you.

(We laughed)

Me: We need to get someone to fix the electricity.

Mat: Yeah ...dad know a few people who can help with that.

Me : That would great.

(She called her father .)

Austin's POV

I have been trying to call Lali's phone by it goes straight to voicemail. I even tried calling Mat but hers too is switched off. I was on my way to Nick's house. I made my way there. He was busy cooking. This one will never stop loving to cook. Well he's very good in cooking.

Nick: Hey lil bro.

Me: Hey .

(He first bumped)

Nick : Have you told Lali

Me: no I have been trying to call her but her phone is switched off.

Nick: I have also been trying to call Mat' hers is off too.

Me: I wonder where they are. Because last time I talked with Lali she said she can't see me as she's away from home.

(Nick kept quiet. He was now dishing. The food was very delicious.)

Me: I think you should teach me how to cook. This food is great.

Nick: Thanks ...Even if I teach you . You're very lazy .

(I chuckled)

Me: I was thinking of visiting mom and dad tomorrow. For a couple of day.

Nick: Mhh ...Why is everything okay

Me: Yeah...I just miss them .

Nick : mhh I see. I will go with you .

Me: That's even great.

Nick : Remember what I told you.

Me: Don't worry I will never tell anyone.

Nick: That's good.

Lali's POV

It has been two weeks since we have been here. I must say things are going well. We have also started with the training. I was teaching them what my mentor taught me. And I was also training them how to protect themselves from an enemy. Well I must say things are looking very good. The women are more determined. Well Taylor still hates me. That guy who almost hurt me the first day I got here. Even during training he gives me attitude. But anyway I'm not going to entertain him. Few ladies volunteered to her at the Indruig. Well they do all the chores and cooking. I wish I could rebuild all the houses here. I can't finish dad's money. I haven't told them yet about the coming war. But I will eventually tell them when I'm going back home. I will come back here the day before the war. Well I now call that old lady granny. She's always there for me. She makes sure my stay here is good and I'm treated well. Well the electricity was now fine. So I charged my phone. I switched it on. Missed calls from Austin started flooding. I will call him after the training. We usually start early in the morning and take a break. We were now continuing

the break was finished. We finished training it was already dark outside. Well Mat was in the house . So I took a long bath and put on my pjs . I went downstairs and the food was already prepared. We ate .

Mat: I was talking to Nick . He said I must tell you to call Austin when you're available.

Me: I hope you didn't tell him our whereabouts.

Mat: I didn't. You know the guy from Mauritius have been calling me . Well he wants to have meet me .

Me: what? What did you say to him

Mat: I told him whatever that was happening back there . We were just having fun. I told him I have a boyfriend.

Me: That's good .

Mat: You know Lali ... I like having fun but I love Nick so much . And I want to spend rest of my life with him. So I wouldn't want a guy from nowhere to destroy my relationship with him .

Me: That's good. Khule and I are just friends. He

knows that I have a boyfriend. And not even once he has asked me to be his more than just a friend. He's a nice guy .

Mat: That's great . I want to see Austin and you getting married.

(I just smiled. I decided to call him)

Me: Hello.

Him: Hi ...

Me: How are you

Him: I'm good .

Me: okay...

Him: Are you going to tell me where Mat and you are or not

Me: Okay what's with the tone ... are you okay.

Him:just answer the damn question.

Me: Well we are having a mini vacation.

Him: Where

Me: I can't tell you. You want to come and destroy it .
No I won't tell you.

(I don't feel like telling him about this whole thing.
Who knows he might tell his dad that we're getting
ready for the war . I can't afford to fail my people .)

Him: when are you coming back

Me: Soon . I have to go now .

(Mat and I went to sleep .)

Kayla's POV

Well Kane told me that Lali is at Mat's house. Well I kinda miss her . My baby is growing very fast . The more he grows the more I'm not having my sleep every night. Well I always to feed him in the middle of the night. So today Kane ,my baby and I are eating out . We went to Wimpy. We ordered our burgers and started eating . The baby was sitting on the table. He was busy speaking his foreign

language.

Him: So have you started preparing for the wedding.

Me: Not really...but I will hire a wedding planner.

Him: Mhh I see. I can't wait to finally call you Mrs Kane.

Me: Me too ...I can't wait to be Mrs Kane.

(He held my hand.)

Him: Eversince you came into our home . Things have been going smooth. The kids are very happy . I truly appreciate you . I believe God sent you . To finally rebuild my family. Before you came. We weren't paying any attention to one another. There were problems after problems. I really appreciate you.

Me: I love you. .

Him: I love you too. So from your family . Who will be coming for the wedding.

(I drank water as I choke)

Me: Well...I...I only have two siblings. My sister of

which we don't get along. My brother. Is just all over the world . It's very hard to get to him .

Him: I see. Any aunt or uncle.

Me: well ...we don't really get along ...

Him: okay...

(I hope he buys what I'm telling him. If I tell my family about this wedding. They will call it off. Since I'm already married . My husband didn't sign the divorce papers.)

Austin's POV

Nick and I were now back in the city. To be honest I'm starting to think Mat and Lali are out there busy cheating on us. Why would they not tell us their whereabouts. I was at Nick's house. We were just having drinks . Ondreaz walked in .

Nick : hey bro .(He looked at me) Well I wasn't

expecting to see you.

Ondreaz: No I just came to check up on you .

Nick: Mhh I see.

Ondreaz: And you Austin when are you telling dad about Lali .

Me: We...well...I won't. It's not like we're having something serious. Anyway I'm not going to marry her.

(I looked at Nick .)

Ondreaz: Mhh I see...is there something you guys are hiding from me .

Nick: No ...why would we hide some from you big bro .

Ondreaz: You guys look suspicious of something.

Me: Nah. ..

Ondreaz: It's good that You and Lali are not in a serious relationship. Or else I would have told dad.

Me: Nahh... we are just having fun nithi much.

Ondreaz: I see ...will you guys be at the war.

Nick: Obvious...we will be there . Since dad won't be

.

Ondreaz: Okay ...I should get going .

Me: Bye.

(He left. After we heard his car drives off. We took deep breaths.)

Nick : You brother... why he's like this exactly?

(I just shrugged my shoulders.)

Nick : He likes behaving like dad. I'm glad he was not chosen to be the next Alpha .

Me: Yeah ...eventhough I don't really want to be it .

Nick: You have no choice.

Me: Yeah I guess.

Mrs Kane's POV

I have been trying to get to Kayla's husband. I have

paid so many people to give me a clear information about him . They all come back with the same answer. "Boss lady you mustn't mess with him. He's somebody you wouldn't mess with. If you do chances of living are very little. " So today I'm meeting someone else. I hope he will tell me a different story. I gave him the location we will meet at . It was some street that is not busy . I don't want people to see me . He parked his car behind my car . He got in .

Me: I hope you have something useful I can use .
You're my last hope.

"Him: Well madam I must warn you first. He is a dangerous men . He can wipe all your family if you mess with him .

(I just rolled my eyes)

Me: Who is he exactly...

Him: Well his Identity is hidden . He is very respected . When it comes to killing. He has no messy . And I mean it. I have tried to hack his

accounts but everything is protected by very powerful resources. Madam I think whatever you need him for you should just let go . Before things turn hectic . I'm sure since you have sent so many people to find information of him. He's already searching. And madam I won't take your money. I don't want to be involved in all this.

Me: No take it ...it's fine you will need it.

Him: Madam when things backfire...don't even mention my name . I have a little baby to take care off and a family to support.

Me: Okay ...don't worry...

Him: Bye... And madam stop with this . Because storm will come and you won't like it .

Me: Bye...

(I drove back home . Who is he ? Why is everyone scared of him. Why would Kayla attract such men. I won't stop until I find him. It's not like I have anything against him. I just want to tell him that he need to come and get his wife that's all. I went to the kitchen and poured myself a glass of wine .)

Please like and comment

We will continue tomorrow

[06/23, 08:17] Lynne: insert 38

Lali's POV

It has been few days since I came back from the Drugiomin. Today I will driving back since the war was said to occur tomorrow. To be honest i haven't been feeling well lately even now. I feel like I will fail my people. I feel like my powers will fail me . I feel like something bad will happen during the war. I just hope this war won't be the end of me . Mat is at the Oegrate she's keeping her eyes on what's happening there so she can update me . So I'm busy packing my clothes when a call from Austin came through.

Me: Hello babe.

(He cleared his throat)

Him: Hey Lali ...how are you

Me: I'm good and you

Him : I'm good.

Me: you don't sound good though.

(He sounds like there's something bothering him . I can also feel that there's something weighing him up.)

Him: Can you please come over to my house...

Me: Erhmm...As much as I want to see you . But I'm afraid i won't be able to. I have to go somewhere.

Him: There's something important i need to discuss with you

Me: Can't we discuss it through the phone

Him : No ... Please Lali ...

Me: I'm really sorry but I can't.

Him: If you really value our relationship and my love for you . You will come.

Me: But...

(tititi...he dropped it. What's with him. Does he know what he is doing is also affecting me ? . Maybe I have been too ignorant towards him. Maybe I haven't been giving him much of my time as my boyfriend. Maybe when I was busy fixing my people I was pushing him away. The least I could do is to see him now . I took my bag , phone and car keys . From Austin's place I will drive straight to the Drugiomin. I drove to his place and parked my car outside as I won't be staying for long . I opened the door as it was not locked . There he was looking all handsome. He made his way to me . His cologne hit my nostrils . He placed his hand on my waist while the other one was cupping my face . He started kissing me so gently. I didn't realize that I missed him this much. I returned the kiss and placed my hand on the back of his head. We kissed for sometime until he broke it . He held me by my hand and took me to the dinning room.

There was a mini dinner setup. He pulled a chair for me . Something is off about him but I just can't seem to see through his eyes and soul. When I look him deep into his eyes I just find nothing. That's strange.)

Him: Have a glass of wine while we're still waiting for the food .

(He wasn't even looking at me . I took a sip of the wine . I gulped it all down. He offered me a second glass. Two glasses of wine won't make me tipsy. I will be able to drive. I was halfway to finish the second glass. My head started feeling heavy. When I looked around everything was doubled . A message came through . I couldn't even see where it was from. I held my head)

Me: I think I should get going.

Austin: Sure

(I tried to stand up but my legs were failing me . I balanced myself with the table. Before I could even take an inch away from the table. I felt my whole body failing me . I collapsed.)

Austin's POV

Before she could even hit the floor i held her . I carried her to my bedroom. I carefully placed her on the bed . I took her jean off from her lower body and put her my sweatpant. I covered her with a blanket and kissed her forehead. I held her hand .

Me: I'm sorry babe I had to spike your bottle of wine . I wanted to make sure you're safe . I don't want you to be part of what will be happening there . So many people will lose their lives while those who will survive will be imprisoned for eternity. So by doing all this I'm doing my duty as your chosen one to protect you. I know you couldn't see through me . I had to use the spell my grandmother taught me . But when all of this is over . I will tell you everything. I love you.

(I kissed her one more time and put her phone on the drawer. I locked the door and drove to the Oegrate as we will all meet there)

Narrated

Meanwhile people at the Drugiomin were just sitting all together busy worrying about Lali. They don't know that the wolves are actually coming tonight. They are all just worried about Lali who hasn't arrived yet. Without Lali they're doomed . Lali is the missing puzzle to their freedom ,living happily and regaining their dignity. People were even starting to talk. The old lady would defend Lali. One woman rose up and spoke...

The lady: Where is she ? We have been waiting for her since morning. She promised us that by today she will be with us here.

The old women: She's on her way I'm sure of that .
You just need to be patient.

(As they were busy talking they heard a growl of a
wolf.)

The ladies: They're here ...

(Tayler smirked)

The lady: Where is she ...she promised to fight this
war with us where is she now ...

Tayler: She deceived us . She wants to get rid of us .
She knew that the wolves were coming today that's
why she didn't bother to come . She's friends with
the wolves. Do all of you remember the girl she was
with ...she was a wolf.

(People started talking to themselves.)

The old lady:stop speaking like that about our great

Adila. I'm sure she didn't know that they were coming today.

(A women spoke from the crowd)

" How many times are you going to defend her... where is she right now ? Answer us . "

(People started talking)

" Yes where is she"

Tayler: These people from the Indruig do not have humanity. They never cared for other people. Even past years. My father told me how The Adila's grandfather would treat the people of the Drugiomin. I know all the females were nice and all . But their husbands , brothers and fathers. Were evil . My father died...(He cleared his throat.) ermmm what I mean is we can do it without her . We don't need all these mighty people.

(The growls were now more and the sound was closer . The women and children were told to stay in their houses . The beasts were also getting ready.

They started transforming. As the wolves made their way to the Drugiomin they broke the gate and made their way in. They started fighting. What's strange about all this is that instead of Ondreaz and fighting the beasts he was busy attacking the other wolves. As everyone was busy fighting Tayler and Ondreaz transformed back to their bodies . They made their way behind a house)

Ondreaz: Where is she?

Tayler: Mhh ...well ...s..she's not here...

Ondreaz: What do you mean she's not here...

Tayler: Well... she didn't pitch up...

Ondreaz: Shit shit shit...

(He was hitting his head .)

Ondreaz: I gave you a small task but you couldn't do it . What now he?

Tayler: I promise you ...when I find her ...I will kill her.

(Ondreaz set down for some time . He than stood up and made his way to Tayler. He straggled him

so hard that he was moving like an earthworm. He was now coughing)

Tayler: P...ple...please stop...

(He let go of him)

Ondreaz: Here is what you're going to do . You go back there and kill my little brother. Make sure you leave him dead. You need to be quick as the sun will now rise .

(Tayler nodded)

Ondreaz: And you better do this task right . Or else I won't hesitate to kill you.

(As they were going Ondreaz stopped)

Tayler: What's up?

Ondreaz: I smell a vampire.

Tayler: They're no vampires here.

(They both transformed back . There were more beasts now dead as the wolves were so many . A few of them were still fighting. Austin was busy fighting when sharp fangs dug deep on his throat

from behind. He tried to move but they were too deep . He finally managed to get on top of Tayler's beast . When he was about to bite it neck . Another fangs attacked him exactly where he's wounded. The fangs that finished him off were not of a beast . They belonged to a wolf . Austin transformed back. He became unconscious same time . The beasts that were left accepted defeat. The dead beasts were burnt. The women and children were forced to make their way to the Oegrate. Austin was taken to the Oegrate instead of the hospital. They believe that he will get help there .)

Lali's POV

I was woken up by a severe pain on my neck . I tried to sit up but couldn't the pain was extreme. I touched my neck. I had wounds . I started panicking. I went to the mirror. And yes I was wounded and had fangs on my neck. I remembered what I was told that I will also experience the same thing my

chosen one is experiencing. The least I can do is to remain strong for Austin. If I also allow this pain to overcome me . We can both die. I tried to open the door but it was locked . Fuck . Why did Austin do this . Why ? Is he working with his dad. I started looking for the key everywhere. I don't have strength to break this door. In one of the drawers I found my cellphone. There were alot of missed calls from Mat . I tried to call her but her phone is off. I finally found a spare key. I took the first aid kit and started bandaging my neck. I took my car keys and drove to the Oegrate. I kept trying Mat's number. As I was driving a black car started following me . When I turn it also does . I drove to a very quiet street. I parked my car and waited for it. When it parked I got out and went to it . I started knocking on it window.)

Me: What's wrong with you ...why are you following me ...

(As i was still busy talking Nomhle got out of it . She was carrying a gun. She pointed it exactly at me . I just laughed)

Me: Ohh ...Hello to you too Miss Khumalo... Long time no see hey...

Nomhle: I think you should use this opportunity to call all your family members and say your last goodbye to them ...bec...

(Just before she could continue. I busted out into laughter)

Me: Ohh please stop ...I can't breathe anymore.

Nomhle: I see you think I'm joking

(She started moving slowly to me)

Me : Okay ...jokes aside ... Nomhle I'm in alot of pain right now and in hurry. So I have to go . I will vis it you some other day for your jokes.

(I started walking)

Nomhle: Stop or else I will shoot you ...

Me: ohh please Nomhle . I know you're weak. So stop wasting my time .

Nomhle: Lali I will shoot you.

Me: okay than shoot me

(I made my way to her. She was shaking. Mxm. I'm really worried about the people from the Drugiomin and this bitch is busy wasting my time . I left her there and went to the car . I drove off. I arrived at the Drugiomin. The gate was broken . I got out of the car. Suddenly I felt my tears build. The ground was covered by blood. There was also fire . I made my way to it . It was smelling like a burning skin. I held my mouth. I started shouting for everyone. There was no response. I went to each and every house but still . I ran to the Indruig and went to mom's bedroom. I have never cried like this . I failed them and it's all because of Austin.

Please like and comment

Hey guys I'm back. I'm feeling much better now . We shall continue with our story. Thanks for the speedy recovery comments and messages

[06/23, 08:17] Lynne: insert 39

Lali's POV

As I was busy sleeping I was having a nightmare. An old woman was strangling me to death. I was now slowly losing my breath. A lady spoke.

"Mom...mom please stop. Stop mom I beg you. You will kill her. You will kill my baby stop "

The woman who was strangling me said,"She deserves to die. She failed her people. She doesn't deserve all the powers that were given to her. "

An old man spoke,"ohh please. Are you really going to kill your granddaughter for the ungrateful people of the Drugiomin. They deserve everything happening to them. "

(I woke up sweating. The pain I was feeling on my neck was now very extreme. I held my neck . It was bleeding. Damn you Austin. If you didn't act stupid we wouldn't be here . Mxm. I stood up and changed the bandage . I went downstairs. Before I could even get off the last step something sent me across the steps. I hit my back very bad . What's going. Does it have to do with the dream I had . While I was trying to get up the same old lady from the dream came . She was carrying a very shining stick that had a head of a beast . She pointed it at me suddenly my body shook. My whole body was now hurting. I tried to use my powers but they didn't work . What's going on ? Before she pointed her stick again to me a figure blocked her . She disappeared. I was now breathing heavily. I slowly stood up and went to drink water. I took the car keys and drove back home. If I stay any longer here that old woman I assume is my late grandmother will kill me . I know it's my fault that everyone from the Drugiomin is dead. I just wish I can fix all this and bring them back. I got home . Everyone was still asleep. I made my way to my bedroom. I took a

quick bath and slept . As if I will get an peace . This women keep haunting me on my dreams.

" mom can you leave my baby alone please. She's still young for all of this "

(Grandma spoke)

" we need to take all the Adila powers from her. She doesn't deserve them."

(Old man spoke"

" what do you mean by that . You know exactly that being an Adila runs through her veins . You can't do anything "

I spoke,"b...but it was n't my intention for things to go this way. I..."

(Grandma spoke)

"Oh please save it "

I spoke,"is there a way I can fix all of this "

(Grandpa spoke)

"Dear...some are still alive. They were taken captive by the wolves "

(Suddenly I felt someone shaking me. I slowly opened my eyes it was Kayla mom. I slowly set up straight)

Kayla: Are you okay?

(I nodded yes)

Kayla: my dear what happened to your neck

(I just kept quiet. I don't want to freak her out .)

Kayla: Emm...I understand. Get ready so I can take you to the doctor.

(I nodded. I got up and took a bath. After I was done I put on my Nike tracksuits and sneakers. I went downstairs. They were having breakfast. I set down . They were all busy staring at me)

Tony: LAli are you fine?

(I just nodded)

Tony: what happened to your neck? (He was busy looking at so deeply) Where were you yesterday.

Me: Ermm...w...well I was at Mat's place .

Tony: Mhh... I understand.

(I know he's not buying it . We finished eating. Kayla and I were now on the way to see the doctor. We arrived and got attended immediately. The doctor was busy cleaning the wound.)

Doc: Were you bitten by a wild dog or something?

Me: Erm...well(I looked at Kayla) arm...

Doc: I'm asking so I can give you the injection to make sure that the wound heals fast .

Me: Can I just have a pill or an injection for pains for now .

Doc: Okay ...but...

(I just raised both my hands to make him keep quiet. He prescribed a few tablets and things to wash my wound with . We drove to Macdonald and bought takeaways. We went back home. I went straight to my room and locked myself in. I decided to call Mat . This time around it rang answered. I tried several times until she answered.)

Me: Hello .

Mat: Hey ...Lali where are you ?

Me: I'm at home ...

Mat: Okay I'm on my way there. Things are not okay

.

Me:okay cool .

(After some time she arrived. The first thing she did was to hug me .)

Mat: Hey ...how are you

Me: I don't know hey ... How is Austin

Mat: Eversince he came . He has been unconscious.

Me: What? Aren't he supposed to be up by now .

Mat: Strange things are happening back at the Oegrate. But don't worry about him. Nick is making sure he recovers. Where were you on the day of the war

Me: Well ...what I remember is ...I went to Austin's house. We had dinner after that nothing. The next day I woke up in his bedroom and the door was locked . I'm sure he's the one who did it.

Mat: yeah ...I'm sure he has a valid reason for doing that.

Me: Is he and the Alpha working together

Mat: no ...Austin would never.

Me: I need to rescue my people. I need to get them from the Oegrade.

Mat: It's going to be very hard . Everything is just hectic there. The Alpha is busy looking for a wolf that attacked Austin?

Me: A wolf? How come

Mat: I know it's strange right but indeed he was finished by a wolf. And we're all curious to know who would dare try to kill the next Alpha...

Me: mhh I see. Is there a way I can get into the Oegrade...

Mat: There's no way ... you won't make it out alive ...

Me: you think so

(She nodded)

Me: How about we use Austin as a bait

Mat: What?

Me: Yeah ...we can pretend to hold him a hostage . We will than tell the Alpha to release my people to get his son .

Mat: That's a good plan but it's also dangerous. The Alpha is very dangerous. He is not easily fooled. And how are we going to get Austin out of that place?

Me: Nick...Nick will help us...

Mat: I will call him . He has a good heart. I'm sure he will agree to help us. When I get home I will call him and let you know what he said .

Me: Thank you very much Mat ...

Mat: How are the pains ?

Me: They're better now ...

Mat: Please remain strong for Austin. You need to have strength so that he can also pull through. If you also accept the pain . You guys can end up dead. If one dies the other one won't survive. You're the positive side in him. Remain strong. I have to go now bye.

Me: Bye ...

Nomhle's POV

I locked myself in my bedroom. Mom was busy knocking on the door for me to open . I was crying and destroying. I was beyond angry and broken. I don't know why I'm this weak. I finally got the opportunity to kill Lali but I didn't. She caused me so much pain. The scar of losing my first baby before I could even touch it will forever be on my heart .

Mom: Nomhle dear open up ...you will hurt yourself

Me: No ...no ... mom I won't open . If hurting myself will bring closer to my heart . Than I will .

Mom: Dear please open so we can talk

Me: no mom...you're busy standing there pretending to care for me.

Mom: I do ...alot sweety.

Me: if you do than why aren't you helping me get rid of Lali... she killed my unborn baby. She deserves to die.

Mom: Don't speak like that my dear. The bible says...

Me: Ohh please mom ...spare me with the verses.
Right now they mean nothing to me.

Mom: no dear...

Me: Yes ... (I wiped my tears.) I think I should just
kill myself. So that I can be with my baby.
Peacefully.

(She started crying)

Mom: no ..no please don't speak like that dear .

(There was a total silence. After some time mom
spoke.)

Mom: okay ...fine . I will help you kill Lali. If that will
make you happy.

Me: Stop lying please. I know you can't even kill a
fly . Stop fooling me .

Mom: Okay I may not do it myself. I will hire people
to kill her. I don't want her blood in our hands .

(I opened the door . She got in . She hugged me)

Mom: If killing Lali will make you happy. Than I will

get people to kill her . Your happiness comes first dear .

Me: Thank you mom ...

(She sighed)

Mom: I need to make a few contacts dear . I will be back

(She stood up and went out of my room. I closed the and smiled . That's was my plan . I need to let Mike and Kiara know that mom is on our side. One silly day I somehow overheard them talking about killing my mother. So I had to make sure that she supports the idea of killing Lali . I don't want to lose her just for Lali . So I texted Kiara everything.)

Tony's POV

So my uncle and I went to the Drugiomin. Things were very hectic. We couldn't even see the Adila. But I overheard some people talking. One said she's not here . I assume they were talking about the

Adila. I heard everything they were talking about .
When I was going away I heard Austin's name being
mentioned. Lali's boyfriend. I couldn't recognize
their voices nor see their faces as it was very dark.
All I know is Austin has a really great enemy. And I
think those people are also responsible for the
wounds Lali has on her neck. I think I need to talk to
her. I need to warn her about Austin about having
enemies . Her life could be in danger. I know how all
of these people work. They harm the one you love
to get to you . I still don't know the Adila. I wonder
why it didn't come to help it people. Maybe she is a
coward. That will make it even easy for me to kill
her . So I decided to go into Lali's bedroom to talk to
her . I knocked no response. I decided to budge in .
She was busy on her phone. I sat next to her in bed .

Me: Hey...

(She kept quiet)

Me: How are you?

(She just shrugged her shoulders)

Me: Does it hurt so much?

Her: What?

Me: The neck

Her: it's better now...

Me: What happened?

Her: Ermm ...Nothing.

(I placed my hand on her chin and made her face me)

Me: You know you can talk to me right?

(She sighed and nodded)

Me: So please talk.

Her: I don't think I want to talk about it now .

Me: I know that Austin's enemies were responsible for your attack. I know they did that to get to him

Her: What? Enemies? What are you talking about exactly?

Me: Lali do you remember when I told you about being a vampire.

(She nodded)

Me: I also told you that they're wolves,beasts and other creatures...

(She nodded)

Me: So basically there was a war between the wolves and beasts. I was also there for my own business.

Her: What business?

Me: Well I was looking for someone. The Adila. Her and I have an unfinished business to complete.

(She raised her eyebrow)

Me: So when the war was still going on. I heard two men talking. They were looking for the Adila. I think their plan was ...they wanted to kill it . By some reasons the Adila did not pitch up. I decided to leave as there was nothing left for me there. But when I was moving away. I heard Austin's name being mentioned. I tried to listen closer but I couldn't hear a thing. And one was starting to smell my blood so I ran away. My point is ...I think you

need to stay away from Austin . For your own safety.

Her: Ermm ...Tony can you please leave me ...I need to rest .

Me: but...

Her: please.

(I went back to my bedroom.)

Lali's POV

As soon as Tony left my bedroom I called Mat . I think Tony might be useful to my plan . I need to find out who attacked Austin and why would he .

Mat: I was just about to call you. I spoke to Nick. He said that can never be possible. Everyone has their eyes on Austin. They're only three people allowed to see him. It's his mother , dad and Nick. Nick had to beg to see him . So it's very hard . They think the enemy could be near.

Me: Mmh I see. (I told her everything Tony told me .) I'm thinking of telling him about me being a beast

Mat: What? No ...you can't ...

Me: I have to. I will really use his help. At this point I'm very hopeless.

Mat: But you can't tell him that you're the Adila.

Me: I'm thinking of telling him everything. I will also show him the truth. What really matters happened to his dad. I know I have never used that power . I was told it requires alot of energy but I will have to use it . It's for the best...

Mat: Are you sure it's going to work

Me: Yeah

Please like and comment

For the coming days I will only be able to post one insert a day. I'm busy applying .

[06/23, 08:17] Lynne: insert 40

Mrs Khumalo's POV

I never thought in my life I would ever plot someone's death. I have always put everything on God. During hardships I encountered. I used to leave everything to the one above . I have always loved my daughter. But it seems she can't see that I care very much about her . She used to think I loved Lali more than her . Whereas I loved her the most. Maybe i haven't been showing her enough love she deserves. I was at my office. Today I will be meeting with the people who are going to kill Lali. They made their way in .

" Good day madam "

(I cleared my throat)

Me: Hello ... (I opened my drawer and took out Lali's photo .) Here is a picture of her .

(One came to me and took it)

"She looks young. It won't be difficult to kill her"

Me: I first want y'll to bring her to me . I want to have a few words with her . Before you guys can kill her.

(They nodded)

" So when must we bring her to you"

Me: Tomorrow...tomorrow will be her last day on the earth.

"The money?"

Me: I will transfer deposit on your account

"Okay ...thank you . "

(They left . I would do anything for my daughter's happiness . Even if it means jumping off the cliff. I would. If my daughter's life will be filled with happiness . I went to my bedroom. I locked the door and took my bible .I knelt down and closed my eyes.)

Me: Father I come to you as I'm in need of your guidance. I know what I'm planning to do is a sin. I'm desperate my lord .Please God forgive me. I'm

only doing it for my daughter. I love her so much and I can't bare to see her broken. I want to make sure that she's always happy . As it is my duty as her mother to make sure that I remove any thing that comes her way .

(I was disturbed by a hand tapping my shoulder. I opened my eyes and stood up . It was Nomhle)

Nomhle: Sorry to disturb you mom...but they're here...

Me: ohh k...I'm coming. Make them something to eat.

(Well today I'm meeting Nomhle's boyfriend. I want to see what kind of a men he is . And if I can trust him with my daughter. He also came so we can discuss about killing Lali. Well I just need to tell him that tomorrow Lali will be killed. I went downstairs. He was drinking juice. He stood up and greeted)

Him: Hello ...Mike.

Me: Nice to meet you Mike...

(He sat down. We started talking. I must say he's a

nice guy . But there's something uncertain about him. But anyway as long as Nomhle is happy I'm happy. We discussed everything. I also told him about what will happen tomorrow. Well he was very happy. He was overwhelmed. I think it's beyond the fact that Lali killed their baby . The way he was happy. You would swear he just won a lottery.)

Mike: Well ...I must go now .

Me: It's still early though. Don't you want to stay for dinner

Mike: I'm sorry but I really need to go ...

(He stood up . Nomhle walked him out . I went to the kitchen to start preparing food .)

Ondreaz POV

Well I was in the city at my house . Tayler and I were having drinks .

Me: Things are not going according to my plan . I thought by now I would be the Alpha. I would be in charge of everything.

(Tayler sighed)

T: I also thought by now I would be the one leading the Drugiomin ...

Me: I think I need to go back to the Oegrate . And finish Austin off. Than I will only be left with killing Father .

T: I think we should just lay low for now . I'm sure everyone back there is alert. They're busy looking for someone who tried to kill Austin...

Me: Yeah ...I think you're right .

T: my only problem right now is ...I need to fight that girl Lali. I have a feeling that she will ruin my plan...

Me: She's not a threat... We can kill her with just one go .

T: Don't underestimate her. After all she's the Adila. Very powerful.

Me: Mxm...she can take her powers and fuck

herself. Because no one and I mean no one can defeat me . Not even my own brother. It seems you have forgotten that I also have powers . I know spells that can make her weak .

T: I know all that ...but you know that the Adila was destined to rule the world. She's very powerful and I mean nothing can ever defeat her.

Me: That's why we should use her weakness . Of which is love. Her love for Austin. Nick and Austin think I don't know that Lali is Austin's chosen. I saw that the day I layed my eyes on her the day she was being sacrificed for .

(As we were busy talking my wife walked in. She cleared her throat)

Her: Food is ready.

Me: Thanks we're coming.

Lali's POV

We were busy having dinner . Well the whole day I

have been trying to talk to Tony. But he was very busy with whatever I don't know. But when I get time I will eventually talk to him. I need to show him the truth. I won't be able to help my people alone . Well and Mat. We also need someone who's strong.

Kayla: Lali dear have you decided on what you will study next year...

(Oh I still have that)

Me: Well ...not really. I have been very busy lately...

Mrs K: With what exactly...

(I just looked at her. I see she has given up at acting. She is now the Mrs Kane I know. She's now showing the first impression I had of her when I first came here.)

Kayla: And you Tony...

Tony: I think I want to do Medicine...

(Dad cleared his throat. Well we all swallowed and looked at him. We know exactly what he's going to say . " I want my children to run my businesses. ")

Dad: Why are you all quiet and looking at me . (We kept quiet and continued to look at him) Well we do need a family doctor. Someone we can rely on . So Tony my boy you can do medicine.

(We all took deep breaths and laughed afterwards)

Zayn: Wow dad...we really didn't expect that.

Kayla: And you Lali ...you need to decide quick.

Me: Well on my application form my first choice was medicine. I think I will stick with it.

Tony: Wow that's great. We can both open a surgery. And name it The wealthy Kanes .

(We laughed)

Me: That's dramatic...

Kayla: Sure is ... Well your dad and I have decided to get married. But next year . We're still preparing.

Dad: I wanted something small. But your mom here Lali wants a grand wedding .

Kayla: And you girls will be my brides maid. And Lali ...you will be my matron of honor .

Me: really? (She nodded) Wow ..thanks .

Mrs K: Well... sister wife aren't your family members coming?

Kayla: W.. well...no...it's...

Mrs K: mhhh I see... you don't need to explain anything. I know.

(That was kinda awkward. Kayla mom's facial expression changed Immediately.)

Kayla: ermmm...good night guys .

Me: Night !

(Everyone was now going to their rooms.)

Me: Hey Tony ...can I talk to you...it's important.

(He yawned)

Tony: Tomorrow Lali...I'm very tired.

Me: Please...

Tony: Nah...I'm sorry. Please come early in the morning.

Me: okay.

(I went upstairs to my room . I went to the bathroom to brush my teeth. As I was busy suddenly the lights started going on and off. I looked at the mirror. I saw myself...it wasn't really clear. When I try to look carefully it would fade away. I tried to look again. I was in a place I don't and I was in a beast form busy ripping some man's throat. It wasn't really clear . After that my mom appeared on the mirror.)

"I'm sorry dear... mom is really angry . She doesn't want to show you anything. But don't worry dear . It's something you shouldn't worry about. "

(Before I could even talk she disappeared. Everything went back to normal. I finished brushing my teeth and went straight to bed . Well I had something important to discuss with mom. I wanted to ask if telling Tony the truth is a good or bad I dea. But anyway it doesn't matter. I have decided to tell him . Things are very hectic. When

people who are supposed to guide and help you are against you. I must have really triggered grandmother's anger. Can't she just forgive and forget. Her not showing me when I'm in danger is really being unfair. She's overreacting now. Anyways I drifted off to sleep.)

It was now in the morning

Nick's POV

They has been no change on Austin. Her wounds are now healing but he's still unconscious. Things are very hectic here. Dad and I have been busy looking for the wolf that tried to kill him. But new have no luck . Everyone is keeping an eye on Austin. They're making sure he's safe . As we yet don't know the enemy. With the people from the Drugiomin. It's really sad hey. But what can we do . We can't go against the orders of the Alpha. I wish I can help Lali with her plan . But I can't. The office

had been calling me . I just can't leave my brother in this situation. Since the day of the war Ondreaz hasn't came here. I know he values his work . And puts everything on hold for his business. But he could have atleast came to see Austin. As our younger brother. Anyway I decided to call Mat. Things between her and I are looking promising. I love her so much. We haven't been sexually intimate. So I don't know yet if she's my chosen one .

Me: Hey my heart

Mat: How are you love

Me: . Austin's condition is really weighing me down. But either than that I'm fine . How are you

Mat: I'm well ...just worried about Lali.

Me: I'm listening

Mat: Well Lali is an ...

(She paused for some time)

Mat: Erhm...em...nothing . I'm just ...erm I have to

go now . I love you bye.

(Before I could even reply she hanged up . I wonder what she was going to say about Lali.)

Lali's POV

Well today I woke up craving for blood . I haven't even came into contact with it for some time . I'm a beast. I also need some. Especially as I'm going to need more energy and power to show Tony the truth. Anyways we were having breakfast. Kayla mom suggested during the day we go out as a family . But dad won't hook along since he said he has alot of meetings today. So we finished eating. We went back to our rooms to get ready . I soaked myself in the bath. I decided to call Mat.

Mat: Hey friend...

Me: Hi how are you

Mat: Erm...I'm well and you.

Me: Well ...

(She sighed)

Me: Are you okay...

Mat: I almost told Nick about you ... you being the Adila. I'm sorry.

Me: Atleast you didn't tell him. But I don't think Nick will ever want to harm me . But we can't take chances . You need to first find out if he has any problem with the Adila . Than you can tell him.

Mat: Okay . I miss being with you hey...

Me: I will see when I can visit you .

Mat: okay.

Me: or you can come over here.

Mat: I will see . Have you told Tony yet.

Me: nah i haven't got time to talk to him . But i will eventually. I need to gather my strengths.

Mat: Mhh... I see. But I still advise you to not tell him. Lali dear you can't change a person's mind with just one go . You can't change a person's perspective

that easy. Tony has had hatred towards you for years . And I don't think it will be that easy for him to accept the truth. He knows that you're the reason why he lost his dad.

Me: I know hey ... but I don't have a choice. We need someone else to help. I know we're strong and powerful and staff. But we also need another hand . Dear with everything that's happening I need to make sure I don't get hurt. As that will also affect Austin's weak condition.

Mat: I get you dear. But can't you just come up with another plan.

Me: it's getting late for that . I need to act fast now .

Mat: I see ...please be safe love.

Me: I will don't worry .

Mat: Okay bye.

Me: Bye.

(I got out of the bath and dried myself. I put on my black ripped J ean, black crop top and sneakers. I took my back and went downstairs.)

Zia: We have been waiting for you. You surely took your time.

Me: Sorry guys . We can go now.

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:18] Lynne: insert 41

Lali's POV

So we were now at the mall. We started by doing shopping . That took alot of our time . Mrs k didn't come along. She said she's not feeling well. Anyway we bought so many clothes. We decided to go to Macdonald and buy something to eat. It was already dark outside. We ordered. I was now looking for my phone in my bag . But I couldn't find it. I remember that we took a few pics in the car with Addison. Maybe she has it.

Me: Addi is my phone with you...

(She looked in her beg and nodded no)

Addi: I think I forgot it in the car . Let me go and take it...

Me: Don't worry I will go and take it .

(I stood took the car keys from Zayn as he was the one driving for us. I went to the parking lot . It was dark and quiet. I made my way to the car. Before I could even open the door . I felt someone placing a cloth on my face . Mostly covering my nose and mouth. I suddenly felt dizzy.

Narrated

The three man took Lali's body to their car . They were driving very fast. One made a phone call.

" Hello ... madam we have found her."

Mrs Khumalo: Okay...that's great. Bring her here in

my house. We will finish everything in the basement

.

"Okay"

Mrsk: Did y'll freeze the cameras

" Yes we did...we left no evidence leading to us nor to you"

Mrsk: Good job . Come here quick now .

They drove fast . After some time they arrived. Everyone was there. Including Mike and Kiara. Mike was having a glass of whiskey. While the ladies were having wine . The guards took Lali's body to the basement. They tied her on the chair.

MrsK: I think it's about time . Let's go to her .

(They also made their way to the basement.)

Nomhle: I would like to say a few words to her before she is killed.

Kiara: We all dear.

(Mrs Khumalo ordered the hitmen to splash cold water on Lali .)

. Lali's POV

I was woken up by cold water being splashed on me . I slowly opened my eyes. There they were. All four of them standing in front of me . I didn't know that Mrs Khumalo would also be part of this . I always thought she's a church lady. Whose heart is pure. But it's clear that she a snake wearing a sheepskin. Anyway they have done me good job. I needed blood. Nomhle made her way to me . She threw a few slaps on me .

Nomhle: Uyinja sfebe (You're a dog slut)

(I'm not Zulu but I do understand it a little. I know that she was swearing me .)

Nomhle: My mother and I took a good care of you . We made you part of our family . We treated you like

one of us. And this is how you thank us. By killing my baby what did you gain hee?(She pulled my hair)
Answer me ...

(I just kept quiet. Mrs Khumalo made her way to me)

Mrsk: I believed in you Lali. I was very fond of you . And yet you chose to disappoint me like this . I treated you like my own daughter. I loved and cared for you more than I did for Nomhle. We were always there for you . When you needed a shoulder to cry on. We used to comfort you. I used to pray for you Lali.i always prayed that you find happiness in your life and also be safe. I thought you were a good child. I didn't know you would stoop this low and kill my granddaughter. Before we could even know his /her gender. Lali you have turned Nomhle and I into bad people. We don't like killing people. But you have triggered us . I will never forgive you for what you did. And I'm sure you're going to hell. Here is what you're going to do. You're going to use this untraceable phone. And call your family. Say your last goodbye to them . Now . (She ringed my dad's

phone number)

Dad: Hello ...hello

Me: Hey dad...

Dad: Lali dear? Where are you . And whose number is this . We are all worried about you.

Me: Dad...dad calm down . I'm fine. As soon as I'm done with what I'm doing . I will come home. You guys don't worry . You know me dad.

Dad: I do ...but where are you...

(Mrs Khumalo dropped the call. She slapped me)

Mrs K: I gave you instructions and you didn't follow. Lali dear stop fooling yourself. There's no way you will come out here alive . J ust drop your ego and pride dear. And finally admit that you killed Nomhle's baby.

(So the hitmen were carrying Ak47s' . I'm not shook by all of that. Well Mike and Kiara . Were slowly moving to the door. I think they suspect that it's about to get rough here. They tried to open the door but couldn't)

Mike: Guys !guys! We need to get out of here now.

Nomhle: What's going on

Kiara: We're in deep shit. We need to leave this place now .

MrsK: no we're not going anywhere.

Mike: You don't understand...our lives are in danger.

Nomhle: Babe ...what are you talking about.

(I finally spoke)

Me: Okay ...times for jokes are over.

(I made the room dark and untied myself.)

Mrsk: What's going on...Mike explain...what's going on. Why is the door not opening.

(The room became light again.)

Mrsk: Who untied her ?What's going on ? Shoot her.

(They tried shooting but their guns couldn't work.

Okay I also don't know about that. I transformed into a beast. Nomhle immediately peed on herself.)

Nomhle: WTF!

Mrsk: Ohh Modimo(God).Father please help . We're facing a demon. Lucifer's daughter. Please God help.

Kiara: Shit ...I didn't know it's this huge.

(I slowly made my way to the hitmen. As I was going the ground would shake. I have never transformed into this large before. I didn't waist time ripped their heads from their bodies. Drank their blood. I needed it. After I finished drinking it . I let out a large growl)

MrsK : What's going on what are you ...

(I made my way to Mike. He was sweating)

Mike: Please Lali stop ! I'm sorry.

(I took him by his throat . He was hanging.)

Mike: Please I'm sorry.

(I put him down. They were all now busy crying . I transformed back to myself. I went back and sat on the chair)

Me: So Mike I want to give you this opportunity. Before I kill you and your sister. I want you to tell

Nomhle and her mother what really happened. Who killed the baby . And please don't lie because I won't hesitate to kill you .

Mike: Well ...you know exactly who killed our baby ...you did. I'm not going to lie. You killed our baby.

Me: Nc...nc...nc you're such a fool Mike. I see you don't know what I'm capable of doing .

(I sent Kiara across the room. Her head was busy bleeding . Mike ran to her. Kiara was slowly losing her consciousness .)

Kiara: Mike ...Mike...it's over . It's over my brother. We should have let go of everything. We should have just forgotten about what happened to dad. Look now . We are busy dying for that.

Mike: No ...no sister. Don't lose hope . We will revenge father's death. LALI

Me: Yes...is everything okay there.

Kiara: Until we meet again brother.

(She took her last breath. It was kinda hurting but what can I do . I can't have people plotting my death.

I have serious troubles .)

Mike: NO (he cried like a baby.) LALI ...I WILL NEVER FORGIVE YOU FOR THIS .

Me: your forgiveness have no effect on my life .

(He stood up and ran to take the gun . He tried shooting it didn't work again.)

Mike: Fuck you Lali ...just kill me . Kill me now .

Me: I will but not now . And I might not be the one to kill you . Now speak so that you can rest in peace.

(Mike slowly made his way to Nomhle and her mom. Who were curled up on the corner)

Mike: I killed our baby . Nomhle I never loved you from the beginning. I wanted to use you to kill Lali. Lali killed our father. So I wanted to revenge his death.

Me: Nomhle dear. I always thought you were smart. But now I'm even wondering how you made it to matric. When you first told Mike about your pregnancy. He wanted nothing about the baby. After some time. He's all nice and sorry. Why didn't

you ask yourself about the sudden change...

(Nomhle stood up and slapped Mike so hard.)

Nomhle: You're a dog . How can you do that to me . I have always thought you loved me . All of this time you were pretending. Why ? Why would you hurt me like this. I loved you. I fucking loved you. I even turned against my friend for you. I hated Lali.

Me: That's because he was busy turning you against me .

Nomhle: Mike ...you don't deserve to live. You and your sister deserves everything coming to you .

(She took the gun and shot him . It worked on him . I wonder what's with the gun . J ust like that . He was dead. Nomhle sat down and cried. Her and mrs Khumalo hugged.)

Nomhle: Lali ...we're sorry. We're truly sorry. We didn't know the truth. I'm sorry Lali. Even if you decide to kill me now . I won't blame you. I deserve all the hate from you. I have caused you so much pain .

Mrsk: Yes dear...we're sorry. I'm deeply sorry. I want God to punish me right now. I was slowly turned against you. I couldn't see through you that you were telling the truth when you said you didn't kill Nomhle's baby. I was blinded by hurt and anger .

(She made her way to me)

MrsK: Lali dear...I want you to kill me now . I don't deserve to live. I planned your death. I must die for my sins.

(She knelt down crying .I made my way to them I hugged them)

Me: I knew that one day the truth will come out. I wasn't going to harm you guys. You guys played an important role in my life . I was very broken when you both turned against me . And the fact that Nomhle wanted to kill me.

Nomhle: I'm sorry sister. I don't have words to describe how sorry I am. I let a man to come between us . I'm sorry.

Me: I forgive you too. It's very late now . We need to get rid of these bodies. We must take Kiara and

Mike's body to their home . The others we will burn.

(We did that and also cleaned the basement. They haven't asked about the beast thing . May be they are scared to ask. After we were done we made our way to the dinning room. We prayed.)

Mrsk: Amen.

Me: I'm a beast .

Nomhle: B...but h...how .

(I told them how I'm a beast)

Nomhle: I have always knew that there was something behind you having nightmares and also seeing things .

Me: yeah hey ...I have to go now.

(They both hugged me . I said my good bye and asked the driver to drop me off . I was so happy. That finally things between Nomhle and I are back to normal and with Mrs Khumalo too. But I still feel like I can't trust Nomhle. I know she apologized and staff. But I feel like she will betray me again. She did it once. What would stop her to do it again. Anyway

I made my way home. Everyone was sitting on the couches. They weren't watching TV. Kayla came to me running)

Kayla: where have you been darling?

(She hugged me . They all made their way to me . My clothes were covered in blood.)

Kayla: What happened

Me: Nothing serious...

Dad: Can I speak to you in my office.

Me: Sure but i need to bath first.

(I went upstairs and bathed. I put on my pjs and went to dad's office. As I entered he ran to me and hugged me .)

Dad: I'm happy that you're okay. Sit down and tell me what happened.

(We set down on the couch. I told him everything.)

Dad: I think you should distance yourself from her. She's not a true friend. If she was she wouldn't have been easily turned against you .

(I just sighed)

Dad: How's your wound ?

Me: It has healed.

Dad: That's great .

Me: yeah.

(We went downstairs and made coffee. We started laughing and talking. Kayla joined us . It was so much fun hey . We haven't spent time together for the past few days.)

Me: my stomach is in pain now. Goodnight my loves.

Dad: night dear.

Me: ohh...mom did you see my phone

K: yes it's on the drawer. In your bedroom.

Me: ok thanks.

(I went to my room upstairs. I took out and called Mat . I know it's late but she's always answers. I told her everything that happened.)

Mat: You won't believe what Nick told me ?

Me: What he said

Mat : He said Austin has woken up .

(I sat up straight. I was feeling very happy)

Me: What? When ?

Mat: He said he woke up and shouted your name .
After that he asked to be alone .

Me: Really? Hey friend we will talk tomorrow. Let
me call my man .

Mat: Aren't you angry at him

Me: I was ...but I really miss him. And I also want to
know why he did that.

Mat: Mhh I see. Okay bye .

Me: Bye.

(I dialed Austin's number. I tried to call him for
several times. But he didn't answer. I was so
heartbroken. I hope he's not avoiding him. I will try
to call him tomorrow. I drifted off to sleep.)

It was now in the morning.

Nick's POV

Things were very busy. There is going to be a evening party for Austin. Since he has woken up . I'm very happy that he has finally woken up . I missed him . I was going to his house. I went in. He was busy getting dressed.

Me: Hey lil bro ... it's good you're now okay.

(I parted his shoulder)

Austin: Yeah ...

Me: Have you talked to Lali

Austin: Not yet... I will call her when I get time .

Me: Are things okay between you two.

(He sat down)

Austin: I don't know . I think she's still angry about what I did. And also putting her life at stake as she was also experiencing my pain .

Me: I don't think so . She's very kind . And she also loves you dearly.

Austin: let's hope so. And I still need to tell her about Emilia.

Me: I think you should let that go . She's still worried about her people. Since you're dad's favourite. Can't you just talk to him . Try and reason with him. Convince him to let them go.

Austin: You know very well that's impossible. Dad is a man of his words . He won't just change his mind.

Me: Atleast try...

Austin: I will see... but I don't promise anything.

Me: Anyway let's go ...

Lali's POV

I have been trying to call Austin. He still ignores my calls . Anyway I was helping Kayla mom with the cooking. And yes we now have a helping lady. She cleans and do the washing. She's old and also kind . Mat is coming over . She's coming over to visit for some time . We were busy preparing lunch. Today I'm telling Tony. We were now done I went to my bedroom. I took my phone and tried to call Austin again. He finally answered.

Me: Hello .

Austin: Hello...hello...Lali?

(He was in the middle of the noise. I was struggling to hear him . And he was also struggling to hear me .)

Me: Austin...

(He dropped the call . As i was busy hugging my pillow busy sulking. A message came through from him.

" Hey babe...I will call you tomorrow. There's a party going on here. I love you and also miss you . Bye."

(I was feeling a bit better now . I was now blushing . I touched my face . I had tears.

I didn't realize that I was crying. The message he sent some how soothed the pain I was feeling in my fragile heart. I washed my face and went downstairs . Mat had already arrived.)

Mat: hey friend...(She whispered) you're busy blushing and glowing . Were you talking to Austin.

(I just smiled and nodded)

Kayla: come sit Mat dear before the food gets cold .

(We set down and started eating. After we were done . We all went to our separate ways . Mat and I share my room. We were busy talking non stop . Until she drifted off to sleep. I covered her body with a blanket. I put on my night gown and sleepers. I made my way to Tony's room. I knocked. There was no reply I decided to go Inside. He wasn't there.

But I heard water running. I sat on his bed and waited for him . After some time he come out . With a towel tied on his waist .)

Tony: Lali? What are you doing here? At this time ...

Me: I need to talk to you...

Tony: Okay let me get dressed first.

(I closed my eyes.)

Tony: Done ...so what's up.

Me: Can we talk outside please...I don't want to wake others .

Tony: sure.

(We made our way to the garden. We sat on the bench.)

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:18] Lynne: insert 42

Lali's POV

We were now in the garden. I didn't know where to start telling him. I was also nervous.

Me: so how are things between you and Addison...

Tony: they're fine ...

Me: Mmhh ...that's great.

Tony: Have you thought about what I told you the other day...

Me: Not really... I love him . I love him so much .
And I'm willing to do anything to make sure i spend the rest of my life with him...

(He sighed and chuckled)

Tony: You know ...Love is a really strange feeling . It makes you fall inlove with someone it's either you won't be able to be with him/her . Or being with her is dangerous.

(I knew where this was going so I decided to

change the topic .)

Me: How was the relationship between you and your dad? Your biological father...

(His facial expression changed . Instead of looking sad he was angry. His face was even pale .)

Tony: Well ...what can I say... I loved him . He cared for me . We had that Dad and son relationship. I lost him when I was doing grade 9. It really affected my studies. I even repeated the grade . My life changed . I even had thoughts of killing myself. But than your father came into picture. Things went back to normal . But I will never forgive the Adila. She took the most important thing from my life...

Me: But how did you know that it was the Adila...

Tony: Well I wasn't there when he died. But the state he was in. His head was ripped from his body . All the intestines were out . And my uncle told me that it was the Adila...

Me: And you believed him...

Tony: Yeah...why wouldn't I? That man has been

there for me from day one. Even when my father was alive. It felt like I had two dads . So what I mean is he plays an important role in my life. And I will never let anything come between us .

Me: Mhh ... I see. But Tony think about it ...why would the Adila kill your father. You also know that she's young. May be about your age...why would she kill someone she doesn't even know ...

Tony: I never told you all that ...

(My heart skipped for a minute)

Me: Well ...I...so...some...how...

Tony: You seem to have more information about the Adila. Did Austin may be tell you ...

Me: Austin? ...y...yeah ...he once told me .

Tony: Mhh I see.

Me: Tony what would you say ...if I said I'm a beast.

(He laughed and held his stomach)

Tony: Spending time with Austin has really fucked your mind. Dear you don't just wake up and become

a beast. You're born a beast. Even though they're people out there who inject themselves with the beasts blood . And they turn into them . But in most cases people are born beasts.

Me: Yeah...what if I was born a beast...

Tony: Lali dear I would have known from day one that. I can smell other creatures. And identify if it a vampire or something else. Like any creature would...I think you're feeling sleepy now. Let's go and sleep.

Me: No ...we're still talking...

Tony: Ay ...bye I'm feeling sleepy now.

(He was now moving away. This is the perfect time to tell him. I transformed but not fully and growled. He turned.)

Tony: WTF!

(I transformed back to myself)

Tony: LALI? what?How?

Me: come and sit down . I will tell you everything.

Tony: Why I wasn't able to feel nor smell you .
That's strange.

Me: Don't worry I will tell you everything...

(I first told him . How my family's bloodline
changed. But I didn't tell him me being the Adila part.
I need to first find out how he feels about me being
a beast)

Tony: So you kept that from me . And you're only
telling me now . Wow. I thought we were close.

Me: I was going to tell you. I was still understanding
myself and capabilities.

(He thought for some time)

Tony: You killed Aben ...right?

(I nodded)

Tony: Wow ...Mr Owen?

(I nodded)

Tony: You're a badass . I thought you were all holy
and shit . Mhh..universe will amaze you some times
. So you were at the war? That's how you got

wounded. But I didn't see you there.

Me: Well ...mhh ...there's something I want to show you.

Tony: You have secrets hey...

Me: Come.

(I pulled him by his hand . I looked at the moon. It's the perfect time . We were facing each other. I slowly closed my eyes . And allowed the power of showing take over. It started becoming windy . A voice came out of me and spoke in a forbidden language)

Me: Tueef hooks zadg!

(Suddenly it became stormy)

Tony: Lali what's going on .

(what was happening was really weighing me down.)

Me: Look at my eyes .

(He did . I just hope I will be able to show him

everything. I held to him tight as I was slowly losing my strength. He looked for some time . I was now blinking very much. Before I could even do anything he threw me across the ground. I didn't have the strength to stand up . He came to me in a very speedy manner. I just closed my eyes because I know he was about to finish me . Just before he could bite my neck . A wolf growled. I'm sure that's Mat . I opened my eyes slowly and yes it was her. Tony and her started fighting. I need to stop them . I can't watch my two favourite people hurt each other. I used the last strength I had and stood up. I shouted from the bottom of my lungs)

Me: STOP!

(They both adhered. They transformed back to their selves . Everything went back to normal. There was no longer storm.)

Tony: You ? A wolf? You guys are...

(He made his way to me .)

Tony: You're the Adila.

(My eyes widened. I haven't told him anything yet.)

Me: Who ? Me? No...

Tony: Only the Adila can do that. You know my uncle did warn me . That if I find the Adila . I must not listen to any word she has to say. Because you're deceptive. You want people to believe your lies. Why would my uncle kill my dad? Why? Answer me...

(He was busy shaking me)

Tony: I won't spare your life . And when I kill you . Not even your friend will be able to save you.

(He was making his way back to the house. I followed him)

Me: Please wait. You have to believe me . I didn't kill your dad. You need to believe what I showed you. I wouldn't have wasted my time and energy if I killed him.

(He said nothing and ran to his room. I sat down on the floor. Mat came and hugged me)

Me: Thanks friend...if you didn't come at!the right time . I would have been dead by now . I thought It

was going to be easy .

Mat: Atleast you tried friend. Let's go and sleep.

(We went to my room. I changed my pjs and went straight to bed.)

Austin's POV

They took me to dad's bedroom. Everyone was there. What happened is while I was busy enjoying the party . I suddenly felt uneasy and I was slowly losing my strength. It happened for some time . But I was now okay.

Mom: Are you sure you're fine?

Me: Yeah ...

Dad: I want to have a word with you . Can everyone leave .

(Nick looked at me . He showed me a sign. Saying I mustn't tell him anything. Everyone was now out .

Dad sat next to me.)

Dad: Son...you know that you're the next Alpha right?

(I nodded)

Dad: You have enemies everywhere. Some you know . While some you don't know . But your greatest enemy is your chosen one .

(My heart skipped for second)

Me: My...my chosen one? ...but who?

Dad: I'm glad you haven't met her . She will be the end of you . I pray that you never cross paths with her. She will wipe out the whole existence of the wolves.

(I was out of words. Why would dad say such things about Lali. Lali is a very kind and loving girl. She is the best chosen one .I could ever ask for .)

Dad: So ...please son when you think you have found her. Don't hesitate to tell me .okay?

Me: Dad

Dad: Yes...

(I was nervous)

Me: When will we let the Drugiomins leave?

Dad: What? Never...they will stay here imprisoned until they take their last breath. They're lucky we give them food.

Me: But dad...don't you think it's enough now. Don't you think it's about time we finally make peace with the beasts. Like this has been going on for years. Why can't we all forgive and forget.

Dad: Please leave my room.

(I did as he told me . He was very angry. So I don't want to upset him more . I made my way to Nick)

Nick: So what was he saying...

Me : You know him ...he was busy warning me about Lali .

Nick: Did you ask him about letting those people go...

Me: He got very angry and said I must leave his room. It's clear that will never happen.

Nick: That's a problem...

Lali's POV

I woke up and took a bath. I made my way downstairs. Everyone was there except for Tony. I sat down.

Dad: Where's Tony? Someone go upstairs and call him.

(I stood up)

Me: I will go and call him ...

(I made my way to his room. It wasn't locked. He wasn't there. I knocked on the bathroom. Nothing . I opened the bathroom door but he wasn't there. I saw a note on the bed.

" Get ready beastwomen...we're coming for you .

Love

VTony"

(This is crazy. I now have to fight with Tony. That's not going to happen. I went downstairs.)

Me: He's not in his room.

Dad: What?

Me: He just texted me. He said he's visiting one of his friends.

Dad: mhh i see.

(We ate . Dad left.)

Addi: Guys let go out clubbing tonight...

Mat: Great idea...

Me: yeah ...A gold bottle of Moet will do me good .

(As it was very hot outside. We decided to go and swim. As I was sitting with both my legs in the pool . Austin's call came through.)

Me: Hello...

Austin: Hi ...I'm sorry about yesterday...

Me: Nah ...I was nothing.

Austin: Mm...k ...so how are you?

Me: I'm well and you

Austin: I'm well...I'm back in the city. Can I see you tonight.

Me: You guys can join us. The girls and i are going out.

Austin: Oh...ok ...we will pick you guys up.

Me: Sure.

Austin: See you than .

(I told the girls that. You guys should have seen Mat's face. It was full of glow.)

Zia: Can't wait for tonight. Will his friends be there. I want a one night stand for myself...

Me: God...aren't you and Odin dating.

Zia: Nah ...he said he wants to have fun with me .

Me: Really? And you loved him.

Zia: Yeah...I have managed to bury the feelings I had for him.

Addi: Have fun? Who says that to a beautiful girl like you

Mat: He surely doesn't know what he's missing out .

Me: Yeah...(As we were busy talking. Nomhle called)

Nomhle: Erm...hello

Me: Hey ...

Nomhle: How are you...

Me: I'm well and you...

(It was on loudspeaker.)

Nomhle: Well...

Me: Mhh ...that's good.

Nomhle: Yeah ...I was just checking up on you .

Me: That's great.

(The conversation we were having was just awkward, cold and boring. Things between Nomhle and I will never be the same as they were back than .)

Nomhle: I was wondering if we could go out. Do some shopping together and grab a lunch at Steers...

Me: Ermm...I'm really sorry but I can't. I'm very busy.

Nomhle: Tomorrow than

Me: Nah ...these coming days ...I'm very busy...

Nomhle: Mhh I see...I guess bye.

Me: Bye...

(I dropped it . The girls let out a loud laugh)

Mat: Shame she's missing her bestie .

Nomhle's POV

Well to be honest I feel like Lali is avoiding me . I

really messed up. I miss her. I miss my friend so much . I missed the days when we would sleep together. Buy similar clothes. Have a talk about boys. I really miss her. So what happened is. We cremated Kiara and Mike's body. We took their mother to the Mental asylum. Since she's not responding to anything. We asked the doctor there to give her something that will make sure she doesn't heal or something. Well my mom and I are now running the Owen businesses. We had to bribe the lawyers and make it look like Mike and I were married. To in community property marriage. I heard they had an uncle. But he hasn't bothered us yet . So next year I will do a shot course on business management. We're about to get rich. I was having wine with my mother at the Owen mansion...

Mom: Fabulous house they had ...

Me: Sure it is .

Mom: How are things between you and Lali...

Me: I don't think things will ever be the same. She's

avoiding me . It's like she wants nothing to do with me...

Mom : I can talk to her for you if you want.

Me: Nah ...let her take her time . I have hurt her so much .

To be continued

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:18] Lynne: insert 43

Lali's POV

So I was busy getting dressed. Austin's car was already parked outside. Well the girls had already left . I put on my ripped skinny jean , white crop top and white sneakers. I take my bag and phone and went to his car . I sat on the front passenger seat.

Him: You surely took your time ...

(I just smiled)

Him: You're looking beautiful though.

Me: Thanks ...you aren't that bad either.

(I'm lying. He's looking so appetizing hot .)

Him: I will take that as a compliment.

(His other hand was driving whereas the other one was holding my hand. He would kiss my hand every now and then.)

Him: I still can't believe you're my girlfriend .

Me: Well aren't you going to tell me about why you drugged me and locked me inside your room.

Him: Well about that ...I'm sorry. I wanted to make sure that you were safe .

(He sighed)

Him: Lali ...I lost my wife because I was careless . I didn't tell her the truth nor warn her about the outcome of being pregnant my baby. I don't want to lose you Lali . You and I were meant to be together.

It's my duty to make sure you're safe and sound.

(I just nodded)

Him: Do you forgive me ...

Me: no ...

(He made a funny pouty face. I laughed)

Me: I'm joking . I forgave you long time ago. I cannot stay angry at you for a long time. I love you .

(He kissed my cheek. We finally arrived to this club we usually go to. It was so full. Mat waved at us to come. We made our way to them . They have already bought drinks . There was Austin's friends and brothers. Ondreaz's wife was also here . The guy who was sitting next to Ondreaz looked familiar. He looks exactly like Tayler. His hair cut. But was wearing expensive clothes . As much as I know Tayler wouldn't even afford Lacoste sneakers. Yet he is wearing a Gucci tshirt . Maybe it's not him. How can he be here when some are imprisoned and some died . We sat down. He kept stealing glances of me . I whispered to Austin)

Me: What's that guy's name...

Him: Which one?

Me: The one sitting next to Ondreaz and wearing a Gucci t shirt.

Him: Ohh that one is our friend. But he's more close to Ondreaz. We went to the same university. His name is Tayler.

Me: What?

Him: do you know him?.

Me: Well ... I do.

(Tayler? University? What? ...what's going on here . How come he's here . This wasn't giving me peace. Anyway when I get time I will ask him. He owes me some explanation. we were busy enjoying ourselves. Having drinks and talking. Austin would kiss me now and then. As we were busy laughing. Emilia made her way to us. She was with some other two girls. She was wearing a very short miniskirt and a crop top . Mat looked at me . I just shrugged my

shoulders.)

Emilia: Hey guys ...

(Well Austin's friends greeted her back.)

Emilia: Erm ..hey Lali

(What? I cleared my throat)

Me: Hey ...how are you?

Emilia: I'm good and yourself.

Me: Good.

Emilia: Well ...Austin I was at your house . The guards didn't allow me to come in. (She glanced at me) Well I wanted to take my toiletries and underwear I forgot at your house. That day of the family gathering. (I looked at Mat. I just hope Emilia is saying that just to make me angry . I hope it's not true .) Well ...

(Before she could say anything. Austin stood up and dragged her away from us . I didn't see his face . But I can feel that she's angry. Why would he get angry if what Emilia was saying wasn't true. Mat a came and sat next to me)

Mat: I'm sorry friend...

Me: Why? What's wrong?

Mat: Well ... I didn't want to cause any commotion between Austin and you . You guys look good together.

(I was confused.)

Me: What are you talking about.

Mat: Well on that day...(Nick made his way to us . He took Mat by her hand .)

Mat: No Lali deserves to know.

Nick : I know ...but it's not our place to tell her. Wait for Austin to tell her.

Mat: But

Nick: No...

(They went back to where they were sitting. It seems I'm the only one in the dark. They know the truth. I just pray that whatever they're hiding from me . Doesn't have to do with Emilia.)

Austin's POV

Lali and I were having a very good time. Than this bitch decided to ruin everything. When she was busy talking I dragged her outside the club. I slapped her across her face.i was so angry.

Me: Didn't I tell you to never cross paths with me? Didn't I?

Emilia: oh wow Austin...you took my virginity. You promised me the world. You said you were going to spend the rest of your life with me.

(She touched my face . I removed them and slapped her again)

Emilia: Austin...you and I belong together. We can't just let that bitch come between us . What we had was beautiful Austin...

Me: We had nothing. Get that through your thick skull. And don't ever call my girlfriend a bitch.

(I left her there and went back inside. I sat down

and finished a whole glass of whiskey.)

Lali: So ?

(I looked at her)

Lali: Aren't you going to tell me about what Emilia said .

Me: Well...it's nothing.

Lali: Austin ...

Me: Nothing.

Lali: So what Emilia said was true . Right?. She was at the family gathering.

Me: Ermm...well Love... yeah ...I'm sorry. You know what happened is... Mom some how found out that I have a girlfriend. So she wanted to meet her. I had to bring someone. You know very well that she can't meet you. So I asked Emilia...

Lali: Wow ...Austin. out of all the ladies out there. You chose Emilia. Wow.

Me: I'm sorry babe. I wasn't thinking straight. It was also a last minute thing ...babe I'm sorry.

Lali: And you didn't see the need to tell me.

Me: Well ...I was going to tell you ... I'm sorry. And we also had sex .

(Her face dropped. Some way or another I had to tell her the truth. She deserves to know. She had tears on her eyes. She took her phone)

Me: What are you doing?

Lali: I'm calling an Uber. I want to go home.

(I tried to hold her hand)

Lali: Dont touch me please. ..

Me: I'm sorry Lali.

Lali: No ...I'm sorry . I'm sorry for loving you with honesty and so passionately. We haven't even finished a year dating . Already you have cheated. What will happen in the future. Do I have to bare all your cheating ways because you're my chosen one.

(She was talking softly so that people won't hear us .)

Me: I'm sorry ...I'm truly sorry.

(She took her bag and went outside. I followed her. She stood by the road.)

Me: I will take you home ...

Lali: Don't bother ...

(I grabbed her hand and took her to my car)

Lali:leave me alone Austin. ..

(I pushed her inside and closed the door. I went to my seat and started driving. She was quite all the way . And busy looking outside the window . Instead of driving her home . I took her to my house. I parked the car . I went to her side. I opened the door for her.)

Lali: I want to go home.

Me: please come inside. So that we can talk.

(She went inside the house. When I got in she threw her back at me)

Lali: Talk about what exactly? You have said enough...I regret...

(I made my way to her. She slowly moved back

until she was trapped by the wall.)

Me: I want to show you how sorry I am.

(She laughed sarcastically)

Lali: by having sex with me. Wow Austin. I didn't know you thought that low of me . Listen here I'm not your bitch Emilia. Who you can have sex with when ever you want .

(I cupped her face and kissed her. She returned the kiss. We kissed for some time . After that she pushed me and threw a very hot slap on my cheek. It's like I was hit by a man. I immediately became angry. I went to her and grabbed her both upper arms and politely said:)

Me: Don't ever ...and I mean ever lay your hand on me. Because I will hurt you really bad.

Lali: (She chuckled) You will also get hurt .

Me: I know I'm the one at fault but that doesn't give you the permission to slap me. Make this the last time you slap me.

(i made my way to the door.)

Me: I forgive you.

(I went to my car and drove back to the club.)

Mat: where's Lali?...how is she ?

Me: She will be fine ...

Lali's POV

"Forgive me ". Hebana...Okay I don't know what got into me. I regret slapping him. I shouldn't have disrespected him like that. But what can I say.i got very angry when we were kissing I imagined him kissing Emilia and I immediately got angry. When he grabbed me I thought he was going to hurt me . Anyways I don't think things between Austin and I will ever be the same . Yes I love him. But I don't think I will ever trust him . I took my phone and called the uber again. I won't spend the night here. Lucky enough he didn't lock the door. I went outside and waited. The uber arrived. After some time I got home. I went straight to my bedroom. I took a quick

bath and went to bed .

Tayler's POV

It was now in the morning. Well I was in my house. Yes my house. Ondreaz and I are very good friends. Eventhough he sometimes acts all bossy. Well we are also business partners. Also when he wants to get rid of someone I help him. And he would pay me a very good amount . Well I didn't know Lali was dating Austin. Well I think I can use that to my advantage.

Lali's POV

I woke up and took a bath . Mat was still asleep. I got dressed and stood by the balcony. The sun was hitting different. I closed my eyes and allowed it to hit my skin .

Mat: I'm sorry. ..

(I opened my eyes and turned back.)

Me: You're up

Mat: I'm sorry Lali. For hiding the truth from you all this time .

(I held her hands)

Me: no ...you shouldn't apologize. It's not your fault. It's Austin's. He should have told me .

Mat: But still...

Me: No ...no he's the one at fault here. He is the one who cheated. You and Nick have done nothing .

(She sighed and leaned on the balcony)

Mat: I hope things between you and him ...will soon go back to the same.

Me: I don't think so ... I think I now have to focus more on making sure the people from Drugiomin are released.

Mat: Yeah...have you tried to call Tony

Me: I have given up ...I've tried but his cellphone is switched off.

(Zia got in)

Zia: Hey girls ...the breakfast is ready.

Me: Thanks.

(Mat took a quick bath. I waited for her to finish . We than went downstairs. We joined everyone on the table.)

Me: Tony hasn't come back yet

Kayla: He did come yesterday...later though. He took most of his clothes. He said he will be staying with his uncle just for now .

Me: Mhh I see...dad do you know where his uncle live?

Dad: Yeah ...The house he's living in was bought by me for him .

Me: Mhh...can you send the location of it to me . I really want to vis it him .

(He sent it . I finished eating and went back to my

room. Mat followed me .)

Mat: Lali ...I don't think it's a good Idea to go see him. He may not be pleased to see you. Lali he may harm you. Him and his uncle.

Me: Don't worry ...Tony will never harm me . He once loved me remember? ...Tony cares for me .

Mat: Gosh ...okay I'm coming with you than. Since I won't be able to convince your stubborn ass.

Me: You will stay in the car though...

Mat: No ...I will go inside with you .

Me: Mat ...

Mat: No ...it's not up for discussion. I'm going in with you.

(We took our J ersey s and car keys. We went downstairs.)

Zayn: Can we also come with you guys...we really miss him

(Mat and I looked at each other .)

Zia: Yeah...We will also buy few drinks on the way.

Me: No...I...

Jase: We are coming with...

Mat: But...

Zayn: no ...no ...no we're within.

Me: Fine.

(We used two cars . Jase and I were driving . They were following our car. Maybe coming with them isn't a bad idea . So we finally arrived to what seemed like an old house. That hasn't been used for years . The paint was even peeling off . We all parked outside.)

Jase: Lali ...are you sure this is the house?

Me: Yeah...Please check again Mat.

(She did)

Zia: Why would Tony leave our big beautiful mansion for this.

Me: Guys let's go inside and find out.

(We got in and went to the door. We knocked for quite a long time . I know they're inside. I can smell

their blood.)

Addi: Guys I think we should just go back home. It's even getting dark and freaky now.

Me: Let's wait a little.

(I shouted)

Me: TONY COME ON MAN...OPEN THE DOOR. WE KNOW YOU'RE IN THERE .J ...

(before I could even continue. The door opened. But it wasn't Tony. He made way for us to come in. It was very dark in here . One candle was lit . He assembled us to what looked like a lounge. The couches were so old . A human blood was smelling in here .)

" wait here...I will go and call Tony "

(In a high speed he went away. I hope others didn't notice that . I looked at Mat . After we waited for long we were now even drinking our wine . Tony came . He wasn't himself. He had black circles around his eyes . His face was pale. I made my way to him. I tried to touch him . But he forcefully

removed my hand .)

Jase: ...are you guys okay...did you some how got into a fight?

(I faked a smile)

Me: No...y..yes ...actually. He's angry that I wasn't at home when he came ...

Zayn: Dude are you okay ? You look like you're about to die.

Tony: I'm fine...I just have a fever. And it would be better if you'll leave. I need to get some sleep.

Zia: nah...we're not going anywhere. We're here to visit you .

Addi: Yeah...I...we miss you .

Tony: EVERYONE LEAVE!

(He shouted . Everyone went quiet. His uncle came)

Him: I think it will be better if you'll go. Tony isn't fine.

Zia: Never...we're not going without you. We cannot leave you in this house. It's just not in our standard.

Tony: I would really appreciate it if you could not insult my uncle's house.

Me: Can I talk to you in private...

(The uncle's eyes widened. He repulses me .)

Him: Not happening...

Me: excuse me?

Him: I said you will not talk to him.

(I came to him and whispered on his ear)

Me: It seems like you have forgotten that I'm the Adila. I can rip your chest right now .

Him: I want to see you try. One of the coming days you will be asking for sympathy from me. And Tony will be the one feeding on you.

(I swallowed hard)

Me: Shame ...Tony would never do that to me .

(I went back to where I was standing)

" Son...you can talk to her.."

(Tony went away and i followed him. Well we got

out using a back door. I didn't know this place was this big. It was very dark but I could see trees . He stood and faced me.)

Tony: What do you want from me Adila? ...Wasn't killing my father enough to satisfy you ? ... wasn't destroying my life enough.

(He grabbed me so tight on my upper arms.)

Me: Tony...you're hurting me...

Tony: Hurting you? The pain you're feeling now is nothing compared to the pain I felt when I lost my dad.

(I now had tears. I really don't want to fight him. He's angry. Who wouldn't be)

Me: But Tony ...how many times must I tell you that I didn't kill your father. Your uncle is busy feeding you lies . I never killed your dad.

Tony: Ohh please spare me with your crocodile tears and please stop lying .

Me: If I killed him. Why would I risk my self and come here. If I killed him I wouldn't have gone extra

miles to show you the truth. I sacrificed my strengths for you .

(My phone ringed . I looked at the caller ID it was Austin. I didn't answer it . He kept calling. I decided to switch off my phone.)

Me: Tony...I need you . I need your help. You need to help me . I'm out of options. My people are in danger. I need to free them and make sure they're safe. I can't do all of that alone . I need you .

Tony:Please leave...I never want to see your face here again.

(He made his way inside the house. When we got inside he turned back)

Tony: Until we meet again ...and that day will be your last on earth. And when I kill you ...Not even your Austin will be able to save you.

(He went away . I wiped my tears and went to others.)

Me: Let's go ...

Zia: No ...we aren't leaving without Tony...

Addi: I'm staying behind.

Me: Okay ...fine...if you guys want to stay. Than stay.

(Mat and I went to the car. They also followed. The drive was very silent. We arrived. We all went to our separate rooms .)

Mat: So what did he say...

Me: Whag else would he say ...beside telling me that they're going to kill him....

(I switched my phone on. Missed calls and messages started flooding in my phone . They were from Austin.

Some of the messages were read as follow

" Lali ...I know I should have told you. I know I should have never slept with her. But I'm sorry. Can you please answer your phone."

" Where are you ? ...are you okay? ...I just want to make sure you're okay where you are. Please answer your phone "

" Okay ...if you don't answer your phone right at this instance...I will come to your house..."

" Lali ...answer your damn phone... "

" I'm sorry for the last message...I just want to hear your voice love"

(They were so many . I can't read them all. I somehow found myself laughing. This boyfriend of mine though. Yes don't you'll look at me like that. I know he cheated but he's still my boyfriend and will forever be. I know our relationship won't be the same . But I still love him.)

Please like and comment

I will post another insert later.

Thank you for 2k .

[06/23, 08:19] Lynne: Insert 44

Lali's POV

I decided to call Austin.

Him: Hey ...Why were you not answering my calls.

Me: I was still angry at you...

Him: that means you're no longer angry .

Me: No mr ...I'm still angry at you ...

Him: I'm sorry Lali...can you please forgive me . I already feel like shit for what I did. Please forgive me my love .

Me: under one condition...

Him : I'm listening.

Me: If you can help me get my people from being imprisoned.

Him: Lali ...I can't do that. I cannot go against my father's word. I'm sorry love but I can't.

Me: I'm not a fool. I don't want you to go and tell

your father to free them. I want your help... I want to use you as a bait to your father.

Him: I don't follow

Me: Well ...we will make it look like I kidnapped you to your father. And instruct him to free them if he wants you alive. And I know your dad loves you so much. And he will never allow anything bad to happen to you . As you're the next Alpha. You're holding the future of the Oebrate.

Him: Your plan is smart. But Lali...what you want to start won't end well ... He may harm you ... And Lali I mean it ...please just let all of this go.

Me: Never...your people are okay,safe and sound . But my people aren't. And you suggest I leave them there to die. Never . If it calls for a war to free them . Than I'm ready...

Him: i didn't mean that...But Lali ...

Me: goodnight Austin.

It was now in the morning.

Tony's POV

Well when Lali and others came here. My uncle and I were busy feeding on a human. I have been really sick. I'm struggling to sleep . It feels like my body is in some battle with my mind and heart. My mind keep telling me to kill Lali. But my heart is against that. I love her . I love her so much and forever will. I have been asking myself if : Am I angry at Lali because my uncle told me she killed my dad. Or it is because I love her and she doesn't love me back . My uncle and I were having breakfast. For the first time we're having a proper breakfast. We usually drink a glass of blood that continue with whatever we were doing .

Uncle: The basement is now ready . We now just need a cage and chains .

(I kept quiet and continued eating)

Uncle : Are we still together son.

Me: I don't know uncle. After yesterday...I have been feeling very strange. Uncle are you sure that Lali is the one that killed my father?

(His facial expression changed . He started sweating.)

Me: Are you okay?

(He faked a smile)

Uncle: W..well..I...I'm fine .

(There's something he's hiding from me . I wonder what is it. But all I know is he would never harm my dad. They were very close .)

Me: You know I have been thinking about what Lali told me . If she really killed my dad. She wouldn't be coming here. She wouldn't have ...

Uncle: That's why I didn't want you to talk to her. The Adila is full of tricks. She can make you believe something that is not true.

Me: And how do you know that?

Uncle: W...well...I know. I'm old . I know everything about these powerful creatures.

Me: Did you know that the Adila has a power to show someone...something?

(Well I have never told him about what Lali showed me.)

Uncle: Yes ...And some times what they show you isn't true.

Me: Really?

(He nodded)

Me: Uncle if I may ask ...where were you when the "Adila" killed my dad. Because as much as I know you guys were always together...

Uncle: Well ...on that day we weren't together. I was having a dinner with...with my girlfriend. Little did I know that the Adila was going to attack him.

Me: so how did you know the Adila killed him if you weren't there?

Uncle: What's with these questions?

Me: I asked a question uncle?

Uncle: Well ...erm..Only the Adila can kill like that. There's no creature that cuts someone's body and hang it piece by piece. And even cover the walls with blood intentionally?

Me: Intentionally?

Uncle: Well ...

Me: it can be possible that the Adila is not behind my dad's death. Maybe there's someone trying to confuse us.

Uncle: But son ...I'm sure . She's the one that killed him

Me: No ...I need to do some investigation. I need to find out who killed him. And I swear on my father's grave I won't spare that person...

Uncle: And son ...how are you going to do that...

Me: First I need the footage of the place he was killed at.

Uncle: But it happened back in the years. I'm sure the...

Me: Can we just stay positive. Anyway I'm going to take a bath. So I can get started with my investigation.

(I went upstairs and took a quick bath. I put on my V neck white t shirt ,Black skinny J ean and sneakers. I take the car keys than drove off.)

Uncle's POV

Fuck the Adila. She's busy messing up my plan. I quickly called my right hand man.

" Hey ...big V"

Me: I need you to help me with something.

" Anything my man"

Me: Do you remember the person we killed at the old building by the ...

" I remember very well. How you killed your poor

brother "

Me: Yeah...I want you to make sure that all the CCTV footage is erased. I can't remember if we did or not .

" Okay I will go right now"

Me: And please use the back door to get in. Tony might already there.

" His son?"

Me: yeah.

" Okay ...I'm on it right now."

(I hunged up. I just hope he will make it in time. I can't let my plan for years to fail. Tony can't find out the truth. I need to fasten the process. Before the truth comes out)

Tony's POV

I went to this old building. The main door was locked. I had to break my way through. I was busy searching every room for the computers . As I was in one of the bedrooms I saw a black Mercedes driving off. I managed to capture it number plate. Someone was here. But who could it be . That person might have saw me coming and made his way in. But it looks like he has been here for some time . And the strange thing is it's only my uncle and I who knew that I was coming here. Anyway I continued with the searching until I found the room I was looking for. They were so many computers showing different rooms . I looked for the one that was showing the room that my father was killed in. Luckily I still remember the year he was killed and the month. I looked for the footage but there wasn't any . Fuck!they must have erased everything. I made my way to the door. I than remembered the person who was here. I tried to look on the cameras what he was doing but they said the footage was deleted a few minutes ago. And they're also freezed .The only footage that was not not erased and working is the one showing the back yard. It

showed a man dressing in all black getting in here.
And also driving off.

Me: Who is this guy? I have never met him before.

(I drove back to my uncle's house. I sat on the
couch with him. This time around he was drinking a
beer.)

Uncle: How did it go? Did you find anything?

Me: No I didn't...some mother fucker was there
before me . He erased everything.

Uncle: Shit.

Me: But I managed to get his number plate . I also
saw his face on the CCTV footage.

Uncle: What? I mean that's good.

Me: yeah...tomorrow I will ask Addison to try and
track it. She's very good with this things .

Uncle: mhh I see.

Austin's POV

I miss Lali so much. I wish things can just go back to the same . I was sitting Nick on the couch. We were just having drinks . I told him about Lali's plan. Tayler and Ondreaz walked in.

Ondreaz: The little ones...

Me: Hey big bro...

Nick: Hey...What's up?...because I know you guys wouldn't just come here to visit us...

Tayler: Nah ...we came to chill with you guys

Me: Mhh I see...let me go and take more drinks than.

(I took one bottle of whiskey and beers . We started drinking. As we were busy Lali and Mat walked in . I stood up and met them halfway . I looked at Lali)

Me: Lali? Babe...hey

(I wanted to kiss her . But I don't want to make her angry.)

Lali : Hey...

Me: Please...please come and sit down

(We sat down .)

Lali's POV

Well I didn't know we were going to find Ondreaz and Tayler here. Maybe they can also help in my plan. But Tayler hates me . I doubt.

Me: Hey ...guys ...

Tayler: Lali...

Me: Erm...Well...Tayler can I speak to you... in private.

Tayler: Why? Is everything okay?

Me: Yeah...

(Austin looked at me . Tayler and I stood up. We went outside. In the garden)

Tayler: So what's up?

Me: I want to ask you a few questions?

Tayler: Yes sure

Me: Where were you when the wolves attacked at the Drugiomin?

Tayler: Well I was here in town

Me: What? Doing what? Why because you knew exactly that there was going to be a war .

Tayler: You know Lali...I should be asking that ...where were you when the war was going on

Me: W...we..well I had an important work to do

Tayler: Wow...Lali ...what's more important than the people you claim to be your people.

Me: I wanted to be there for them . But something prevented me .

(I looked down)

Tayler: I can help you though

Me: Really?...because the last time I checked you hated me .

(He came close to me)

Taylor: I don't hate you.

Me: Mhh...and you think I should believe that.

(He came more close)

Taylor: Your choice.

(He kept looking at my eyes . It was now getting uncomfortable)

Me: I think we should go back ...to the house.

(He smirked and made his way in. I took a deep breath and joined him. I sat next to Austin.)

Me: Well ...what have you thought about my plan

Nick: Lali it's very dangerous. It can backfire.

Me: But you guys are here to help me right . We can do it...

Taylor: So what's the plan

(I told him)

Ondreaz: Well...Your plan is brilliant. Come on guys we can do it.

(Nick and Austin looked at each other)

Me: What?

Nick: Ondreaz did you just say "we" do you include yourself too.

Ondreaz: Yeah...why wouldn't I help my little brother's girlfriend.

Austin: Wow ...I have never heard you talking like that . Are you okay.

(He touched Ondreaz's forehead)

Austin: Are you okay?

(He just laughed)

Ondreaz: yes I'm okay... I care about you all so much.

(Nick wasn't convinced. He wasn't even smiling)

Nick: Mat and I are going now . Lali please call to update us about the plan .

Me: Sure.

(Everyone said their good byes. It was now Austin and I. I stood up and started cleaning. I threw away all the bottles and moped the floor. I went to the kitchen. As I was busy taking out the things I'm going to need. Austin came in and placed his hands on my waist. He started kissing my neck)

Me: Stop ...I need to cook.

(He didn't listen. Me turned me to face him)

Austin: Don't bother cooking. We're eating out today.

Me: mhh...really?

Austin: Yeah... or let me just say I'm taking you on a date.

Me: You should have told me . How can I go on a DATE with my J ean.

Austin: I will first take you to a boutique. So that you can buy a dress.

Ondreaz's POV

I was on my way to the Oegrade. I need to have a serious talk with dad . My phone ringed . It was Tayler.

Him: hey . .where are you? ...

Me: I'm on my way to the Oegrade.

Him: ohh...I was just wondering. If you meant everything you said to them .

Me: I would never help them . When things backfire . I don't want them to suspect me . And I will also use Lali's plan against her . She will not know what's hitting her.

Him: I must say ...you're clever.

Me: We must stay updated about the plan.

Him: Yeah ...I have to go now

(Well finally I arrived . I parked my car inside. And straight went to dad's bedroom. He was with mom .

)

Alpha:Ondreaz?

Me: The great Alpha.

Mom: Son

(She hugged me)

Mom: How are you

Me: I'm well hey... erm...can you please leave us . I have something important to discuss with dad.

Mom:okay.

(she went out)

Alpha: It sounds like something huge.

Me: Yeah it is .

(I sat next to him. I sighed)

Me: Austin has found his chosen one .

(He face immediately became pale. He stood up)

Alpha: What? That can't be true. My son would have told me. He hides nothing from me.

Me: Well it's true.

(Well dad has always loved Austin more than all of us.)

Me: They have even mated .

Alpha: What ? No...no...no that's not good. My death cannot be this close.

Me: Your death?

Alpha: yes ... A very powerful sorcerer once told me that. Austin's mate will be the death of me .

(Well this old man is full of secrets. I know if I tell him about Lali's plan. He will make sure to kill her. And I will only be left with killing him only. He will make Tayler and I's job easier. So I told him the truth.)

Alpha: I never thought my own son would help a stranger plot against me. And go against my word. I need to do something about this girl.

Me: It's the same girl that was held captive here.

Alpha: the one that escaped. ...

Me: Yes ...and she's the Adila.

(His eyes widened)

Me: What?

Alpha: A...adila?

Me: Yeah..

Alpha: Son ...please leave me alone. I need to think of something.

(That's my call to go back to town. My work is done here.)

Please like and comment

Please don't hate me . The upcoming inserts won't be nice at all. Alot will happen that will break Lali and Austin's relationship.

[06/23, 08:19] Lynne: insert 45

Tony's POV

Nothing I'm doing is working out for me. It seems like the person I'm trying to find is always ahead of me. Well I did try to trace that number plate. But guess what?...it location was showing some strap yard. When I went there . The owner said the car has been here for 2 years . This is really stressing me . Well things between Lali and I are getting there. I have realised that it was not her who killed my father. But my uncle still doubts her for no reason. Well I have also agreed to help Lali with her plan of making sure the beasts are released. Well I was on my way to Austin's house. We're going to meet there . Since tomorrow is the day . I finally arrived. Mat,Nick , Austin and Lali were just sitting in the lounge. The ladies were having wine. While the gents were having scotch. Well I sat down.

Me: Hello everyone...

Nick: Hey ...

(Well Austin isn't really fond of me. I think it's because of the fact that I once made a move on Lali. Well Lali told me Austin's older brother and his friend will also be joining us . Well I have never seen him face to face. All I know is he's dangerous. Well as we were busy having drinks over a slight conversation . I heard two voices talking and they were even laughing . These voices sound familiar. I'm sure I have heard them before but where...They made their way in .)

Austin: Erm...Ondreaz this is Lali's brother. Tony...

Ondreaz: Hey...

(He shook my hand)

Ondreaz: Mhh...he's a vampire...I like it.

Austin: Well this is our friend Tayler...

Tayler: Are you okay?

(I nodded. My mind was busy puzzling. Their voices sound familiar. I think I heard them from the Drugiomin. The day of the war. Yes...yes it was the

two voices that were discussing about attacking Austin. And they also wanted to kill Lali. But why would Ondreaz want his little brother dead? No ...it can't be possible. I need to tell Lali this .)

Nick: Tony...we have been talking and you haven't said anything.

Me: erm..w..well...I do know my part . L...Lali can I speak to you ...outside.

Austin: Not happening...

Me: It's very important

Lali: Come on babe...I will be back.

Austin: No...you won't go out with him...whatever he wants to say. He must say it in front of us .

(I can't say what I want to say in front of them. That can put my life in danger. But I really need to talk to Lali...We cannot trust them . Including them in this plan could be dangerous.)

Lali: Well...you can say it ...if you don't mind.

Me: Well...it's nothing important. I will tell you some other time. I think I should get going. We will meet

tomorrow.

Lali: Don't forget the time and place .

Me: I won't.

Lali: And Tony thank you...thank you very much .
For agreeing to be part of this . Thank you for finally
realizing that I'm innocent. That I never killed your
father.

(She hugged me . Her hug will always be the best .
It's very warm and full of love. How I wish I could
hold her for all my life. She let go and smiled at me.)

Me: Bye...

(I drove straight to my uncle's house)

Uncle: Are you okay...you look troubled.

Me: nah...I'm fine...I just hope everything will go
accordingly.

Uncle: What?

Me: nothing really...

(Well I promised Lali to not tell anyone. Not even
my uncle.)

Uncle: I hope there's nothing you're hiding from me.

Me: N...no ...nothing .

Lali's POV

When Ondreaz and Tayler arrived. Tony's reaction changed . I wonder why . And what is it that he wanted to tell me. Anyway I was in the kitchen washing the glasses. I took my phone and dialed his number. Before I could even say hello. Austin snatched it from me.

Me: What are you doing...

(He saw who I was calling than decided to drop it)

Me: Come on ...Austin...I really need to talk to him

Austin: No you won't.

Me: Okay fine...but can I have my phone back.

Austin: So that you will call him again. No ...no I

won't.

(You know sometimes Austin can be really annoying. It must be something important that Tony wants to share with me . Mxm. I just let him be. I finished than went back to the lounge. Ondreaz and Tayler had already left . I sat next to Mat.)

Nick: You know guys...I don't trust Ondreaz. I know him very well. He has never been this nice. Not even once he has ever helped one of us. Why now? Why would he do something that's against dad.

Austin: I have also been asking myself that.

Nick: We really need to be careful. And Lali I think he shouldn't be the one to go with you and Austin.

(Well the Alpha and I were going to do the exchange at a place that is separating the Oegrate and Drugiomin. I will give him his son and he will free my people. Everything will happen before the midnight.)

Me: Well I will ask Tony to come with .

(Well the others will be there to watch my back. I

don't trust the Alpha at all. He won't just let my people go without a fight . So I'm prepared)

Nick: That's even better.

Austin: let's just hope everything will go smooth.

Me: Yeah...

Kayla's POV

I have been up and down with my wedding organizer. I was hoping Lali will also help me choose the theme ,deco and other things. But she seems busy these days. I barely see her. Since the Christmas is next week . The year will end soon . Meaning I don't have much time to prepare for the wedding. Well my wedding gown designer from Italy will be landing here tomorrow. He will bring the fabric from there. I want something simple yet eye catching. And it must also look classy. And I know he's the only one who can make something like that for me. Well with the venue everything is finalized.

We will first have a matrimonial at the garden. Than we can move inside the hall where all the speeches will be done at. That's what my wedding organizer suggested. I was hoping for something small. Like going to church than later on have a lunch here at home. But Mr Kane is with the wedding organizer. He wants something big. So far he has estimated 72 guests. I don't even know a single person from them . He keeps saying " They're my friends..." Some he would say" We were business partners " . I have just let him be. He looks so happy . And if he's happy . I'm happy too. Well his first wife have been giving me dead looks. She's always busy. I think she's busy planning something that will prevent my wedding from taking place. But she won't succeed. They don't call me KAYLA for nothing. If she dares tries to ruin my wedding. I will make sure to make her life a living hell.

The Alpha's POV

It has been years since I have come here. I vowed to never ask help from him. But what can i do . I'm desperate. I can't die soon. I need to make sure that Austin and his chosen one are separated. And for ever . So I finally arrived. I still remember the road leading to his house like I last visited him yesterday. How can I forget the person who helped me get rid of my father. Anyway I parked my car outside. It's still the same. Just a few things has been changed. Like the paint colour and the fence. Well it hasn't been extended. I knocked once and the door opened. I got in.

Me: Hello!...Simon!

(Still nothing. Can it be possible that he no longer lives here. As I was busy thinking I felt a hand touch my shoulder . I jumped)

Me: You scared me ...

Simon: Me? Scare a whole Alpha . Wow.

(Well Simon is a very powerful sorcerer to ever insist on earth .)

Simon: So what are you doing here. After so many years. I thought you vowed to never come here again.

Me: I know but I need your help.

Simon: Mhh...You want to get rid of your Son's mate.

Me: I wanted to . But I can't. If I hurt her . My son will also get hurt as they have mated .

Simon: So what do you want me to do...

Me: I don't know exactly...Can't mating be undone .

(He chuckled)

Simon: No ...but what I can do is to make sure she forgets about him . Completely. And she will never be connected to him. They will no longer share their experiences .That way she will stay away from your family. And you will get to live longer.

Me: Will that be possible?

Simon: Yeah... anything with me is possible. so when ?

Me: Tomorrow in midnight...I will bring her here. But

the problem is I don't know how...she's very powerful...

Simon: Don't worry about that...so how are things between you and your wife...

Me: Everything is well.

Simon: I know you love your wife so much. But I can also see that your heart still beat for Rosemond(Lali's late grandmother).

Me: It was but not now...

(Well Rosemond is my former lover. Her and I were so inlove. Things changed when I met my chosen . And she also met hers . I loved her so much and I was willing to do anything for our love. The main problem was ...she was a beast . And no one would have accepted her. And my father would have dis owned me . Our love story was concluded like that. The hatred between Beasts and wolves increased more. And she was also supporting her family .)

Simon : Do you know that Austin's mate is her grandchild...

Me: What?

(He nodded)

Me: well I didn't know ...all I knew is she's an A...

(My phone ringed it was Ondreaz)

Me: Yes son

Ondreaz: Dad...is everything ready for tomorrow.

Me: Yeah...thanks for asking.

Ondreaz: Okay ...bye.

(He hunged up.)

Simon: Ondreaz...He...he was...

Me: He was ?

(He smirked)

Simon: Nothing...erm...Well ...he's worthy of being the next Alpha.

Me: Don't ever...and I mean ever say that . He's not the chosen next Alpha.

Simon: Ohh come on...you were also not the chosen one. But here you are . The great Alpha.

Me: Don't compare me with him. I deserved to be an Alpha. I deserved everything.

Simon: that's what he also think about himself.

(He went and sat down)

Simon: Well...Ondreaz took after you. He's actually like you. Hungry for power, Willing to kill his siblings for power and position. He's just like you. Can even kill you .

Me: What do you mean by..."willing to kill his siblings for power..."

Simon: Nothing important...

(Well Simon has always been like this. He don't like telling someone something as it is. Well I won't waste my time begging him)

Me: Well I should get going ...

Simon: See you tomorrow...The great Alpha.

(I went straight to my car and drove back to the Oegrate.)

-where the beasts were imprisoned-

Narrated

Everyone has lost hope . That they will ever be free.
And they were busy talking among themselves

" We trusted her. We thought she came to save us. "

" I will never forget the betrayal she did on us. Not even in my next life."

" I lost my son... During the war . He was the only things that kept me alive . And it's all because of that girl Lali"

The old one: How is it her fault? ...She's not the one who killed him. She's not the one who is keeping us hostage .

" Are you sure about that. After all she's friends with the wolves. You will never know. "

" I wish we all listened to Tayler. That boy warned us about that girl. I wish we listened to him "

The old one: Let's all not lose hope . I trust her . She will come for us.

" Whatever "

Please like and comment

Will try to post another one. I was disturbed while typing this one . That's why it's shot . Sorry

[06/23, 08:19] Lynne: insert 46

Well it is now the time . Mat and I went downstairs.

Kayla: Going somewhere?

Me: Erm...yeah...

Kayla: At this hour.

Mat: We will be back soon.

Kayla: Ok.

(Good thing dad is not home .Or else I would have wasted my time explaining to him .Well I took the car and drove to Austin's place. Nick, Tayler and Ondreaz have already went .From there I went to fetch Tony. We were now on our way to the meeting point.)

Tony: well Lali ...do you remember when I told you that I was at the Drugiomin.

Me: Yes.

Tony: do you remember that i told you that i heard two men talking...

Me: Yes I do ...the one's that attacked Austin . And they also wanted to kill me.

Tony: Well ...I also told you that I heard their voices.

Me: Yeah...

(I was looking him on the mirror.)

Tony: we...well the ...voices I heard ...a..are similar to Ondreaz and Tayler's voices.

Austin: What?

(What? Why would Ondreaz want his brother dead. Is it because that Austin was chosen to be the next Alpha?...maybe I'm thinking way to much.)

Me: Are you sure?

Tony: Yes

Austin: Listen here...I know my brother and I have bad blood towards each other. But I know that he cares about me . He will never do anything to hurt me. Whatever you're trying to do won't work.

Me: but babe...Tony might be telling the truth...

Austin: Wow Lali ...you believe him. Right now Ondreaz is busy helping you. And yet you believe anything about him. You amaze me.

Me: I never said I believe him. But you guys also don't trust him. You guys know that he's capable of doing anything.

Austin: Can we not fight about this stupid thing coming out of a crocodile's mouth.

Tony: Lali...I'm telling the truth ...why would I lie. Please believe me.

(I have never heard Tony so serious and certainly. He must be telling the truth. I need to find out the truth. And I will only know the truth once the beasts are freed. They will tell me if Tayler was there with them or not.)

Me: I believe you. But I will have to find out the truth before doing anything.

(Well I had to give Austin a few punches to make it look real. His mouth was bleeding. I also felt that I don't want to lie. It was hurting. I wiped the blood on my mouth)

Austin: shit! Did you have to hit me this bad.

(I whispered on his ear)

Me: you can take that as a punishment for cheating .

Austin: but...but I thought...

Me: Shhh

(I placed my finger on his lips. To make him keep quiet)

Me:Let's go.

(I covered his face with a sack. I dragged him to where the Alpha was standing.)

Alpha: Ohh...you're late.

(it was him and a few man standing behind him. And I was with Tony. Mat stayed in the car. My people weren't there though)

Me: Listen here old man...I don't have time. Bring my people. And I will give you your son

(He laughed)

Alpha: Ohh ...is it?

(He instructed one of the man who was standing behind him to bring them. Well after alot of waiting was done finally they came. They looked so drained. It's like they were ready to pass out. Immediately my eyes filled with tears. But I had to hold myself and act strong. I looked at them until they went down the hill. I was now unable to see them . I looked at the Alpha.)

Alpha: you know I didn't let them go because of your stupid act and plan. It's because I once ...well I

have a good heart. I knew that this was an act. I know that Austin was never kidnapped.

(Immediately I ran out words. So that means there was a mole among us. But who could it be. I thought about what Tony told me . Could it be possible that Ondreaz told him? . I pushed Austin to him)

Alpha: Take him to the Oegrate. (He shouted) Nick! ...Ondreaz! ...I know you are hiding somewhere. So please come out.

(Ondreaz came out first. Why did he come out . Mxm. Nick followed)

Alpha: You both go home. And you young man. I want you out of here.(Addressing to Tony.)

(Well Tony stood next to me. He took my hand)

Tony: I'm not going anywhere without her.

Alpha: really? (He chuckled) Stop wasting my time and go . Or else you will...

Me: Go ...go Tony . I will take care of myself.

Tony: no ...No I can't leave you here.

Me: don't worry about me. Get out of here now.(I whispered on his ear) Get you and Mat out of here. Trust me I will be fine.

(He slowly turned back and started the car . Well Mat never came out of the car. She doesn't want to be seen by the Alpha. Well it was now the Alpha and i . Everyone had already gone. As I was standing I saw some light. It was like someone was flashing a light on me . I looked there. It was my mother. She's very beautiful even in the dark. She was smiling. She waved at me . Well my grandmother was standing next to her. I wouldn't say she was happy . But she wasn't angry either)

Alpha: Well it's now me and you...

(I looked at him and back at where they were standing. They were no longer there.)

Me: so what's up old man.

Alpha: I want you out of my son's life.

(I chuckled)

Me: You know that's impossible. Austin and I were

meant to be together. I'm his chosen one. And that can never be changed.

Alpha: I'm going to warn you for the last time. Stay away from him little girl .

Me: Never... I will never.

Alpha: now you leave me with no choice.

Me: I hope you know that when you try to harm me. He will also get hurt. And please don't try me. I'm sure you don't want to feel the wrath of an Adila.

(I smirked. He transformed into a wolf. I tried to transform but couldn't. What's happening to me. Why am I being punished like this. I have done everything I was supposed to do what now ...As I was busy surprised by what was happening to me . His wolf ran straight to me . It charged on my face. Shit I fell. I tried several times to transform. Until I was able to . I immediately ran to him. I threw countless punches on his face leaving the marks of my hand. I was now on top of him and I was about to bite his neck. Suddenly I felt headache . I started hearing voices in my head. I transformed back. It

was like three voices were disagreeing. What's happening. I held my head and sat down on the ground. They didn't stop

" MOM WHY ARE YOU DOING THIS "

" LOVE COME ON...SHE HAS DONE WHAT SHE HAD TO DO. "

" NO ...NO ...SHE CAN'T KILL HIM"

"WHAT? WHY? HE'S AN ENEMY...HE MUST BE KILLED "

" NOT HAPPENING "

(They continued talking. The pain was unbearable. Suddenly my eyesight became blurry .)

Alpha's POV

I thought it was going to be difficult. Well I transformed back and went to her. I shook her body. It seems like she's passed out . I took her body to my car . I was driving to Simon's house. I must get this shit done now. After driving for some time I finally arrived. I got into his house.

Simon: Put her to the room I use.

(I carried her to the room. The room was filled with so many things I didn't know of . There was black candles lit on the floor. Making a circle. I put her on the circle. Simon got in)

Simon: Now leave us ...

(They have been in the room for quite some time. It was now in the morning. I stood up and stretched myself. Simon came out . He was sweating and

very angry. I could smell shit)

Me: what's wrong? And where's that smell coming from?

Simon: I never want to see your shit face here. I want my money than we will never meet .

Me: you're not telling me anything? What happened in there

Simon: Why you never told me that she's an Adila. I almost lost my life in there. How dare you hide something like that from me. Or was it your plan? You wanted her to kill me

Me: No ...why would I want you dead. You have always been so helpful to me. I'm what I am today because of you. I'm sorry I forgot to tell you that. When I was about to tell you ...Ondreaz interrupted me .

Simon: Whatever...I don't ever want to see you here...nor that girl.

Me: but ...did you do the job

Simon: Yes ...It's done. She will remember everything but will not remember your son. I have changed her destiny. My spells did a great job. They overpowered the mating they did . I think their love wasn't strong enough as yet . Anyway I'm going to put my life in danger for you. Go and take her body from the room. And I want my money now.

(I went to the car and took out a bag full of money. I gave it to him)

(I went to the room. She was passed out .)

Me: She's passed out though...how could she have tried to kill you.

Simon: I can see you know nothing about being an Adila. I had to use my last and very powerful spell.

Me: Well ...I'm just glad everything went well. And please man ...go and bath.

(He showed me his middle finger . I went to the car and drove off. I will drop her off at her home. When I got there I asked the security guard at the gate to

take her inside. I drove to the Oebrate. When I got there everyone was giving me weird looks .)

Austin: Dad...where's Lali

Me: Well I took her back to her house.

(He took his car keys and went out . Nick followed him . I made my way to my bedroom. Ondreaz got in.)

Ondreaz: Dad...what did you mean when you said Lali is at her house.

Me: I meant exactly that.

Ondreaz: But ...I..I thought you killed her.

Me: No I didn't.

Ondreaz: but..dad

Me: I think you should stop having the idea...that when I leave this world. Of which is far from happening .You will be the next Alpha.

(He didn't say anything and just left my room)

Lali's POV

Well I was woken up by a soft touch on my forehead. I opened my eyes. It was mom. I sat up straight

" No...you should lay down. "

(She continued brushing my forehead)

" I'm sorry I failed to protect you. I failed you as a mother. "

(one tear escaped from her eye.)

Me: No you didn't...and I'm fine now .

" no you're not . Everything has taken a very huge turn . Your destiny has been changed . I'm sorry my dear. "

Me: What do you mean by that

" I have to go now "

(Well I stood up and went to take a quick bath. After I was done . I put on my clothes. My phone ringed. I looked at the caller ID . It was written Austin. And it had love emojis. But whose this Austin guy. And why is his number saved like this on my phone. I ignored it. It kept calling. I was so irritated I decided to block it calls and delete it. I went downstairs. They were having breakfast. I sat down and started eating.)

Kayla: Are you okay?

Me: Yeah...

Kayla: You know Lali I would love it if you would come with me.

Me: Where to?

Kayla: well I will be meeting with my wedding gown designer. I want you to be there with me. Help me choose .

Me: i will definitely come with you.

Kayla: wow that's great.

Simon's POV

I have never felt this defeated before. Not even back in the days have I ever met someone this powerful. Well changing her destiny was easy. And I ended up unmating. While I was still at it I realized that she's an Adila. I decided to use that opportunity to trap her powers. Little did I know that I was actually digging my own grave. She first sent me across the room. She made sure that I feel pain. What makes me angry is that. She wasn't even standing. She kept chanting words. Each and every word did alot to me. I would feel something strangling me. The last one made me shit on my self. I first felt like something was twisting my head. My neck started paining. I tried to shout out my spells but my voice was n't coming out. It left my head and went to my balls. The pain I was feeling I

wouldn't even wish my biggest enemy to feel it . I'm just glad I'm alive. I just have to clean my . It is messed up.

Austin's POV

So when i was in the Oegrade. A severe headache hit me . After sometime I passed out . I was woken by a very strange and painful feeling. It was like my heart was living my body. It started beating so fast . I held it . But that didn't do anything. After that I felt like I wasn't myself. It felt like something precious into my like has been taken. For some time i felt empty. That's when I realized that Lali might be in danger . Well when dad came back. I was surprised that he said he took her home . So I was driving back to the city. I have been trying to call her. She's not answering and now my calls cannot go through. It's clear that she must have blocked my calls. But why? I haven't done anything wrong. I decided to call Mat...

Mat: Austin.

Me: hey ...are with Lali

Mat: no ...I'm at home. But i will sleepover at her house today. Is everything alright

Me: yeah...well...no ...she has blocked my calls.

Mat: what? Why? Did you guys have a fight? Have you cheated again?

Me: no...

Mat: than why would she just block your calls.

Me: I'm also confused as you're...

Mat: that's strange...don't worry when I get to her. I will ask her for you.

Me: I would really appreciate that...

Mat: okay...I have to go now .

(I wonder why is Lali doing this to me. I love her and care so much about her. She's hurting me right

now.)

Lali's POV

I had a great experience with Kayla today. I was helping her choosing the design, fabric and etc. I must say...she will be looking sizzling hot . We also chose a suit for dad. I also chose a design for myself since I'm going to be a matron of honor. We chose the costumes for the bridesmaids and Groomsmen. Well the theme is white with maroon. She showed me the deco on her phone.

Me: it looks amazing...are those maroon flowers artificial?

Kayla: no...it's fresh flowers.

Me: mhh wow I see.

(we were now going home. Tomorrow I'm going to

Drugiomin. I owe them explanation. Why I wasn't there when they were being attacked by the wolves. We finally got home. They were having supper. Mat was also here. I sat down and started eating. After I was done I went to my room. Mat followed me . I took a long ass shower and after I was done I put on my pjs. I sat on the bed.)

Mat: so out with it ? What has Austin done now...

(I was confused)

Me: a..Austin?

Mat: Tell me...what has he done now...this time around I will kick his balls.

Me: okay ...enough now. I'm confused. ..what are you talking about.

Mat: Austin said you blocked his calls ...and you weren't answering your phone?

Me: Yes I did...because he was annoying me . And who is this Austin you're busy asking me About?

(She laughed)

Mat: ohh...please come on . Don't pretend like you don't know him.

Me: I mean it ...I don't know an Austin.

Mat: stop..please stop with your acting.(she was wiping her tears as she was crying because of laughing) it's enough now.

(I just covered my body with a blanket than slept.

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:20] Lynne: insert 47

Mat's POV

I watched Lali as she drifted off to sleep. Maybe she's joking. I will ask her tomorrow again. It's can't be possible. Few days ago they were love birds . Now she's saying she doesn't know him. This game Lali is playing isn't funny at all. Anyway I also joined her . I will ask her again tomorrow. As I was

sleeping my phone started ringing. It was Austin...

Austin: Hey did you talk to her? (I kept quiet) What did she say...did I do something wrong..

Me: ermm...not exactly. I didn't get a chance to ...to speak to her . (He sighed) don't worry...I will talk to her first thing in the morning.

Austin: okay bye...tell her I love her. And If ever I did something wrong. I'm sorry.

Me: I will...bye.

(He sounded so down. Anyway I closed my eyes and slept.)

Mrs Kane's POV

Things are going according to my plan. I will be taking a trip to Australia. I will be looking for Kayla's husband there for myself. I'm sure I will find him.

I'm just waiting for Christmas to pass . So I can book the ticket. My husband got in. I was surprised. Because ever since Kayla came here he barely come into my room. He sat next to me and sighed.

Me: Are you okay?

Him: Yeah...

Me: What brings you here? Because last time I checked...you no longer care for me. I'm no longer your wife.

Him: You know that's not true .

Me: It is ...

Him: Well I have come to talk to you about something...

Me: What is it?

Him: Kayla and my wedding is now close. And I don't want any drama....

Me: What do you mean by drama.

Him: I know you very well dear. I know your way of

thinking. So I'm begging you. Don't do anything stupid on that day . Because I won't like it.

Me: mxm...

(He stood up)

Me: Is that all you wanted to tell me...

Him: yeah...

Me: Wow...why can't you just tell me . When you no longer loves me. I will take my children and leave you with Kayla in peace. Because it's clear I'm no longer your wife. You didn't even ask me how I'm doing . How I'm feeling about your wedding.

Him: Goodnight...see you in the morning.

Me: whatever.

(He went out . Soon ...Soon my love we will be back to normal. I just have to make sure I get him .)

Lali's POV

I woke up in the morning and took a bath. I put on my clothes. As I was busy tying my hair. Mat woke up .)

Me: Goodmorning my love...

(she yawned)

Mat: Hey babe...how are you

Me: I'm well and you..

Mat: Well...Lali can I ask you something?

Me: Sure...

Mat: Did you and Austin have a fight?

Me: Not again please...how many times must I tell you. That I don't know the Austin you're busy nagging me about.

Mat: Okay Lali...It's game over now . Atleast tell me your friend...did he cheat

Me: I really don't know what you're talking about .

Mat: Let me show you his picture...since you wanna

continue acting stupid.

(She showed me the picture)

Me: Nah...I have never met him before. And he's not my type .

(Mat laughed)

Mat: Type? Wow...just a few days you guys were crazy in love.

Me: I think you're mistaking me with someone else. You know me very well. And I would have told you If I'm seeing someone.

Mat: J hoo...Lalimi will amaze you.

Me: I'm going to the Drugiomin . Do you want to come with me?

Mat: erm...No...I have somewhere to go to.

Me: okay bye than.

(I went downstairs to the kitchen and made myself a smoothie. I poured it in my bottle juice and went to the car. I drove off.)

Mat's POV

I just don't know what's wrong with Lali. I really need to find out . I took a quick bath and put on my clothes. I went downstairs and had breakfast with everyone.

MrK: Where's Lali?

Me: She had to go somewhere.

Mrk: mhh I see.

(We finished eating. I asked the driver to take me to Austin's place. Luckily he was with Nick . Well things between Nick and I are not the same as they were . It's like the spark that our relationship had is starting to fade .)

Austin: so did you talk to her? What did she say?

Me:erm..well(I sat down) Well a strange thing has happened to Lali. She said she doesn't know you .

(Austin laughed)

Austin: I didn't know she was also a comedian. But on a serious note. What did she say.

Me:She said that. I kept asking her . I even showed her your picture. She said she has never met you before.

Austin: Lali is being childish. I need to talk to her. Can I see her today.

Me: no...she went to the Drugiomin.

Nick: Does she remember everything else?

Me: I think so ... yeah. Because she remembers me and everyone. The Drugiomin.

Nick: Mhh i see.

Lali's POV

I finally got to the Drugiomin. I drove in . I went out of the car. Well no one was paying me any attention. I decided to go into the Drugiomin. Well the ladies were busy cleaning. I went to Kane lady. She bowed a little.

Me: Is everyone okay? What happened?

" Well ...everyone is angry."

Me: Angry ?

" Yes ...they're angry at you "

Me: At me? But what did I do ?

" Well... They said that you knew that the wolves were going to attack us . That's why you didn't come. And also that you're friends with the wolves. You are also responsible for us being held captive .
"

Me: what? But that's not true.

(She kept quiet)

Me: ermm...can you please do me a favour . Please

call everyone to the chamber.

" I don't think they will come."

Me: Tell them it's very important. I know they're angry and all . But they will never disobey me .

(She nodded and went out. I went to the chamber and sat on the golden chair in the front. As I was busy admiring the chair I heard noise. People were making noise.)

" WE DON'T WANT HER HERE"

" SHE MUST LEAVE...WE WERE FINE WITHOUT HER"

" HAS SHE COME TO FINISH US OFF...I ALWAYS KNEW THAT THESE PEOPLE WANTS NOTHING ABOUT US ."

(They made their way in and continued speaking)

" SHE MUST BE CHASED OUT OF HERE."

" SHE'S A GOOD FOR NOTHING RICH GIRL."

Me: Okay that's enough.

(They didn't stop . I stood up)

Me: IT'S ENOUGH NOW...YOU ALL HAVE SAID ENOUGH. CAN I ALSO TALK NOW.

(They kept quiet)

Me: I know you all are angry. I know y'll are blaming me for everything that happened. But it wasn't my intention to not come here.

" WHERE WERE YOU THAN?"

me: I ...I was..(why can't I remember where I was. I held my head as I was having a headache.)

" SPEAK UP"

Me: Well ...well...I can't really remember what happened. But what I can tell you all is that . I wanted to come . I also didn't know that they were going to attack here on that day. I swear. And for being kept hostage. I had nothing to do with that. I went extra miles to make sure you all are set free . If I didn't want you all out and safe . I wouldn't have done all of this . I wouldn't have risked my life for you guys .

(They were now quite)

Me: I'm sorry. I'm very sorry that you guys had to go through alot without me . I'm sorry that we lost members of the Drugiomin. I'm deeply sorry.

"I lost my son...my only son on that day. What will I be without him. He was the reason I didn't kill myself back than when we were struggling. He was such a kind and loving boy . They killed him. He was killed by the wolves. (She was now crying. That touched me alot . I myself was also crying) "

(Another woman talked)

" We lost our brothers and sisters on that day. Our lives won't be the same without them . They were brutally killed and burnt into ashes. "

(It went quite for some time . Until one lady broke the silence)

"Justice must be done . Justice for our loved ones must be done. And you will help us . You will be part of this coming war."

(They all agreed with each other)

Me: No...no we can't. We can't go into a war again. I know you all are hurting right now . But starting a war will result in more deaths. Can't we just heal and move on with our lives .

" Not happening...We will also go and attack them. They're living happily over there . And we're busy hurting. We're sorry but we won't listen to you this time . "

" Justice will be done and done soon. "

(They started agreeing with each other. Going

against them now will only result in them hating me
)

Me: okay ..but first can we have a memorial day for the ones that passed on. Their deaths must be very respected. They died while protecting everyone. The least we can do is to show them that even though they are no more . We still appreciate and care for them . They will forever be known and remembered for their bravery .

(They all nodded)

Me: You all are dismissed now .

(I called one lady .)

Me: I don't know if you can help with something.

" Anything "

Me: I want you to get me the pictures of everyone that died . I need to make sure they're enlarged and frames . For the memorial service. "

" when will the memorial day be"

Me: If I manage to get everything today . Tomorrow we can do it . But I will let everyone know before the end of today. Can I have your number because I'm going back to the city.

(She gave me . Well I went to my bedroom. I will wait for the pictures than I can go back to the city. As I was sitting my grandmother appeared)

"The war...it won't happen "

Me: excuse me?

"I said the war won't occur "

(I stood up)

Me: It will.

(I felt something strangling me .)

Me: STOP...PLEASE STOP.

(it let go)

" I said the war won't occur."

(She disappeared. No ...no I'm tired . I'm tired of everything . Why does she always control my life . Why can't I use my powers freely. Why does she always has to decide for me. I'm tired. I'm tired of her. From now onwards no one will ever stop me from doing anything. Because it's clear granma is using me . My mother appeared)

" Dear... I'm sorry but you will have to listen to her."

Me: no...never...they want justice. They want justice for their dead loved ones. And I won't stand on their way. I will also help them.

" But you can't disobey your granny dear. "

Me: I can and I will. Mom...i love you very much. i

appreciate everything you've been doing even though you're not alive. But i think it's about time you guys retire to death. You guys must let me do everything in my own way.

" Are you sure"

Me: I have never been this sure in my life .

" Do you know that when we leave. You will no longer be alerted if something bad is about to happen . You will no longer be shown anything

Me: I'm ready for anything that I will encounter. It about time I take control of my own life. I can't always be bossed around by grandmother . No ..I'm tired.

(She smiled and came to me)

" Do you know what?"

Me: (smiling) what?

" I have been waiting for this day. Where my daughter is finally grown up. To be honest you have passed all the tests we have set you."

Me: Tests?

" Yes...And you have passed them all. You're now ready to face the world. Alone . Without our guidance. I'm sorry that while testing you you lost something very special to you. But I pray that things go back to the same . When the time is right . "

Me: i don't understand. ..

" You will some day. So here is what will happen .
Today at 00:00. You will go to the secret room.
Don't worry Gladis will show you"

Me: Gladis?...ohh the old lady that ...

" Yes that one...I don't have much time. You must go
into that room . She will show you what to do there.
That will chase us away forever. We have been
here for too long now . It's about time we leave. I
have done all my duties towards you. "

(I know it's painful but I must be done. I can't have
grandmother busy threatening my life .)

" See you later for the last time later sweety"

(She disappeared. Well I straight went to Gladis. I

knocked and she opened.)

Her: Lalimi?

Me: Hey ...how are you

Her: I'm fine dear. ..how are you?

Me: I'm fine...and happy that I was able to free you all.

Her: You have really grown up. I liked how you handled everyone there.

Me: I tried...i actually came to...

Her: i know...to show you the secret room. I will but not now . We must go there before midnight. So when the time comes everything is ready .

Me: thanks.

Her: are you sure you want to do this...

Me: Yeah...

Her: okay I will help you than.

(Well that lady gave me the pictures. But she wasn't able to get all of them . so I asked to give me names instead. Well I drove back to the city. The first I did I went to enlarge the pictures and frame them. I also asked them with the names to print them and put them in frames . Well it will take long so I went to buy candles. I bought so many white votive and taper candles. I went to fetch the pictures than went home. I will drive back to the Drugiomin later. I need to tell dad about everything.)

Please like and comment

I don't want any dramatic comments like

" why is Lali not shown what happened to her"

" why she is not shown that Austin is her chosen one. They once dated"

-Her granny is in control.

[06/23, 08:20] Lynne: insert 48

Lali's POV

I was driving back to the Drugiomin. Instead of being sad I'm actually glad. That finally I will be in control of my own life. Yes I will miss them.

Warning me about dangers . Well what can I say. It's about time I deal with different situations in my own way . I'm also glad that eventhough when I was growing my mother wasn't there. Atleast I got a chance to be with her. I know it wasn't daily but I liked it when she would appear in my bedroom. Appear on the mirror. Well that was very great. Well I also remember when I was still in school. That girl who said she was my twin sister. She wasn't as nice as my mother . But I also appreciate that I got time to meet them eventhough they were not living. Grandpa...well with him i really don't have much to say about him. And there's my grandmother. Ayy I will never understand that old women. Her

appearances changes. Sometimes she would be happy . Sometimes she would threaten my life . But again I enjoyed those moments. I'm grateful that I got time to meet them . Eventhough I wish they were alive . But what can I say. Life has it's tribulations. So I brought everything we will need for the memorial. I got to the Indruig. I asked the ladies to take things from the car into the Inside. Well I s traight went to the secret room. Well Gladis was already there.

Me: Hey ...granny

Her: You're late...and time is running out .Get everyone out of here now.

Me: Why though?

Her: J ust do as I tell you...

(Well I went downstairs and told them that they can leave . I'm glad they were done with everything. I locked the main doors and went back to the secret room.)

Her: Okay...everything will be done up in the terrace.

Me: Okay..

Her: Take this...

(Well it was a box that had things I didn't know. Some of it was made of glass . Some contained candles. There was also different necklaces that looked old . They all had a sign of a beast. I took one and looked at it closely. It had a name . I took more necklaces they all had different names. I looked at them all . One had my mother's name . Well I know her name because it was written on the cover page of her album. There was also a clock. It was small .)

Me: And what is this clock for...

Her: it's not just a clock. When the time is 00:00...it will make a very big noise . That will wake up all the dead walking people. Well we will use the necklaces to gather the people we want . But you will see everything. Let's go ...

(We made our way to the terrace. There was also a

book inside of the box. I put the box down and took it. As I opened it a wind started blowing. Gladis snatched it from me .)

Her: what are you doing? ...you're not supposed to open it now.

Me: Well if you told me earlier...I wouldn't have...

Her: When the clock makes the noise . You will read page 29 of this book. Clear.

(I rolled my eyes)

Me: Yeah.

(Well she started placing all those made of glass things around the terrace. She would place a necklace next to each and also mumble words I couldn't understand. After she was done she took a family photo and put it on the small table made of wood. She put two glasses that had candles inside in front of the photo.)

Her: Well let's wait for 00:00.

(it was 23: 32 . I decided to go and take throw blankets as it is very cold up here. I made coffee for

us . Well the time was taking long . I was getting sleepy. Gladis started with her stories. As we were still talking it started becoming windy . I looked at the clock it was 23:59)

Her: it's time .

(Well she went and lit the two candles. She put all the necklaces inside those glasses. She put some white liquid also inside. The clock started making a very irritating sound. I held my ears.)

Gladis: Now!Now! LALI! ...read the scripture.

(I hurried and took the book. I turned to page 29 I'm supposed to read. I tried reading it but I couldn't understand the language that was written. I shouted)

Me: I CAN'T READ IT

Gladis: WHAT DO YOU MEAN YOU CAN'T READ IT ?

Me: I DON'T UNDERSTAND WHAT'S WRITTEN.

Her: WHAT? ...WHAT DO YOU MEAN YOU DON'T UNDERSTAND WHAT'S WRITTEN THERE...THE ADILA IS THE ALSO PERSON THAT CAN READ THAT. AND YOU'RE THE ADILA...LALI WE'RE

RUNNING OUT OF TIME . READ FAST.

(I tried reading but still nothing. I was now not even able to see the hand writing)

Me: I CAN'T SEE.

her: DON'T IRRITATE ME ...READ.

(I closed my eyes . Suddenly I let out every big growl. I opened my eyes and tried reading again . This time I was able)

pg 29.

The Drudoo time .

All the beasts that are dead walking are called . As of reading this I'm finally setting them free. They can now rest in peace. I'm now aware of how my powers work . I understand everything about being an Adila and how I should use my powers. I now call them all .

(After I was done reading that . A very big wind started. The clock was still making that sound. But it was now bearable. The wind stopped . They all appeared. Grandmother was standing there with her arms crossed. She came to me)

" Don't ever harm wolves. I want peace between the beasts and wolves. If you harm them...especially the Alpha...I will ...i will."

(I chuckled)

Me: you will what grandmother?...because to day is your last day dead walking.

(She faded away)

. Well my mother came forward to me . She hugged me . She had tears.)

" Bye my little princess. I love you . There's alot about your father you don't know . But soon you will find out. Here is a goodbye vision."

(Well I closed my eyes. I heard two women crying. I looked closer it was Nomhle and her Mom. They were tied by chains on their necks and one leg each. I opened my eyes)

Me: n...Nomhle?

" Yes...your friend needs you the most. She needs you. I know she had done you wrong. And will again. But she's your friend. You need to help her out . "

(The sound of the clock was slowly coming down.)

" I have to go now . I will forever love you . Bye ."

(She slowly faded. The sister I was talking about came to me . She hugged me . After that a very big wind came again. It than went away very fast. When it was over . All the things that were placed on the terrace were no longer there . I felt Gladis touching my shoulder. I turned and she wiped my tears . I didn't realize I was crying . I just hugged her)

Her: You're very brave Lali. I have never met someone this young and brave.

(She brushed my back .)

Her: Go there(Pointing). That's where your mother's necklace was placed. She left you something there.

(I wiped my tears and went there. It was a locket. It had her picture and my sister's. Well it's like my picture and hers . Well we do look alike with my

sister. Well I put it on and kissed it .)

Her: Let's go Inside.

(we went to sit next to the fire place.)

Her: You must keep this book very safe. Someone can just end your life with it . There is a page that contain your death. So you must make sure it's safe. And no one must know about it.

(I took it)

Me: Can I ..like open it now.

Her: Yeah...It was only that time you weren't allowed to open it .

(She sighed)

Her: wheew...I will also get rest. Your grandmother used to trouble me every night hey .

Me: why ?

Her: We were friends. I would be busy telling her my stories.

(I laughed)

Me: you and your stories. (I yawned) I think I should go and sleep now .

(I went to my bedroom . I kept thinking about how Nomhle and her mom. I wonder what trouble they have got themselves in. Anyways I drifted off to sleep.)

Austin's POV

I was still not falling asleep. I was busy thinking about Lali. I took my phone and started looking at her pictures.

Me: I miss you...I miss you alot my love. But why? Why would you punish me like this . Everything was great between us. What has changed now? ... You know that I love . And also that I can't live without you. You came into my life unexpectedly. You gave me a second chance in love . When I lost my wife . I told myself that i will never date anyone. But you

came . You changed all that. You brought back the hope of happiness in my life.

I felt tears on my cheeks I wiped them . I went to the kitchen and took a bottle of whiskey and started drinking it from the bottle.

Lali's POV

It was 10 o'clock. I woke up. I took a bath and put on my black velvet dress and sandals. I let my hair loose. I went downstairs. A lady made her way to me .

Her: everything is done ... In the garden.

Me: wow...thanks... Can I ask you something?

Her: Yes...

Me: on the day of the war...was Tayler here.

Her: yes...he was here. And was busy badmouthing you.

Me: mhh ...i see.

(So if Tayler was here that means that he lied to me . And also Tony was telling the truth. I got you . Anyway I went to the garden. Everything looked so peacefully and beautiful. There were golden chairs . I sat on the one. Each picture had a candle in front of it. Well they started doing their speeches. A person would lit a candle that is in front of his or her relative than do a speech. After they were all done . It was my turn to say a few things .)

Me: Ermm ...My deepest condolences to each and one of you who had lost a family member.

(well i didn't have much to say. My mind occupied about Nomhle and her mom. And also about Tayler. Light food was served after that I drove back home. I don't want them busy telling me about the war. Well I got there . They were in the lounge.)

Me: hey everyone.

Zia: ohh .. hey Lali...you just arrived at the right time

.

Addi: so we were disagreeing about where we should spend Christmas.

Me: Okay.

Addi: I was thinking we could go back to Capetown.

Zia: but the boys want us to go to Durban. So what do you think.

Me: let's spend our Christmas here at home. It will be so much fun. Later on we can have a mini party in our of our rooms. It will be so much fun.

Kayla: that even great . I will hired chefs to cook for us .

(Well Mat had been quite. I pulled her to my room.)

Me: friend are you okay?

Mat: yes ...but Au...yeah ...I'm fine. So how did everything go .

(well I told her everything and even showed her the

locket)

Mat: wow...it's very beautiful. I have never seen one like this .

(I told her about Nomhle)

Mat: She deserves it . Leave her there .

Me: no...I can't. She's my friend. I can't ...

Nomhle's POV

What can I say. Things took a quick turn when we were still enjoying ourselves. I don't even know how we got here . But all i know is Mike's uncle is behind this . They're three men guarding us . And they do whatever they like with our bodies. Not even a single day pass without them forcing themselves on us. My mother has lost hope if we would ever be free again. Well not even prayer has helped. We are now just ready to die. We can't bare the pain anymore. They also beat us up and starve us to death. When it's cold they would splash cold

water on us . We would sleep shaking in our wet clothes .

Please like and comment

Will post again today.

Goodnight everyone

[06/23, 08:20] Lynne: insert 49

Lali's POV

Mat and I were still in my room. We were busy talking. Her cellphone rang. She excused herself and went to the balcony. After some time she came back .

Mat: erm...Lali . Don't you think it will be nice if we

go out .

Me: Go out?

Mat: Yeah...to have some drinks. We will take the girls along.

Me: I don't think i will be able to. I'm very stressed right now.

Mat: That's the exact reason why i want us all to go out. You need some fresh air .

Me: Okay if you say so. Let me go and freshen up first.

Mat: Okay...in the meanwhile I'll go and tell the girls.

Me: Sure.

(I took a quick shower . After I was done I put on a skinny J ean, white Nike air force sneakers and a black crop top . I took my J ean jacket and bag . Mat got in.)

Mat: We can go now .

(Mat decided to drive. Of which is strange because I'm the one who always drives. Well she drove into

a very big house.)

Me: I thought we were going to a club .

Mat: Nah...Well a ...My friend invited us here. He's having a mini party.

Me: He?

Mat: Yeah...let's go we're already late.

(I took my bag . We went in . As I was walking in I suddenly felt a wind blow my hair . I felt a strange feeling . I was feeling I have been in this place before)

Mat: Are you okay?

Me: Yeah...it's just that it's too windy in here.

Mat: Windy?

(she pulled me to what looked like a lounge. Nick was sitting with some guy. They looked alike a little. I sat down)

Nick: Hey Lali.

Me: Hey...how are you?

Nick: I'm fine.

Me: I thought Mat you said ...there's a party.

Mat: Erm..yeah.

Nick: Lali this is my brother Austin.

Me: okay...you guys look alike a little.

(That's strange. I have known Nick for sometime.
But how come I don't know his brother)

Austin: Hey ...

Me: Hi...

(Well he didn't remove his eyes from my eyes. We
looked at each other for some time. His eyes were
talking. They were saying alot . My eyes and his
were having a very deep conversation of which I
don't know of. Well I was interrupted by Mat)

Mat: Ermm...Lali the girls and I have to go
somewhere...we will be back.

Me: what? I'm also coming along. How can you
guys ...

Mat: we will be back ...we're going to buy a few

drinks.

Me: Okay...please don't stay long.

(They went out . Nick followed them. It was now this Austin guy and me . Well I could feel his eyes looking at me .)

Me: Erm...can I use the bathroom...

(He kept quiet. Actually he was busy staring at me .I cleared my throat)

Austin: Sorry lo...ermm...were you saying something ?

Me: yeah...can I see the bathroom?

Austin: Sure ...second room upstairs.

(I took my bag and went upstairs. I got inside the room and straight went to the bathroom. I did my job and washed my hands. I looked myself at the mirror. Why does I feel like I have been in this house before. It's like I'm reliving my life. Maybe it's Deja vu..yeah it could be it . I took my bag and went out of the bathroom. There he was standing on the closed door. I went towards him)

Me: Erm..m..can I pass?

(So fast he pinned me on the door . He placed his hand on my waist while the other one was balancing on the door. His touch . Was very warm and intense . It like he has touched me before . He started touching my face . Instead of being angry I was responding to his touch. Of which is strange. How can I allow a stranger to get this close to me . I pushed him . I tried to open the door but it was locked.)

Me: W...wh..what? Why did you lock the door.

Austin: I want us to talk..

Me: I don't get you...talk about what?

Austin: Please drop your act ... it's you and I now .

Me: What act? What are you talking about...I have just met you... and

Austin: LALIMI...DON'T IRRITATE ME !...IF I DID ANYTHING WRONG TO YOU. I APOLOGIZE. NOW CAN THINGS GO BACK AS THEY WERE BETWEEN US.

(His was voice was very Intimidating. I had tears on my eyes)

Me: What things ? What are you talking about?

Austin: I SAID DON'T IRRITATE ME ...DON'T PRETEND AS IF YOU DON'T KNOW ANYTHING.

(I decided to keep quiet. Because if I continue talking I might end up getting very angry and hurt him. He also had tears in his eyes . He sat down)

Austin: Lali...don't you remember the times we spent together?(His voice was now polite.) Don't you remember the first day I met you. Don't you remember that night when...

(He continued talking. As he was talking I felt a sharp pain on my heart. It started beating so fast that I was slowly losing my breath. Suddenly a very bad headache attacks me . My vision became blurry and I fell on the floor.)

Austin's POV

When Lali made her way to the lounge . I couldn't stop looking at her. The moment she started looking at me back . My heart started beating so fast. Well it was Nick and Mat's plan to spend some time with Lali. Maybe and just maybe she can tell me what's wrong. I decided to follow her to my room I told her to go to. Well I locked the door and decided to rest my back on it . She made her way to me. I couldn't stop myself . My heart was in control. I started touching. She was also responding to my touch. Well after that she started telling me that she doesn't remember. I got very angry. But I soon calmed down. I started reminding her of how we first met . Well I don't really know what happened to her after. She just fainted. I ran to her .

Me: Lali! Open your eyes babe

(I checked her pulse it was there. I carried her to my bed and covered her with a blanket. I went and took my doctoral kit. I started checking her heart beat . And also her temperature. It was very high . I gave her an injection because it's looks like she just

had a heart attack. I went downstairs they were back already. But it was Mat and Nick only)

Me: where are others...

Nick: She dropped them off at their house.

Me: Okay...

Mat: Where's Lali...what did she say.

Me: Well she was busy saying she doesn't know what I'm talking about. When I started reminding her of how we first met she passed out .

Mat: What? Where is she right now?

Me: She's in my room upstairs.

(Mat went upstairs.)

Nick: Erm...Austin I have to go somewhere. It's very urgent.

Me: Wha? But...

(Before I could say more he went out and I heard a car driving off. I wonder where he's going this late .

Anyway I went upstairs. Lali was still passed out . I sat next to her .)

Nick's POV

Dad...I'm sure that he has something to do with Lali's condition. Before Lali started acting this strange. She was with dad. Could it be possible that dad went to Simon. Simon is the only person who can make a person forget about his/her love . Well mom once told me about how dad knew him. And the things they did together . Anyway I was driving to the Oebrate. Yes this late. I need answers from dad . If he's the one responsible and why would he do that . Because as far as I know . He doesn't know that Lali is Austin's chosen one. Well I arrived very late . Everyone was asleep. I went to dad's room . I knocked.

Him: Come in.

(I got inside. To my surprise he wasn't sleeping. And mom wasn't in the room. I bowed down a little.)

Me : The great Alpha.

Him: Son...what brings you here...and at this time.

Me: Dad ...I want you to tell me . Why?

Him: Why what?

(Well for the first I'm not scared of dad. I wasn't intimidated by him. I think it's because I'm angry.)

Me: What did you do to Lalimi? ...

Him: lalimi?...Austin's chosen one?

(How does he know that. Because we kept it as a secret)

Me: Ch...chosen one? Who told you that?

Him: that doesn't matter.

Me: What you did to her?

Him: Well ...I did nothing to her...what happened?

Me: Dad please...I know you very well. You're the

one who...

Him : Okay okay okay. Yes ...I did what I had to do. I had to make sure Austin and I are fine. And safe from her .

Me: Safe?...what do you mean by that...

Him: She is the death of me . So I can't let her close to my son nor my family. That way I will live long.

Me: What? What do you mean she's the death of you.

Him: The more she becomes close with Austin. The less my days are on this earth. She will be the one to kill me .

Me: But why...

Him: That ...I can't tell you.

Me: So you went to Simon?

Him: Where else would I have went to . Simon is very powerful.

Me: Dad you need to undo whatever you did to her. Austin is not taking it right. He's broken and hurting.

He loves her. He loves her with his whole life . By you separating them . You're hurting him more.

Him: Don't worry about Austin. He will come around.

Me: Wow dad...I thought you cared for him and his happiness.

Him: his happiness doesn't lay with that girl .

Me: Dad you don't understand. Here is what is going to happen. If you don't go back to that Wizard of yours and undo whatever you did to Lali. I will tell Austin the truth. I will tell him that you're the one responsible.

Dad: it's fine you can go ahead and tell him . But it will never change anything.

Me: Okay...okay .

(I went and looked for mom. I asked one of the servants. They told me she's at the fire place . I went there and sat next to her. She was having coffee.)

Me: You fire and coffee. (She smiled and I

chuckled) you will never change.

Her: It's so warm here . When did you arrive.

Me: A few minutes ago. I had something important to discuss with dad .

Her: mmm. I see. How is Matilda?

Me: She's fine.

Her: i hope you know that I don't approve your relationship with her. She's your cousin after all.

Me: Far cousins. It not like we grew up together. Dad never treated them like part of our family.

Her: But that doesn't give you the reason to date her.

Me: Our fathers are cousins. That's very far.

Her: Mxm...whatever.

Me: erm ...mom... I need your help.

Her: Anything my son...

Me: Well do you perhaps have an idea where I can find Simon.

Her: What? What do you want from that old

conniving sorcerer.

Me: I need him. It's for a good reason.

Her: Tell me what is it that you want from him.

Me: I can't tell you now ...but when everything is alright. I will tell you. I just need his address.

Her: I don't want you near that man. He cannot be trusted.

Me: Come on mom...I'm not like dad. I don't want to harm anyone. I just need his help.

Her: if you say so . Give me your phone. I just hope he hasn't relocated.

(She gave the directions and the address.)

Me: Thank you...thank you very much. I have to go now.

Her: be careful my son. Take care of yourself.

(I kissed her cheek and drove back to the city.
During the day I will drive to Simon's house. I can't drive now . It's very late.)

Lali's POV

I woke up in this strange room. I held my head as I was having a sharp headache. I stood up and went downstairs. I saw Mat talking to Nick's brother. When she saw me . She immediately went to me.

Mat: Are you okay.

(I nodded)

Mat: Let's go home.

(She drove home. They were having breakfast. We also joined them)

Kayla: Your dad liked the idea of spending Christmas here at home . So it will be like that.

(I smiled faintly. After I was done . I went upstairs and took a quick bath. I put on my tracksuits and push ins. I sat on the bed. Mat got in)

Mat: I'm going home today.

Me : Why? Please stay.

Mat: Dad said he misses me . And we also need to prepare for Christmas.

Me: Come on...you guys can come over here for Christmas. It will be so much fun

Mat: I will ask dad. If he would like to .

Me: okay...I'm thinking of finding Nomhle and her mom tonight. I want to spend Christmas with them too.

Mat: Okay...you're so kind dear. I have never met someone as kind as you're. You put your life in danger for someone's safety. I wouldn't ask for any friend. You're the best person to ever exist in this life . And for that may God keep filling your life with happiness.

(We hugged)

Mat: okay bye ...we will talk on the phone. Call me tonight. I will come with you.

Me: Really?

Mat: Yeah...

Me: i thought you hated her.

Mat: don't make me think otherwise.

(I smiled and raised both my hands. She held them)

Mat: bye...see you.

Me: bye.

Nick's POV

Well I slept for a few hours. I was now on my way to Simon's house. I have been driving for long now. I drove to a petrol station. I filled the car with petrol and went to buy a pie and cold drink. After that I continued with my journey. After some time I finally reached my destiny. So I parked my car outside this house. Well the gate wasn't locked . I went in and knocked on the door. It opened. I went inside. There he was . Standing and looking at me.

Simon: owhh...Nick my boy. What an honor to be visited by you.

(I raised my eyebrow)

Simon: Come...come this way.

(we sat on the couches)

Me: I want you to undo what you did to Austin's chosen one.

(He laughed.)

Me: I don't think any of what I said is a joke.

(He continued laughing)

Me: When I tell her everything. And also give her the directions to here. We will see who will have the last laugh.

(He stopped laughing. I think he fears Lali)

Simon: well ...the spell I used on her. It's very powerful. Undoing it will mean I have to die first that it can be undone. When I die . Things will go back the same.and dying is far

From me . Meaning her and becoming normal again is far from happening. So i think you should just let this go. Go and find your chosen one. She's

out there living a nightmare of his life .

(i stood up. I don't want to listen to him. Mom told me he's conniving. I don't want to fall into his trap. anyway I stood up and made my way to the door. He spoke)

Simon: And please...stop trying to remind her. By doing that you are doing a lot of damage. Austin must not try anything to remind her. She will become harmful to him.

(I just closed the door and went to my car.)

Please like and comment

Don't you all worry . I will post again before the end of this day.

[06/23, 08:21] Lynne: insert 50

Lali's POV

I went to dad's office. I need to update him about what's happening. I entered and sat on the couch in there.

Dad: Lali...is everything okay?

Me: Yeah...I just need to speak to you.

(He stopped what he was doing and paid attention to me . I started telling him about everything. I also told him I'm going to find Nomhle and her mom.

Their in danger.)

Dad: I must say...you're kind. J ust like your mom. She always cared for everyone. She used to care for others more than she did for herself. I'm glad you took after her.

(I just smiled)

Me: I have to go now.

(We hugged. I went to the garage and took a car. I drove to Mat's house. She was already waiting for me at the gate . She got inside. We drove to a place a bit far from the city .)

Mat: So how are we going to find her...

Me: Well...Nomhle and I shared a very strong bond . We were friends since our childhood. And her mother...well before she changed. She was like a mother to me. She cared alot for me . She treated me like her own daughter. So I don't think it will be difficult to find them. I will use my Adila powers to find them . And that can only be possible if they are still alive .

Mat: Okay...let's do it than.

(I went out of the car.)

Me: I just hope there's no one in the streets now . I don't to freak people out.

Mat: It's almost midnight. I'm sure everyone is at their homes now.

Me: I hope so... Okay...

(I closed my eyes .)

Me: Mat...

Mat: Yes dear.

Me: I will move at a very high speed. So it will be better if you transform now.

Mat: Sure.

(i opened my eyes. She transformed. I went to her wolf. I brushed it head.)

Me:Hey...I missed touching you.

(She brushed her head on mine. I smiled. I stood next to her and closed my eyes. And called the Adila powers to take over. It became windy. I transformed. Everything looked red . I wasn't in control of my body . I started moving very fast. In such a way that every tree that was blocking my way fell. After alot of moving around the city. Finally I stopped. I transformed into myself. I was standing in front of a very big building. Every room looked dark from here. There was only one room that had a light on. Mat's wolf arrived. It looked tired)

Me: You did great.

(She transformed to herself. And so dramatic as she is . She gasped for air.)

Mat: I almost died. I have never ran like that before.

(She threw herself on my arms .)

Mat: were you trying to kill me.

(I just laughed .)

Me: Let's go inside.

Mat: Are you sure this is the place?

Me: Yeah...My power can never lead me astray.

Mat: Let's go and kick some ass than.

Me: Let's search that room first. (I was pointing at the room that had lights on)

Mat: Let's go!

(Gosg she was so excited. We went into this building. The door was locked so we decided to use the window that was open. We got in. We decided to use a lift upstairs. Well we made our way to that room. We listened on door . A women was crying. And a Male was talking .

" Keep quiet! Quiet and stop irritating me"

(Mat and I looked at each other. We both nodded. We pushed the door. It was locked . We transformed into our creatures and broke the door. We got in . I transformed to myself and went to Nomhle. Well Mat was busy biting that man's throat. When she was done . She transformed and came to us)

Nomhle: L...l...Lali. you ...you.

Me: Shh...

(She hugged me and sobbed.)

Nomhle: L..Lali...m..mom...

Me: Where is she ?

Nomhle: They ...they took her away. Mike's uncle took her along with him.

Me: what? ...Did they say where they were taking her.

Nomhle: I heard them talking about the graveyard.
Gr...graveyard next to the new park. Lali please go
and save her.

Me: don't worry...

(I looked for the keys to remove the chains that tied
her.)

Me: Erm...Mat please...please take her home. I will
go and look for her mom.

Mat: are sure you will be okay...

Me: Yeah... Ermm...Nomhle don't be scared of Mat.
She will take you straight home .

Nomhle: In..in that form?

Me: J ust close your eyes. In a short while you will
be home.

Nomhle: N...no I...

(Before she continued Mat transformed and took
her by her mouth. She than ran away. I tried to use
the Adila powers. But I kept wondering in the city . I
stopped by the new park that Nomhle told me
about. I transformed to myself. I started walking to

the graveyard. I entered the gate. There was a car parked far away. I made my way there. It looked like he was digging. I finally got to him. He stopped when he saw me . Well nice thing about being a beast. Is that even in the dark you can still see . You don't need light.)

Him: What are you doing here little girl ?

(it was not Mike's uncle)

Him: Go away before I hurt you.

Me: I would like to see you try.

Him: are you challenging me ?

(He made his way to me. I didn't hesitate. I kicked him so hard and he fell on the ground . I went to him and dragged him by his clothes. I pinned him on the car and started throwing punches on his face. Well I know I'm not myself right now . His mouth was now bleeding. He was crying like a boy . My claws came out. I ripped his chest down to his stomach. More blood came out of his mouth and

noise . He died immediately. While I was still searching the car . I saw a plastic. White plastic next to where that man was digging. It looked like a person's body was rapped. I went there. I torn the plastic. I held my mouth as I saw what was inside. My legs failed me . I sat on the ground and sobbed. I touched her face. It had bruises. I removed the plastic from her body. She was naked . And her body had bruises. Her thighs were covered in blood. I cried.)

Me: I'm sorry I wasn't able to save you. I'm sorry I came late to your rescue. You didn't deserve to die like this .

(I cried even more. I took her body inside of the car that man was using. I took off my jacket and covered her . I drove to a hospital so they can put her body into the mortuary. After that I drove to the Owen mansion. I parked the car outside. I went in. I broke the door . My tears were streaming down. I

started searching every room. I finally found him. He was sleeping. I didn't hesitate. I charged straight to him. I held him by his throat.)

Him: Wh..who is that? What do you want?

(I pushed hard. Before I I could rip his stomach he sent me across the room.)

Him: The Adila...finally you came and showed yourself. But listen here. I have no problem with you. Neither do I have done anything wrong to you. So it would be better if we just live each other alone .

(I chuckled through my tears.)

Me: You killed a very kind and loving woman. She was innocent.

Him: no...no...no she wasn't. Her daughter and her killed Mike and Kiara. They sent their mom to a mental asylum. They claimed everything that belong to my family.

Me: I know what they did was wrong. But they didn't deserve such torture. She didn't deserve to die like an animal.

Him: listen here...I don't want any fight with you. So please leave...

(I transformed. I ran to him. When I got there and tried to harm him . I wasn't able to. He laughed.)

Him: I'm not like Mike's dad...I'm Mondree.

Me:What are you?(My voice sounded doubled.)

Him: something very powerful and can harm you.

Me: Really...is that what you have been bluffing your self with. (I used my Adila powers. And this time I was able to harm him. I stuck my claws deep into his skull. He immediately fell down. I stepped on his face . It became thin right at this instance. His brain was scattered on the floor. I transformed to myself. I wiped my hands with a duvet than went out. I walked my way home. When I got there. They were not sleeping. They were busy comforting Nomhle. When I made my way to them. Nomhle stood up and went to me.)

Nomhle: Did you find her? Did you find my mom?...I knew you were going to find her.

(Tears started streaming from my eyes.)

Nomhle: Lali..why are you crying? Is everything alright...and ...and where's mom. Where's mom Lali.(I kept quiet) Lali please speak up...where's my mom.(She started shaking me) Lali where's my mom...

Me: I'm sorry...It was already too late. When i got there. He was digging up her grave. She had already died.

(Nomhle fell down. She wasn't crying. She looked lost. I sat down with her. I know things between Nomhle and I aren't okay... but right now i can imagine the pain she is feeling. I held her close to me .)

Me: Please cry ...cry it all out so that it will pass.

(She wasn't responding. She kept looking at the right direction. She stood up . I tried to follow her Kayla mom grabbed my hand.)

Kayla: She needs to be alone. Let her be.

(I nodded.)

Me: Erm...let me go and freshen. Goodnight everyone. ..

Zia: It's 4 o'clock.

(I just went upstairs. I decided to go to the guestroom that Nomhle was in. I opened the door. She wasn't in the room.)

Me:Nomhle?

(I made my way to the bathroom. I found her sitting down busy trying to cut her pulse. I snatched the knife from her. I made her stand up .)

Me: why? Why would you harm yourself? why are hurting yourself like this...

Nomhle: Lali there's nothing left for me in this world. My mother had left me. The only family I had.

Me: please don't speak like that. I'm here for you. And I will always be here for you. Now come.

(I took her to my room. Mat got in)

Me: please guard her while I bath ...she tried to harm herself.

(She nodded. I closed the bathroom door . And went inside the shower. I took a very cold shower. I cried my lungs out. After I was done I dried my hair and body . I need to be strong got Nomhle. I put on my pjs. It's already morning and I haven't slept a wink.)

Me: let's sleep girls.

(Well immediately I drifted off to sleep. I was woken up by Nomhle crying. Mat also woke up)

Nomhle: please...please stop . Stop ...mom.

(We woke her up. She woke up and looked very scared. She was even sweating .)

Me: are you okay?

Mat: were you having a nightmare...

Nomhle: Yeah...yeah...I was having a nightmare.

(I checked the time. It was now 10 o'clock. Went downstairs.)

Kayla: The food is in the microwave. I didn't want to disturb you guys.

Me: thank you.

(Neither of us had an appetite. But we had to eat so that Nomhle can eat too .)

Me: I will ask dad to organize her funeral.

Nomhle: Thanks.

Me: did you get the car from the park..

Mat: yeah I did and your phone is charged in the lounge.

Me : thanks.

Nick's POV

I don't know if i should tell Austin about what father did or not . If i don't tell him he will continue to try and make Lali remember. No I will tell him. But let me first ask what Mat thinks. I called her. She didn't answer. I tried her again. This time she answered.

Me: hello...

Mat: hi...

Me: you sound down...are you okay?

Mat: yeah...it's just that Lali's friend Nomhle and her mom were kidnapped. And her mother died.

Me: what? ...oh holy shit. I can imagine what Lali is going through.

Mat: She's trying to be strong. But I can see that she's hurting alot . They were very close.

Me: Mhh shame.

Mat: so why did you call me...

Me: well i wanted to tell you that...(I told her everything that dad did. And also about me going to Simon)

Mat: I did suspect that something was not right. How could she forget about her chosen one. And remember us all.

Me:So I don't know if I should tell Austin or not...

Mat: Tell him...so that the three of us can try to kill Simon.

Me: I hope you know killing Simon won't be easy. He's very strong and has different powers and spells that protect him.

Mat: at least we can try.

Me: okay I will tell him. Bye. Pass my regards to Lali.

Mat: I will bye...

(I hunged up and drove to Austin's place. I got in . He was sitting on the stairs busy drinking beer.)

Austin: brother...I'm glad you came...

(I sat next to him)

Me: I hope you know alcohol isn't the solution.

Austin: not today Mr lecture...

(I chuckled)

Me: I wanted to talk to you about something important. But since you're drunk I don't think so . Did even sleep?

Austin: nah...I can't sleep. Every time I close my eyes. I see her face . I miss her.

Me: i know . And I understand very well. But still alcohol won't bring her back to you.

Austin: what can I do Nick...I'm out of options.

Me: I think you should sleep now. I will sleep with you just like when we were kids.

Austin: I'm grown now. I will sleep alone.

Me: ohh really. ..but I want to sleep with you...

(I faked a women voice. We both laughed .)

Austin: fuck you...anyway let me go and sleep.

(He stood up and went to his room.)

Simon's POV

I was looking at everyone on the crystal ball. I need to disappear for some time. I can't have these children try to kill me. Never. I need to gather my

strength. I cannot fight them now. I'm not prepared .

To be continued.

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:21] Lynne: insert 51

Nick's POV

I have decided to move in with Austin since he has not been taking this Lali issue very well. I haven't told him that father is the behind it . I woke up and took a quick shower. I went downstairs and I saw Austin busy drinking coffee. He was wearing a black suit with white t shirt. He looked formal.

Me: Going somewhere?

Him: Yeah...I'm going to the funeral. I need to be

there for Lali. I'm sure she's down. They were very close with that woman.

Me: I...erm...I don't think that a good Idea.

Him: Why? ...there's a funeral. I'm sure she will not be putting up her act.

Me: Ermm...you can't go .

Him: Why ...she's my girl. She will need a shoulder to cry on. It's my duty as his boyfriend to comfort her.

Me: You don't understand.

Him: We will talk later. I'm getting late

(I really don't want to tell him. I don't want him and dad hating each other . Hut this I a real problem. Because he can't be close to Lali. I hit my head. This is all fucked up .)

Lali's POV

Dad decided to take all the responsibilities of

burying Nomhle's mom. The service was going to be held at the hall. Then people can go to Nomhle's house for food. Well Nomhle's aunts and other family members were there. Nomhle has been very quiet. She refused to sit on the mattress for the past days. She has been locking herself up in her bedroom. I don't blame her. I would also behave the same way if I were to lose my mother. She's the only person that she had. Who supported, loved and cared for her. I spent a night here at her house. So we woke up in the morning and prepared for the funeral. I was wearing a black body hugging dress that is the long. I put on my maroon stilettos and took my maroon bag. Well Nomhle also looked good. Nomhle had asked me to sit with her in the car that has her mother's coffin. I gladly agreed. It was a very beautiful casket. It was covered with a home choice blanket. I held both Nomhle's hands.

Me: How are you feeling?

(She just shrugged her shoulders)

Me: You need to let go of her. She needs to go. You need to open up your chest and talk. So you can be able to pass through this. I know it's going to be difficult. But I'm your mother wouldn't want you to look this broken. There's still much time you have in this world. Spend to the fullest. I'm not asking you to forget about her. I just want you to let her go and live your life normal. I'm also here for you. (I looked down) I know you and I has been through alot. In such a way that we were separated. But I think your mother's death has brought us back to each other. Of which is what she always wanted.

(Tears started to form in her eyes)

Me: Let it all out. In that way you will be able to pass through this . Cry your lungs out for the last time .

(She hugged me and cried even more.)

Nomhle: Thank you Lali ...thank you very much. You are the only thing that's keeping me sane. If it wasn't for you. I would be long dead. Thank you...thank.you .

(Finally we got to the hall. Nomhle and I were

sitting in the front. The pastor opened with prayer. When he was done someone walked in. His/Her shoes were making noise. We all turned to see who it was. It was Austin. I just continued to look forward. Well the pastor continued preaching. It was now time for speeches. Well it was Nomhle and I only who were going to do speech. We stood up at the same time. I stood next to her and held her hand as she was busy talking.)

Nomhle: Mother...She was everything to me . A friend, a father and a sister. She was the best thing that had ever happened in my life. We have been through alot with her. We have been in difficult situations . But she prayed our way through them. She taught me how to pray. She raised me by prayer. And she always reminded me to be scared of lord . Worship him and pray every single day. She was a strong woman. A very strong woman. There were times where she was feeling an extreme pain physically and emotionally. She never gave up. I guess when they're speaking about imbokodo. They

are truly speaking about her. She never even once had she shown me if there was anything bothering her. She was so great. She wanted to see me becoming successful in life. I guess God decided to take her saint way sooner. I will always love and respect her. She was so kind . I just hope her kindness remains like that until we meet again.

(I wiped her tears and took the mic)

Me: Well I don't where to start. I could write a whole book about this woman. Because of time I won't be long. She was also a mother to me. She treated me exactly as her own daughter. Actually she loved and cared for me more than she did for her daughter. She raised me . Well with Nomhle obviously. She taught me how to pray. And than everything will be alright as long as you pray. I remember I was going somewhere. To do something that was going to put my life in danger. I went to her. I told her. And we prayed. I came back safe and sound. What I'm

trying to say is. She was a very strong believer. And she also taught us her daughters to be believers. As Nomhle said. She was a very strong woman. Her soul ...may she rest in peace.

(People started singing . Nomhle and I went to sit down. Well the service finished we went to the cemetery. Well that's where Nomhle cried. She cried her lungs out and even wanted to just inside her mother's grave. People were now holding her. That was a very sad moment. Everything was done we made our way back . At the gate there was a dish with umswane and another one that had water with green petals in it . Well I washed my hands in both . I helped everyone around. I went to Nomhle's room as I wanted to use the toilet. When I was washing my hands i heard door closing. I went out of the bathroom.)

Me: Austin? Can i help you...

Austin: i can I understand your pain right now. I'm

sorry. It will all pass.

(I just looked at him. His presence just makes me sick. I was now balancing myself with the wall. He started moving close to me.)

Me: wait what are you doing?

(He came even more closer . I was slowly losing my breath.)

Austin: Lali? Are you okay?

(He tried to touch my face . I felt triggered. I saw myself strangling him to death. My claws were out. I was ready to attack him. I was disturbed by the knock. I fixed myself and went to the door. I opened it . It was Mat.)

Mat: Are you okay?

Me: Yeah.

Mat: Well let's go home. I came to fetch you.

Me: thanks.

(I went and said my goodbye to Nomhle. She

wasn't happy that I was leaving. I miss home. Well finally we got home. As it was very late I just went to my room and took a quick shower and went to bed)

Austin's POV

What had happened to Lali? I know sometimes she becomes mad for no reason. But she never even once has she used her bestial powers against me. I held my throat. It was in pain. I went straight to my car and drive to my house. How can Lali harm me. I mean she loves me. And I feel the same way about her. She had changed. She's no longer the girl I fell in love with. When I look into her eyes. I can hardly see her feelings. When i got to my house. Nick was busy cooking. He looked at my neck and his eyes popped out.

Nick: what ...what happened to your neck?

Me: erm...it's nothing.

(He went closer to me)

Nick: it's nothing ? Your neck is swollen and yet you're saying it's nothing . Did something happen. Were you attacked?

Me: nah...Lali...(I cleared my throat) it was Lali.

(His eyes widened.)

Nick's POV

I think it's about time I tell him. If I don't he will keep on going to Lali. Of which will put his life in danger.

Austin: why are you quiet?

Me: I have something important to tell you.

Austin: Go on.

(I started telling him everything. And even told me about what Simon said)

Austin: and you're only telling me now. I never thought dad would be the one to hurt me. How can he do something like that to me. I'm his son. He's supposed to be supporting me in my relationship with Lali. Yet he wants to destroy it. You know sometimes I don't get how that old thinks .

Me: So what are we going to do?

Austin: we need to find that Simon you told me about. We need to kill him.

Me: he's very powerful. Taking him down won't be easy.

Austin: We can do it...I wonder how did dad find out about Lali. Because we kept it a secret.

Me: that's what I have been asking myself too.

Austin: anyway we can do it. You , Ondreaz,Mat, Tayler and I. We can kill that Simon guy.

Me:(I cleared my throat) Can it just be the three of us. This matter is very important.

Austin: but...

Me: We need to be careful who we trust and tell

things. When you want us to kill Simon. Than we need to be smart. And try to think like him. I just need to tell Mat about this whole thing.

Austin: we need to do it soon. I miss Lali alot.

(I parted his shoulder)

Me: I know young one.

Simon's POV

I laughed. Who are they again?...No one...and I mean no one can ever kill me . Their grandfather tried to kill me . But he didn't succeed. They won't be able to kill me. And they can only declare a war against me once I'm ready.

Me: we need to prepare ourselves.

Emilia: We're fully prepared. Why don't we get rid of them once and for all. Than we can be left with killing the Adila

Me: We shouldn't rush things. We're not prepared. They may not be very powerful. But they also know a few spells. That can turn us all down

Her mom: so we must wait until when? ...I'm tired of this waiting.

Me: if you want to achieve a goal. You need to be patient and sincerely.. rushing things will only result in our downfall. I can't afford that.

(Years back I lied to the Alpha. That Austin's chosen will be the death of him. Well all I want is to revenge myself to the Alpha and his family. I used to stay there. I was the most respected sorcerer there . With one mistake I did. They burnished me . After that my life became a nightmare. I had nothing. I suffered alot. The Alpha's dad was also after my life. At that time I was n't that powerful. Now I'm ready to take them down. I'm ready to rule the Oegrate. Well I met with Emilia and her mom long time ago. We had a same goals . So we clicked and became one strong team.

Mat's POV

As much as I know the Alpha. I never thought he could do something like this . Especially to his favourite son. Nick told me everything. I just feel sorry for Lali shame. Her and Austin loved each other. They looked perfect together. Anyways Nick said we must meet tomorrow to discuss how are we going to take this evil Simon down.

Lali's POV

I woke up in the morning and went downstairs to help Kayla mom make breakfast.

Kayla: we need to write a list. Of the things we going to need preparing for Christmas day. I have found a chef. We now left with buying things we will use to decorate the house. And also buy presents

for everyone.

Me : We can buy the things to decorate today . If you're not busy. Later on I will go and see Nomhle.

Kayla : Okay...we also need to find a theme for the day.

Me: But Christmas theme has always been red,green and white.

Kayla: how old are you again?

(I just chuckled)

Kayla: Our theme will be red . We as ladies will wear red dresses. Than the boys and their father will wear black suits.

Me: sounds better.

Kayla : Let's finish up so we can go. I will also hire the Make up artist for everyone.

(I just laughed. She is so dramatic. We will be indoors. There is no need for make up. We finished with breakfast. I helped her set the table. Everyone came downstairs. We all started eating. Kayla mom also told everyone about the theme colours and all.

After I was done I went to take a bath. After I was done I put on my clothes and went downstairs.)

Mat: Lali dear...i will see you later. Im going out with Nick.

Me: mhh...okay...enjoy dear.

(She just smiled. Mom Kayla and I went to the mall. We bought everything and took to the car. We decided to do a bit of shopping. I have alot of clothes. There are so many clothes I haven't even wear. When we were done we grabbed takeaways from Macdonald. I also bought for Nomhle. Kayla dropped me off at her house. Her relatives were still here. I went upstairs to her room. I knocked once and got in. She was busy looking out the window with a glass of wine on her hand.)

Me: I brought you food.

Nomhle: thanks...I will eat it later.

Me: no ...you will eat it now. You will become sick if you don't eat.

Nomhle: I'm not hungry Lali.

Me: please eat for my sake than

Nomhle: okay than.

To be continued

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:21] Lynne: insert 52

CHRISTMAS DAY

Lali's POV

I woke up in the morning and helped Kayla decorate the dining room. The chefs have already started preparing food. After we were done . Few ladies got in. Each and one of them were carrying black suitcases . They were wearing matching clothes . It's like a uniform.

Kayla: This way please.

(She directed them to an empty room upstairs.
That has couches only)

Kayla: Please sit here in the meantime. I will go and call the girls .

Me:who are they?

Kayla: They're going to full massage our bodies. Do out hairstyles , nails and makeup.

Me: Mhh...can't wait.

(I went and woke the girls up. We all took baths. After we were done we put on our robes and sleepers. Kayla called us that we can now go for the treats . They started with our backs. It was very relaxing. We all had glasses of wine . Their hands were doing magic on our bodies. I wish Nomhle was also here. But what can I say. She is trying to keep herself busy with doing work. She has been running her father's businesses. She wanted to sell all the Owen's belongings. But I convinced her to not to.)

Mat's POV

I'm enjoying the massage so much. My mind has been occupied. I just hope Nick's plan of killing that Simon guy will work. I have mixed emotions over all of this . I just hope we will succeed so that Lali can finally regain her memories she shared with Austin. We have also found out that . There are two women he's working with. I told my dad about this whole entire thing. He said he will help us. He told us that Simon is very dangerous. So tomorrow midnight. We will go and hunt them down where he lives .

Lali: Are you okay?

(I nodded)

Lali: But you don't look okay. Is everything okay?

(I faked a smile)

Me: Y...yes . Everything is fine.

Lali: Are you hiding something from me?

Me: W..what? N...no. why would I hide something from you.

Lali: You been distracted lately. Are you sure you're okay.

(I nodded)

Lali: You know that I'm always there for you. If you need something. You can tell me. Or if there's someone bothering you. You know together we can overcome any obstacle that comes our way .

(I wish I could tell her. Telling her will make the situation worse.)

Me: I know .

(She held my hands)

Lali: I care about you Mat. Alot.

Me: I know. And I also care about you. That's why I won't tell you anything for now

Lali: So there's something you're hiding from me.

Me: N..no...yes. but I just can't tell you.

Lali: Mat...since when do we hide things from each other

Me: it's for a good cause. I promise to tell you when everything is back to normal

(She let go of my hands)

Me: Lalimi.

Austin's POV

We were all at the Oegrade to celebrate Christmas day. Everyone is busy preparing for it. Our suits for the day were delivered today in the morning. Nick got in.

Nick: Hey .

Me: What's up?

(He sighed)

Nick: Do you think we will be able to bring Simon

down?

Me: Yeah...we can do it. The three of us can do it. And Mat's dad is going to be there so there's nothing to worry about .

Nick: I just hope everything goes accordingly.

Me: It has to. I can't wait to finally spend time with my Lali.

Nick: Let me go and get ready.

Me: Sure.

(I took a shower . After I was done I went back to my bedroom. I took my phone and logged in on Instagram. I started looking at Lali's pictures. She's beautiful. There was the one where she was pouting. I laughed and kissed it. After that I got dressed. I went to where the launch will be served. Everyone was already there. Dad started talking. This old man can talk hey. I was starting to get bored . I poured myself a glass of whiskey.)

Alpha: Merry Christmas day to everyone.

(Finally he's done. Well we started eating , laughing and talking. It a very great day. It's been a while since we spent time together as a family . We did a toast . It was a great day indeed. Well music was playing. Mom took my hand and we started dancing. Everyone was dancing. After a twirl we would change partners. It was very nice.)

Lali's POV

After the passage. We did our manicure , pedicure and makeup. Mat only did makeup. After that we all went to our rooms to put on our dresses. We than went downstairs. A very polite music was playing. Everyone was dressed to kill. Kayla mom instructed all of us to sit down. Dad looked handsome in his suit I must say.

Kayla: As a family. We have been through so much. We have lost our loved ones. We have shared tears . I must say we are one strong family . When I first came here. You all accepted me with warm hands . I never felt like an outsider. We all got along very well. And I want to thank you Mrs Kane. I know we have had our not so good days. Where we would fight verbally. But I'm also thankful that you eventually accepted me . So I want all of us today to forget about everything thing we have been through and enjoy this special day. Merry Christmas everyone.

(We started eating . Zia and Kayla would throw jokes here and there. It was very good. After we finished eating . We all danced. Everyone looked so happy. The girls and I decided to go to the patio . Well we have prepared a small party there. They were balloons , booze and snacks. The guys decided to join us . It was so much fun .)

Zayn: I wish Tony was also here to celebrate

Christmas with us.

Zia: Yeah hey...

Me: Let me call him.

(I went away from everyone)

Tony: Lali?...hey.

Me: Hi...how are you

Tony: I'm good.

Me: I thought you were going to cover over. To celebrate Christmas with us.

Tony: Nah...I just wanted to spend it with my uncle.

Me: Mhh...I see. Any progress with finding the person that killed your dad.

Tony: Nah...you see. I have been having dreams about my father. He keep telling me that you're the one who can help me find the truth.

Me: Tony...I showed you everything. But you chose not to believe me .

Tony: Lali...can we please not go there. I know my

uncle very well.

Me: Tony...people are not who they appear to be. Or who they say they are.

Tony: He said you can help me communicate with him.

(I see he ignored that statement)

Me: What? ...I can no longer communicate with my own deceased family. How will I make that possible.

Tony: I don't know man...But he keeps telling me that.

Me: why can't he communicate with you through a dream.

Tony: Everytime when he's about to say something . He suddenly becomes mute.

Me: What?

Tony: It's like someone is trying to shut him up.

Me: I see.

Tony: So please try something.

Me: I will see. But I don't promise anything.

Tony: please try. You're my last hope.

Me: I will try.

(Gladis seems to know alot aboutnthis things . I will visit her tomorrow. I went back to everyone)

Addi: What did he say?

Me: ermm...he said . He wants to spend the rest of the day with his uncle .

Zia: when will he come back home.

Me; I don't know.

(Anyway we started partying. It was very nice . It was now late so we decided to go and sleep.)

Mrs Kane's POV

I woke up in the morning. I packed all my things in a suit case. Well everything is ready. My Visa and all.

I went downstairs. They were having breakfast.

MrK: Going somewhere?

(I cleared my throat)

Me: yeah...I'm going to Paris. Just to spoil myself. It's been a while since I haven't gone there.

MrK: Ohh...okay. I guess bye.

(I took my suitcase and went to the car. It dropped me off at the airport. My flight is in 15 minutes time. I sat down. I can't believe I'm doing this. I just hope I will get him. I do have a few contacts in Australia. So finding him won't be that hard. Finally the time came. I went in into the aeroplane .)

Lali's POV

Me: I'm going to the Drugiomin. Do you want to come with me.

Mat: nah...I want to spend the rest of today with my

dad.

(Well Mat's dad didn't come yesterday. I don't know why.)

Me: why didn't he come yesterday?

Mat: well...I will ask him.

Me: Ok I have to go now.

(I went to the car and drove to the mall. I got a few things . I was now on the road to the Drugiomin. After sometime I arrived. I straight went to Gladis house. I knocked)

Her: Come in

(I got in)

Her: Adila...what a great surprise. How are you?

Me: I'm fine and you?

Her: I'm fine.

(We hugged)

Me: How was Christmas?

Her: It was very nice. Next time you should spend it with us .

Me: Yeah...I will. I need help with something.

Her: Okay...come sit here. I will bring tea and some cakes .

Me: Thanks.

(She brought them)

Her: So what is it?

Me: well...a brother of mine needs my help

Her: I'm listening

Me: Well he wants to communicate with his deceased dad. His dad said I will help him with that. What's confusing is that . I can no longer communicate with my own family. How can I help him

Her: Mhh...with you. You sent them away. You put them into rest. You can help him with that. I think his father's soul is still wondering around. .

Me: but how?

Her: Do you remember the book I gave you?

Me: yes...the one that you said it contains my death.

Her: yes...i can't really remember which page it is.
But look there. You will both go to his father's grave.
You will read what's written down than he will
appear. You will be the only one to see him. But he
will be able to hear him.

Me: is that all?

Her: you must also lit two white candles . He
mustn't tell anyone about all of this

Me: okay...thank you very much.

Her:you see Lali. You must keep that book very safe.
Because if it lands in wrong hands. You will die.

Me: But why can't I just tear of the page where my
death is written.

Her: That book cannot be teared off.

Me: But it's made of papers.

(She laughed)

Her: you're still young my dear. It appears to be

made of papers. But it's actually not.

Me: Why would my death be written down.

Her: you see Lali. You're the first Adila. It was written before your great grandparents were even born.

Me: But who wrote it?

Her: I don't know really .

(We started talking about random things. It was now 6pm.)

Me: I think I should get going.

Her: Now?...why don't you leave tomorrow.

Me: Ermm...I need to find that page you were talking about.

Her: you can do that tomorrow. It's very nice talking to you. When you go. I will be very bored.

Me: Okay...it's fine I will go tomorrow morning. I really love spending time with you.

(She started with her stories until I fell asleep.)

Mat's POV

Dad and I spend the rest of yesterday together. We cooked and enjoyed ourselves. Well I woke up and took a bath. I have been feeling down. I have this sharp pain on my heart. It feels like i'm about to lose someone who means the world to me . Well I gulped a glass of wine . Today is the day . I put on my black Jean,vest and a denim jacket. Well my dad and i are going to Austin's house. Till the midnight. After we were done we drove to his place. When we got there Nick was busy making breakfast. After he was done he dished up for everyone. We are alittle since we already had breakfast in our house. I washed the dishes and helped them by cleaning the house . After I was done we sat in the lounge.

Austin: How is Lali doing?

Me: She's fine .

My dad: Simon is a very smart guy. I'm sure he knows that we're coming for him. I'm sure he's busy preparing himself.

Nick: That's why we need to be careful .

(I decided to take a nap. After some hours Nick woke me up.)

Nick: We are going now.

(it was already dark outside. I put on my sneakers we made our way to the car. Nick was driving since he knows where Simon lives. A call came through it was Lali. I cleared my throat)

Me: Hello.

Lali: Hey where are you?

Me: Erm..m..my dad and I are out. We're having dinner. At a restaurant.

Lali: which restaurant so i can also come.

Me: Well ...i just wanted to spend some quality time with him . We can all go out tomorrow if it's fine

with you.

(She kept quiet)

Me: I have to hung up now. Bye . love you.

(I dropped the call.)

Me: it was Lali. I hope she's not suspecting anything.

(Finally Nick parked in front a gate. We got out. We made our way in. Dad and Austin went to the back of the house. Nick and I broke the front door. We made our way inside the house. Austin and dad also got in. We searched every room but there was no one. As we were still searching. Suddenly the room became dark. A very strong wind started blowing everything in the house. After some time it stopped. As we were all standing in the middle of the room we saw something written on the wall. We all made our way there. It looked like an address.

Blood was used to write it.)

Me: when we got in here. There was nothing on the wall.

Austin: I think we should go to this address. Maybe we will find him there.

Me: do you think it's safe to do that.

(He shrugged his shoulders)

Nick: Let's go . Maybe it's where we will find him.

(Austin took a picture of that address. Nick started driving there. It was very far. Lali called again.)

Lali: Where are you guys? I think you should go back home.

Me: We're fine. Dad booked the whole restaurant. So it's only the two of us. Stop worrying. We're fine.

Lali: Mat...I don't know. I'm having sharp pains in

my heart. My heart feels cold.

Me: I also felt like that in the morning. But I'm fine now.

Lali: Please take care of yourself.

Me: I will bye.

My dad: is everything okay?

Me: Yeah...Lali is busy worrying for no reason.

(Anyway we got to this place. It was a double story house. It looked old . Not even one light was on. We made our way in and used our phone touches for light. We got in and started searching.)

Nick: SIMON YOU COWARD . COME OUT!WE KNOW YOU'RE IN THERE.

(nothing. We heard a laugh coming from the

kitchen. We all made our way there. When we got there there was a note. It had directs written on it .)

Me: I think he's trying to fool us. Why is doing this.

Austin: I think we should go to this place.

My dad: I think it will be best if we just go back home. We will continue looking for him tomorrow.

Nick: We can't give up now. Let's go to this place . If he's not there . Than we can go back .

My dad: But...

Me: Let's go . Maybe he's there.

(We went to the car. Austin was busy reading directions to Nick. It was now midnight and we have been driving.)

Nick: This is the end of the read. I can't drive any further.

Austin: What? But the directions continue.

Nick: I think we should walk from here.

My dad: I'm not feeling all of this. It's like he's tricking us. He's controlling our every move.

(We got off the car and started walking. There trees all over. We walked very far . Suddenly all of our phones became off. We tried to switch them on but they couldn't.)

Me: What's going on ...I think we should go back to the car. We will continue tomorrow.

(We all agreed on that. We started making our way back. We have been walking but we haven't reached our car as yet. Neither can we see the road)

Me: No no guys . It's like we're moving in circles. We keep passing the same baobab tree.

Nick: I have also noticed that.

Austin: What do we do?

My dad : You kids don't listen. I told you all that we should go back home. See now?

Me: Dad...by saying that you're not helping. Austin do you still have the directions ?

Austin: Yeah and they end here.

Me: Fuck.

Simon's POV

I was looking at them on the crystal ball. I laughed so hard that I now had hiccups. I was at Emilia's house. Well they're in the Doruhr forest. I have led them there. There is no way they can go out of it alive. What will happen is I will go to them in the midnight. I will kill them one by one. After that I will kill the Alpha. Than last but not least THE ADILA. I knew my plan was going to work. I have tricked them. They can continue busy walking fooling themselves. There's not way they can get out of it . Unless if there's someone who is very powerful.

Who can get them out. I need to be fast with everything before the Adila even suspect anything.

Nomhle's POV

I have just landed in Capetown. I have a business initiation with Mr Khulekani Nzama. I have done a research about him. He is a very rich young man. He owns businesses across the border. At the airport there was already a car waiting for me. I checked in at a very classy and expensive five star hotel. We will be meeting for dinner. He texted me the address. Well I got in to the room i booked and ordered some food. After I was done eating I took a very long ass bath. After I was done. I wrapped my body and unpacked my things. I looked for something to wear. I had four dresses to decide from . It was a red long dress that had a slight slit and it was backless. A cream white dress that had blings it was knee high. A black dress it was simple. It didn't have a slit but it was off shoulder. I fitted

all of them. I think I will go with the red one. It fits me so perfectly. It shows all my curves. After I have decided my dress I did my face. I didn't put much makeup. I don't want it to be too much. I need to look classy and also beautiful. I need to give him a very good first impression. Well it was now a little dark outside. I put on my dress and a necklace. I put on my gladiator heels. I sprayed my neck with a perfume. I didn't put much. I took my hand bag and went downstairs. The car was already waiting for me outside.

Me: Here is the address.

" Okay mem"

(After alot of driving was done. He parked in front of a very beautiful restaurant. I got in. It's wasn't so busy. A lady made her way to me.)

Her: Miss Nomhle Khumalo right?

(I nodded)

Her: This way please.

(I followed her. She took me upstairs . It looked like a private place. She pulled a chair for me)

Me: Thank you.

Her: J uice or Wine?

Me: wine please.

Her: Moet or...

Me:Moet...it will be fine.

(She went away for some time. After that she came back with it . I started taking a sip of it. Very nice. I had finished the whole glass now. I'm starting to get bored now . He hasn't come as yet. As I was about to call him he made his way in)

Him: Sorry ...I'm late. I was caught up with some work.

(I stood up and shook his hands. He sat opposite me. I couldn't move my eyes from him. He's too handsome . He took off his suit jacket. And let one button lose on his shirt. He looked even more handsome. Is it me or the wine is making me feel like this.

Him: Are you okay?

(i nodded repeatedly)

Him: Let's order something so we can start with the meeting.

Me: Sure.

(The waitress came. We ordered)

Him: While we're still waiting for our food. You can tell me more about yourself if you don't mind. I need to know the person I'm about to start a business with.

(I smiled)

Please like and comment

Thank you so much for 3k likes and followers. I will try to post another insert later. I'm sorry for not posting for the past few days. With schools said to be reopening on the 1st of June. I'm busy with school work. But I promise to post for the rest of

this week.

[06/23, 08:21] Lynne: insert 53

Lali's POV

I'm at home in my room with Tony. He is visiting me. I have been feeling very strange. I feel like something bad is about to happen. I have been trying to call Mat but she's no longer answering my calls .

Tony: Have you found the page?

Me: No ...I'm still looking for it .

(My mind wasn't in this book. Mat is a part of me. We met for a reason. I can feel that something is not right. I need to help Tony first than I can visit them . And make sure they're okay and safe . This book has 4000 pages . I was reading page 2789 . It

was reading as follow:

Pg 2789

The Doruhr Forest

Skgovkfus hus heufjogkgjduhs ydhfugkgjgkmthrhue
hr7ffjfkfmdus bs ys veydhfufjc 7cjfbdus he7ffycycycu
chfifkdjs bs y7ffhcufufififkfhthyucycycy.

(The forest of evil. Where all the evil powers were
born at. When you enter it there's no way of coming
out of it alive . Only one person who can overpower
it . The Adila.)

(As I finished reading it . Heart pains started again.)

Tony: Lali ...are you okay? Should I bring you water?

(I nodded. What's happening. Tony came back)

Tony: Here.

Me: Thank you .

(I drank the water)

Me: No...I have to go . I need to see Mat. Something is not right.

(Tony held both my hands)

Tony: Can we do this first. Can we go to my father's grave first. Than after I will accompany you to her house.

Me: Okay.

(This book is so incredible . Anyways I continued reading it.)

Me: I think I have found the page .

Tony: Really?

Me: Yeah...let me call Gladis first and confirm.

(I called her and told her what it says.)

Gladis: That's the one. Now hurry up before the sunrise .

Me: Okay.

Gladis: Don't forget the white candles.

Me: Thanks...sorry for disturbing your sleep.

Gladis: Any time my dear.

(I hunged up.)

Me: Let's get going. Do you know where your father's grave is?

Tony: Yeah .

Me: okay...you will drive than.

(We went to the car. He was driving. I have a very terrible headache.)

Me: Do you have any painkillers?

Tony: No ...are you okay?

Me: it's just a headache.

Tony: Here...drink some water.

(I drank it. After some time we got to the cemetery. We got out . I was carrying my book and he was carrying candles and a lighter. I was following with behind.)

Tony: There is it.

(We made our way there.)

Me: It's looks beautiful.

(I took the candles from Tony and put them on top of the tombstone. I held my chest as the pains were coming back.)

Me: What's the time?

(He told me)

Me: Okay. Give me the lighter.

(I lit both candles and started reading what's written on the page. As I was reading suddenly it became windy. There were so many voices talking. There were so many dead souls busy wondering.)

Me: Your father's name please

(He told me. After I mentioned his name while reading. The wind rate became normal.)

" Son"

Tony: D...Dad ...that's my father's voice Lali. Dad is that you?

"It's me son. How are you?"

Tony: Dad...why? Why did you live me ?

(He had tears on his eyes)

" Son it wasn't my intention to do so. I was brutally killed my son."

Tony: But dad...who would do such horrible thing to you?

" Non other than my own brother. Your uncle."

Tony: What? Why would my uncle do that to you. You guys were very close.

" I thought so too . Until that day. I have been trying to tell you. She also shown you. But you chose not to believe her."

Tony: I never thought the pers on I take as my own

father would kill my father. I was blinded by his pretense.

" I'm glad you know the truth now"

Tony: He's going to pay. He's going to pay for what he did.

" I don't like violence but this time I won't stop you from killing him. "

Tony: I miss you dad. I miss you so much.

(The time was running out)

" Son I have to go now. Finally I will rest in peace now that you know the truth. "

Tony: Can't we talk any longer.

" No son. I love you and will forever will. I will always look after you and protect you. My soul is at peace now. "

Tony: I love you dad .

" I love you son. Take care of your mother. The road she's taking is very dangerous. She's putting her life in danger for no reason. "

Tony: Mom?

Me: Mrs Kane?

" Bye son and take care of Matilda . Thank you my dear for helping me."

Me: Mat?

" I pray that whatever you're going through pass. "

(He waved than dis appeared.)

Me: Are you okay?

(He just threw himself on me and hugged me. I rubbed his back)

Me: I know the feeling of loosing a parent. I understand your pain. Now please stop crying before I cry too.

(I wiped his tears. He placed his forehead on my and held both my cheeks. I cleared my throat. He let go)

Me: I think we should get going.

(Before we could even reach the car. There were 5 men standing in front of our car. They were all

wearing black.)

Tony: Lali ...i want you out of here. Now.

Me: Do you know them?

Tony: Yeah...they're vampires.

Me: So why must I go ?

Tony: You will get hurt.

Me: It seems you have forgotten what I am.

(I fully transformed and charged at them. I started ripping their stomachs . Tony was also fighting them. One man got away. He ran to his car and drove off. I transformed back)

Me: Should we follow him.

Tony: No...let's go to my uncle's house. I know he sent them.

Me: Okay.

(we got to the car and drove to his uncle's house. I tried to call Mat again. Her phone is switched off.)

Tony: Is everything okay?

Me: Mat's phone is switched off. How about you drop me off at her house. I will catch up with you after checking if her and her father are okay.

Tony: Okay...

(We drove to Mat's house. We arrived there. Tony parked outside.)

Tony: I will wait for you.

Me: Okay.

(I went in. I knocked. Nothing. I went to the security guy.)

Me: Is Mar around?

" They left the day before yesterday "

Me: What? Where to?

" they didn't tell me"

Me: Okay thanks.here is my number. Please tell me when they get back.

" I will mam "

(I went back to the car)

Tony: Did you find them?

Me: No ...the guard said they left the day before yesterday.

Tony: Where could they be?

(The heartaches. They started me the day before yesterday. I have been not feeling well since that day. Something is wrong. Mat is in danger)

Me: They're in danger. I can feel it .

(This is all fucked up. It is now in the morning. I can't roam around as a beast. People will be freaked out. Shit. And night is so far.)

me: Shit...why didn't I see that coming.

Tony: What do we do now?

Me: we will have to wait for the night time to come. In the meantime let's go and deal with that uncle of yours .

Tony: Are you sure.

(I nodded . We drove off.)

Nomhle's POV

I'm back at home. I had a very great time in Capetown. Khule showed me around . He's a gentleman I must say. Well the following day when we went out. I ended up confessing my love for him. He said his heart is taken by someone else. I tried to ask more about that lucky girl. He said. ..he hasn't told her as yet as she has a boyfriend. I don't want to lie that broke my heart one thousand times. I know I have met him for a few days. But I can safely say I'm deeply inlove with him. When he was dropping me off at the airport. We shared a very long and passionate kiss. I asked him why did he kiss me. He just smirked and said"safe flight Ms Khumalo" . My love for him grows day by day. I wonder who is that lucky girl that took his heart. Anyway I did breakfast and took a bath. I'm going to the office. I need to make sure things are okay. I haven't been at it for two days.

Mat's POV

WHAT HAPPENED BEFORE THE MIDNIGHT TILL MIDNIGHT

We were now tired. Decided to sit down because it seems like there is no exit from this forest.

My dad : What now? We're going to die here. And no one will find us.

Me: Can we not loose hope please.

(I was very hungry.)

Me: I'm very hungry.

Nick: I saw a mango tree when we were walking .
Let's go and get some.

(We went there. We took alot of them and than set down. As we were eating suddenly it became wind. It was not just wind. It was very dark.)

Me: What's that?

(We stood up. The wind started separating into many figures.)

Me: Oh holly shit!

Austin: WTF?

(Those figures started making their way to us. We transformed into our creatures and met them halfway. We went there. The wind started covering us. We were all now unable to breathe. We transformed into ourselves. The wind disappeared. We were all coughing hysterically . We stood up)

Austin: We need to get out of here. This place is beyond our limit.

(Silly of us we started running before tiring ourselves. Because there's no way out of this place. I sat down)

Nick: Stand up...don't give up let's go .

Me: WHERE TO EXACTLY? TELL ME?. YOU ALL KNOW THAT THERE'S NO WAY OUT OF HERE. CAN

WE PLEASE STOP MAKING FOOLS OF OURSELVES.
WE'RE TRAPPED IN HERE. THERE NO WAY OUT.

(They all kept quiet. They sat down. Eversince
than we have been attached by different illusions. It
was now midnight. We were sitting together lost in
our thoughts when we heard footsteps and voices
coming different directions. We stood up.)

Me: Could that be Simon?

Austin: Maybe?

(We all prepared ourselves. We stood next to each
blocking their way. Finally they made their way to
us. It was Simon, Emilia and an old women)

Austin: Ohh so you bitch ...you're working with him?

(Emilia just smiled. Austin was very angry. He went
and tried to charge to her but couldn't. He came
back to us)

Me: What happened?

Austin: I couldn't get to her.

Me: TF!

Simon: Listen here. You all are in our territory. You can not harm us in our own place. This place was made for people with impure hearts,evil ,conniving and whose hearts are full of hatred . Of which that's us. This place is us. We're the only ones who can do anything.

(I don't know what happened after that. I was in this dark house. It had very long walls . My arms and legs were tied against the wall . I couldn't even move an inch. I tried to transform but couldn't. Eversince than I have been tortured. My whole body has bruises. I don't even know where are others .)

NOW.

(I can't do it anymore. It's like my soul is slowly leaving my body . I have given up on life. I have tried growling but still . I have screamed my lungs out for help but still. It's like I'm in a hole where no one can

hear me. Emilia got in)

Her: Mhh...I see you're strong. Others are not coping. Your dad is the worst.

Me: What do you want?

(I'm tired of begging her.)

Her: Well I came to tell you that well...your dad is no more.

(For a moment my mind stopped functioning. My heart beat rose up. I blinked. Everything moved in slow motion. I passed out.)

Nick's POV

Yes I'm a man but the pain I'm in now is just extreme. Every day I'm being tortured. My big worry right now is Mat. I wonder how she's holding up. I have been hoping that Lali would come and help us out. It seems her powers only favours her.

We are here because of her. We are here because we wanted to help her. It seems she is not bothered. I thought with Mat being in danger she would have come here running. It seems like I was only fooling myself.

Mrs Kane's POV

It's been a while since I have been here in Australia. I was in my hotel room with this IT guy.

Him: He is a well known man. He's very respected. And also a busy man. Making an appointment with him won't be easy.

(Well I have been spying on his house. He comes home very late .)

Me: can't I see him when he goes back home.

Him: Still...you need to have an appointment for that.

(As we were still thinking. We heard a door knock. I

went to check. I opened it a little and a guy kicked it open in such a way that I fell. They didn't hesitate. They shot the IT guy who was helping me.)

Me: Who are you? What do you want from me...I...

(As I was still talking two held my hands while one sedated me .)

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:22] Lynne: Insert 54

Mrs Khumalo's POV

I woke up in a very dark room. I started shouted.

Me: Is there anyone who can help me?...Hello.

(I tried to move but my hands and legs were tied .
The door opened . The light went on. Two man

walked in)

" And now? What's the noise for?"

Me: Please let me go...what do you want from me?...Who sent you?...is it Kayla?

" Boss is on a business trip. He will come back the day after tomorrow. He gave us clear instructions that we shouldn't let you go. We should torture you until he comes back"

Me: Boss? ...who's your boss?...What does he want from me ?

" Isn't you have been busy stalking him. Did you think he was not going to find out.(He chuckled) You're lucky that you're still alive. We usually don't keep a person for long. "

(I swallowed hard.)

Me: B...but I'm here to...

" Enough with the talking now. "

(He came to me and put a tape on my mouth. Shit!.

If only they knew that I'm trying to help him here. So that he can get his wife back. It seems like coming here was a bad plan. I guess I have to wait until he comes back.)

Lali's POV

I was busy putting on my clothes. And I was also feeling lethargic. It feels like my soul is slowly leaving my body. As I was done dressing Tony walked in. He is going to help me find Mat.

Tony: Are you okay?

(I nodded)

Tony: Your face?...it looks ...(He cleared his throat. I went to see myself on the mirror. I received a shock of my life. My skin was rough and it was also turning green. My eyes had black bags and around them. My eyes were very red. I slowly touched my face .)

Me: What's happening to me ?...Why is my face like this ?

Tony: Erm...did you maybe eat something?

(I nodded no.)

Me: I think we're running out time. We need to get going.

Tony: It's better that everyone is asleep or else they would have been freaked out by your face .

(As I was halfway to the door . Suddenly the room became cold. Tony was already out. Wind started blowing. It started flipping pages of that book Gladis gave me. I went close to it and the wind stopped. I looked at the page that was turned . It was page 2789 - The Doruhr forest. Is this a clue maybe? . As I was taking the book my phone rang it was Gladis .)

Me: Hello

Gladis: L...Lali! Where are you?

(She was sniffing)

Me: Ermm...I'm at home. Are you okay?

Gladis: I'm okay. But Mat isn't. You need to hurry up before it's too late. Her body is slowly giving in. Lali you need to save her.

Me: Yeah...I was about to look for her. And suddenly the room became windy. (I told her what happened)

Gladis: The Doruhr forest...Go there...I'm sure that happened for a reason.

Me: Okay...but where is it located.

Gladis: What? Are you kidding me?...you're the Adila . You can use your powers to find it . Now go...go.

(She hunged up. I looked at the page and read it . After that I went straight to the car.)

Tony: Ohh...wait Lali!

(His eyes were popped out)

Me: What's up dude?

Tony: Your face?...It's turning darker and it has visible veins .

Me: What? We need to hurry ...

(I got of the car.)

Tony: But where are you going.

Me: Follow me with the car.

(My voice was now deeper. I started running at a very high speed. I didn't know where my legs were leading me. Usually I would transform but this time I didn't. It's like I wasn't in control of my own self . I was running passing the trees. I could see them scratching my body but I wasn't feeling an pain. Finally I stopped in the middle of the jungle. It was very dark. As I was still catching my breath a very dark smoke covered me. I didn't hesitate I transformed immediately. It cleared. I saw a beast standing far from me . I ran towards it. It met me halfway. We started punching each other. She wasn't so strong so bringing her down was very easy. She transformed to herself. And held her neck. To my surprise it was Emilia. I transformed.)

Me: You?...what are you doing here?!

Emilia: I should be asking you that. This is my territory.

(I chuckled)

Me: You better tell me now where you held my friend captive before I rip your head right at this moment.

Emilia: I would like to see you try...

(We both transformed. As we were busy fighting. I held her neck with my fangs. She started moving but I never let go until she took her last breath. I transformed to myself. I could smell Mat's blood. I followed the smell. As I was going something tapped my shoulder. I turned back but there was no one. I think it's about time I make use of my powers . I straight away chanted the words deep from my stomach. After that I growled. The Adila powers were in motion. I saw an old man .)

Me: Who are you?

(My voice sounded two and was very deep)

" The Adila!...Finally. "

Me: And who are you?

" Well ...I'm Simon...the best and great sorcerer."

Me: Mm ...I see. Well I gotta go. I don't have the whole day.

(I started walking. As I was busy walking a very hot thing hit my back. My body shook. It was like I was just hit by electricity. I turned back.)

" I don't want to hurt you little girl. So i will be best if you give me your powers now. Before I kill you. "

(I chuckled)

Me: You do know that will never happen. I was chosen to be the Adila. And no one can take that away from me.

" Yes no one can take away from you. But you can give someone your powers. And if you give away your powers you will die. Of which is what I want."

(I laughed sarcastically)

Me: So that's what the old man has been thinking. That I will give you my powers. Well you can keep dreaming because I won't.

(He started throwing what like lightning to me. I

also attack him. Why is Tony not here as yet. Anyway we were busy fighting. He was now throwing dark big circles at me . When that circle hits my face . I immediately run out breathe. I was coughing very bad now. I held my throat. As I was trying to also attack him he threw a very red ball that looked like fire. I tried to prevent from reaching. He kept throwing them until one landed on my stomach. It was burning my skin so bad. I started cursing.

" Nice right...give me your powers now before you die."

(I sat down on the ground as I was enduring the pain. I pulled up my t shirt and yes my skin was bent. It was so painful. I slowly stood up. I immediately transformed and charged at him. He fell down. As I was about to bite his neck. I felt a very sharp pain on my shoulder . I turned my head and it was a beast. It had it fangs deep on my

shoulder . I turned and tried to push it away from me but it didn't let go. Tony made his way to us . He started fighting the beast. Finally it let go. My shoulder was bleeding so bad. I turned and saw Simon busy trying to run away. I ran towards him. Before he could even do anything to me . I dugged my fangs on his neck. The forest became more darker. I heard different sounds . It started storming and raining at the same time . He tried to chant some spells but I did let go of his neck. He was slowly losing his breath and more blood was flowing from his neck . I let go of his neck and transformed to myself .

" You ...you may ha...(He started coughing blood)
You may have killed me . But what's coming for you is more bigger than this . The end of your little life is near.

Me: You see that doesn't scare me. I'm the Adila. I can defeat and evil coming my way. Nothing can

harm me nor kill me.

(He laughed. He closed his eyes. As I was still looking at him taking his last breath. A strange thing happened to me . I held my head as I was having a headache . I sat down on the ground. I started having flashbacks. It was Austin and I. The headache became severe that I was struggling to breathe. I passed out.)

Tony's POV

I took Lali to the car and started looking for Mat. I could smell so many blood . It doesn't seem like Mat is alone he. As I was walking I saw four houses. They were a distance apart from each other. They had long walls. I made my way to one of them. Both the two doors were locked . I started breaking it . I got in. As I got in I saw Austin hanged up. He was covered in blood and was also passed out.

Me: WTF!

(I made my way to him. This chains are attached to the wall. There was a very big steel on my floor. It had blood i think they were using it to hit him. I started breaking the wall . It wasn't easy but finally the chains loosened. I took Austin and took him to my car. I did the same to everyone. They all had pulses besides Mat's father. Could he be dead?. Mat's heart was beating slowly like it will stop right at this instance. Well I started driving . When I got here I found out that when you enter this forest there is no way out. But I drove out of it without any struggle. Anyway I took everyone to the hospital. Nurses and doctors were giving me weird looks. I'm sure they're wondering why I have so many injured people in my car and am unconscious girl. Their wards were next to each . I was sitting on the chairs. A nurse made her way to me.

Her: We have started examining them. The old man is dead. The others conditions are very bad. The chances of them waking up are very low.

Me: And how's the other one ...the one that was unconscious?

Her: We're busy treating her wound. Was she involved in a fire?

Me: Fire?

Her: Yes...her wound looks very bad. She's in coma.

Me: Ermm...I have to call their families.

Her: And ...We will be calling the polices . They look very bad. I think this is a police matter. They look like they were kidnapped.

Me: No...No..let me call their families first.

Her: Okay.

(She went away . I first called dad and told him what happened. Since I don't have the Alpha's phone number. I called Ondreaz and told him. Well lucky enough he was at the Oegrate with the Alpha. They said they are coming right now. I went and

bought myself a coffee. The time was 5 am. Dad walked with with others.)

Kayla: Where are they?

(I stood up and showed them. She looked through the window of the door. She started crying.)

Kayla: Ohh my poor baby. Where is Mat?

(I showed her . I also looked at her. They were so many wires attached to her body. Strange enough I felt my heart break.)

Kayla: Who did this to them?!

(I looked at dad.)

Dad: They were kidnapped.

(Lali once told me that dad knows she' s a beast. So telling I told him everything that happened there. Since others doesn't know. That said we must tell them that they were kidnapped.!)

Kayla: Honey...you need to find them and kill them. They deserve to die. As we were still talking. The

Alpha and his son came to us.

Alpha: Where are my sons?!

Me: I pointed at the wards they're in.

(They made their way to them . After that the Alpha went straight to me and threw a punch.)

Me: WTF!

Alpha: You better tell me who did this to them.

(I cleared my throat)

Me: outside.

(We made our way outside. Ondreaz also came with . I told them everything that happened there. Ondreaz reaction didn't surprise. He looked happy. I'm sure he will try to kill Austin once again.)

Alpha: Simon?...Simon is dead?. ..but how?...how is that possible?

(Okay that I didn't expect from the Alpha. To be worried about villain instead of his own two sons.)

Alpha: You said Lali killed him?

(I nodded.)

Alpha: That girl. ..that girl is dangerous. I'm sure I'm next.

Me: Next what?

Alpha: Can you show me her ward?

Me: Okay.

(We went back inside. I showed him . Dad didn't let him in . The Alpha looked scared.)

Alpha: Ermm...I will send guards to make sure my sons are safe. I have to go.)

TWO DAYS LATER

Lali's POV

I know what happened. I remember every single thing. I was still in hospital. They said my wound isn't normal. When I was still in coma they said it

was expanding. But when I woke up it stopped. And it's healing. I visit Mat every now and then. Her and Tony have become close .The others are still in coma. Well I haven't visited Austin. I took a bath . When the water hit my wound. My whole body would shiver. After I was done the nurse got in and put a bandage on it. I put on my clothes and went to Austin's ward. I got in. I went to him and placed my hands on his face. One tear escaped my eye. They started flowing.

Me: Ermm...I don't know what to say. I know you were trying to help me regain my memories. Thank you. It shows that you love me truly and passionately. It shows that you care for me. I love you. I love you so much. Do you remember that day when you almost hit me with your car? (no response.) I know you remember. Do you remember when you helped me out. You're truly my hero. I'm nothing without you. So please my love wake up. Wake up for me and our future that's is still waiting for us. I miss you.

(I kissed him and wiped my tears. I decided to sleep next to him. I placed my head on his chest.)

Mat's POV

Tony got in. He was carrying a basket full of fruits and some snacks. I don't know what's happening between us . We have become friends. But I think it's more than that. Him and Lali has been with me ever since I woke up. They became my therapists as I was having a mental breakdown. I still can't believe my dad is nor more. Everytime I think about him. I end up crying. And Tony would cuddle me. He's a great friend.

Tony: How are you?

Me: I'm getting better....

Tony: I went to Lali's ward . But she's not there.

Me: She's with Austin.

(He kept quiet and looked down)

Me: Do you still love her?

(He smiled)

Tony: You know how love is. Yes I still love her and care for her so much.

(I don't know that someone broke my heart. I felt the urge to cry. No no o what's happening to me . Why would Tony loving Lali affect me.)

Tony: Are you okay?

Me: Yeah. ..yeah I am.

(He made his way to me . He wiped my tears. Silly tears . As he was busy wiping them my heart started beating fast. He was close to me I could also feel that his was also beating fast. His hands were so warm. Our eyes locked for some time until a nurse walked in. She cleared her throat.)

Her: Have you eaten breakfast ?

Me: Ermm...I was about to...

Her: Please eat so you can take your meds.

Me: Sure.

(Tony passed me the breakfast. I started eating .)

Nomhle's POV

I was in my house with Khule. Yes Khule. Somehow fortune favored me . Khule told me that he feels the same way about me. I asked him about the girl he told me about . Well his response was " I love her...and will forever will. But I also like you"... So I was busy preparing breakfast for us. He came downstairs and sat on the counter . After I was done I dished for the both of us.

Khule: Nice...

(As i was eating a phone call came through it was Kayla. Lali's stepmom. I answered.)

Kayla: Hey...ermm how are you

Me: I'm fine and you?

Kayla::ermm...not really. I was wondering if you know that Lali is in hospital.

Me: What?

Kayla: Yes she was admitted two days ago. Lately you and Lali has been very close. I think you should also go and see her.

Me: Okay...Which hospital?

(She told me)

Me: Okay thanks for letting me know. That means alot.

Kayla: I have to go now ...bye.

khule: Is everything okay?(His eyes were glued on his phone)

Me: Yeah...it's just that my friend Lali ...she's in hospital.

(He put his phone down)

Khule: Lali?...Hospital?...What happened to her?

Me: Do you know her? ...

(He ignored me and went upstairs. I followed him. he was getting dressed.)

Khule: which hospital is she admitted to?

Me: I asked you do you know her?

Khule: Can we talk about this later. Right now I want to see Lali.

Me: you don't even know which Lali I'm talking about.

Khule: Lalimi is a very rare name. I know it's her. Let's go.

(I took my bag. This thing of Khule knowing Lali doesn't sit well with me. How does he know her. Anyway I will ask him all that later.)

Please like and comment

I Will post again tonight.

[06/23, 08:22] Lynne: Insert 55

Lali's POV

After spending alot of time with Austin he still didn't wake up . But I will keep on visiting him. I heard that when people are in coma they can here you. So from now onwards I will make sure to visit him each and every day. I was now in my ward. I was just standing looking outside. The door opened. I turned. It was Khule . He didn't hesitate. He gave me a long warm hug. I flinched as I was starting to feel pain on my wound.

Khule: Sorry sorry.! Let me see?

(I showed him. He started softly blowing it .)

Khule: I'm sorry hey...this looks bad.

Me: I'm fine. So what brings you here?

(He looked at Nomhle than cleared his throat.)

Khule: Well...I have a new business I'm starting here.
With Nomhle.

Me: Mhh ...that's good. And you Nomhle...why are you standing by the door. Come and give me a kiss.

(She came in and sat on the couch. She doesn't look fine.)

Me: Are you okay?

(She looked at Khule)

Nomhle: Yeah...yeah I'm fine.

(I think there's something going on between them. I doesn't seem like they're only business initiatives. Anyways I sat on the bed . Khule sat next to me.)

Khule: So aren't you going to tell me how you got hurt?

Me: Well...it's a long story. And I don't think I want to talk to anyone about it.

(He held my hand)

Khule: I understand. So when can we go out?...Are you allowed to leave this place?

Me: Yeah...we can go tomorrow.

Khule: Sounds great.

(Suddenly Nomhle stood up and left without even saying goodbye. She must just chill. Khule and I are friends. And that's stay like that. Anyways we started talking about random things till it was dark outside.)

Khule: It's very late now...I should get going.

Me: Thank you for the visit

Khule: Bye.

(He kissed my cheek.)

Khule: Bye cute face.

(I laughed)

Me: Really?...am I really cute?

(He cupped my cheeks)

Khule: You're very beautiful.

Me: Ok ...thanks I guess. Bye my handsome friend.

Khule: Bye.

(He went out. I decided to call Nomhle. She answered and kept quiet.)

Me: Hello...Hey ...Nomhle?

Nomhle: Lali...

(She was sniffing)

Me: Nomhle?...Are you okay?...Why are crying.

Nomhle: I'm not crying.

Me: Come on ...I can hear you sniffing

Nomhle: I'm fine...(She cleared her throat) I was just missing my mom.

Me: Owhh...

(Why would she suddenly miss her mom. It's been a while since she passed on.

I think Nomhle she's hiding something from me.)

Nomhle: Ermm...I have to hung up...bye and get

Well soon.

Me: Tha...

(She hunged up.)

Mrs Kane's POV

My mouth has been tied up Eversince that day. My whole body was hurting from all the torture. So today the boss is back. One guy came into this room that I was at. He roughly grabbed by my hands . And took me out . We were walking up the passage. Finally we reached the top. He threw me on the floor. A man was standing facing the other side.

" I brought her boss "

(He turned. He was smoking and had a glass of whiskey on his hand. He was wearing a suit . He came closer to me. He looked so scary. He had a very dark aura. Looking at him just sent shivers on

my body. I wonder how Kayla was married to this scary man. He instructed the guy to remove the tape on my mouth. It was very painful. It's like he was peeling my skin off.)

Me: I mean no harm...I come in peace.

(He raised his hand. I kept quiet. I assumed that maybe he wanted me to keep quiet.)

Him: What do you want?(Well he had a strong Australian accent unlike the other guys. I swallowed hard . My heart was beating so fast.)

Me: Well...I know where your former wife is ?...K...Kayla.

(He gave me a dead stare)

Him: Continue.

Me: Well...She's in South Africa. And she's busy destroying my marriage.

Him: what?

Me: She has a son with my husband.

(He laughed and started strangling me . I coughed so much. His hands were so hard .)

Him: Who are you working for?...Who sent you ?(He let go of my throat. It was very painful.)

Him: I won't repeat myself again . Who the fuck sent you?

(I caught a breath than started talking)

Me: No one...no one sent me. Believe me.

Him: Why would I believe you. My Kayla can't have kids .

Me: What? No...no .that's lies . I can show you the pictures of the person I'm talking about. They're in my phone.

Him: And where is your phone?

Me: Back at the hotel.

Him: Get her phone. And bring a chair for me

(it was very cold. But what can I say. He sat on the chair.)

Me: Do you still love her...

(There was total silence after that. Yeah I must I have crossed the line.)

Me: I'm sorry.

(He just kept quiet and continued drinking from his glass.)

Me: Untie her hands .

(He did. My wrists were so painful . He gave me my phone . I started looking for Kayla's photo . After I found it I showed them . The picture it was her and I. After looking at it he stood up)

Him: Take her back inside. We will talk tomorrow.

Morning

Ondreaz's POV

I was in my house with Tayler. We were discussing how we're going to kill Austin. It's going to be so much easy since he's still in coma.

Tayler: So when are you going to do it .

Me: I would have hired someone. But they're guards ensuring his safety. And if I do it they will know .

Tayler: So what are you going to do.

Me: I will bribe a nurse to just switch off the machines that are keeping him breathing.

Tayler: That sounds like a good idea.

Me: I wonder why they didn't tell us this time. That they were going after someone.

Tayler: So you think they're suspecting us?

Me: Not a chance. We haven't showed them anything . Nor gave them a reason to doubt us.

(My dream are slowly coming to reality. My brother will dead. Father is next . I become an Alpha. I own all the family business myself. Well killing Lali I'm starrng to doubt it. She killed someone who was very powerful. Going after her will only lead us to

death. But I won't tell Tayler that. I still need him by my side. His dream of ruling the Drugiomin. I don't see it coming. I can't put my life in danger. I saw that dad doesn't like her. Maybe he's the one who will kill her.)

Tony's POV

I have been trying to call mom's phone yesterday. But she's not answering. I woke up and took a shower . I will call her again today. After I finished getting ready. I called her. Again she didn't answer. I called her again. This time around she answered.

Me: M..Mom?

Her: Tony my son...

Me: How are you. ..and when are you coming back

Her: I'm fine . Dear I will be coming home soon. The missing i came here to do is now accomplished.

Me: What mission?

Her: I will tell you everything when i get back.

Me: Okay...Bye .

Her: Take care of yourself bye . When are you going back home?

Me: I was thinking of taking my things and go back. (i cleared my throat) Since uncle has left the country)

Her: He left? Why?

Me: Well you know him...There were people after his life . So he had to go.

Her: Ayy he will never change. Bye son.

(I hunged up. I cannot tell her that I killed him nor she's dead. Mom is so intelligent. If I told her she would have figured out that I killed him. So it's better this way. I packed all my things . I will sell this house. After I was done I drove back home . They were having breakfast.)

Kayla: Son...You're back.

Me: Yes.

(She's so nice . I wonder why mom hates her so much .)

Me: I'm back to stay.

Zia: That's good . Because we were missing you.

Zayn: Yeah man...maybe later we can go and grab a few drinks .

Dad: Have you heard from your mom? She hasn't been answering her calls lately.

Me: I spoke to her this morning. She will be coming back home soon.

Dad: Ok...that's good. I have to go now.

Kayla: Sit down and eat. I will take your things to your room

Me: Thank you.

(I sat down than started dishing for myself.)

Lali's POV

I haven't forgotten what Tayler and Ondreaz did. They tried to kill Austin and for that they will pay. Ondreaz is evil. How can he try to kill his own brother. Just for what? ...for power. I was getting ready. Well Khule and I are going out for breakfast. I really need fresh her. Well I put on a Jean and a big t shirt. I don't want to hurt myself. After I was done I went to Austin's ward. I sat on the chair and held his hand.

Me: Goodmorning. I was hoping p
you would be awake by now. Austin why are you doing this? ...You really need to wake up. Anyways I'm going out. I will visit you later.

(I kissed his forehead and went out. Khule's car was already parked outside.)

Him: Hey .

Me: Hey bestie.

(He opened the door for me .)

Me: Thanks.

(i got inside. He also did. He started driving)

Me: So where are we going to have breakfast?

Khule: It's a surprise you will see.

(After a while we drove into a house.)

Me: I thought you were taking me out .

Khule: No...I prepares breakfast for you here. In my house.

Me: Your house?

Khule: Yeah...

Me: ermm ...let me call my mother and let her know. So she won't start panicking when she doesn't find me in the hospital.

(He nodded. Shit I felt my phone.)

Me: Can i use yours .

Khule: Sure.

(I called Kayla and let her know. We got inside. Both the interior and exterior designs are very beautiful. We got in they were rose petals on the floor. Ok. We followed them. They led upstairs to the balcony. He pulled a chair for me . The sun was hitting so nice here.)

Me: This looks good.

Khule: I prepared it.

Me: Really? let me eat .I'm very hungry.

(I started eating . It was very nice . His eyes were locked on me)

Me: Do I have something on my face.

Khule: Yes.

(I took a handkerchief and started wiping my mouth and face.)

Me: Is it gone.

Khule: No...I think it's permanent.

Me: What? ...what is it exactly.

Khule: Beauty.

(I laughed.)

Me: Really?...Thanks.

(I didn't expect that. He can be funny sometimes.
We finished eating.)

Khule: How about we watch a movie . I will take you
back later.

Me: ok..

(I took the plates downstairs and washed them.)

Khule: How about you prepare something nice for
dinner. Than we can watch movies. I have
somewhere to go to.

Me: Ermm...ok.

(He kissed my cheek and left . I started preparing
Stir fry and a grilled chicken. After I was done I
decided to do a tour of this house. I opened a very
big one. I think it's his. I switched on the lights.)

Me: WTF!

(There was my pictures all over the walls . Some pictures looks like were taken without me noticing . Why would Khule have my pictures . I went out of the room . I went to his office . It was locked . I looked for the key . I found it in one of the drawers in his bedroom . I opened and got inside . I started searching for a diary . Luckily I found it . I started reading it . I read from the date we were in Mauritius .

My brothers and I were out having drinks . When three ladies got in . My eyes were glued to that one girl . Her complexion was light . She looks like a coloured . My eyes couldn't move from her . When she started noticing that I was looking at her I moved them . Time passes her friends were all over my friends . I went to her . We danced . My heart was beating so fast . I have never felt like this . There was something about her . Her eyes . They were so

beautiful. Not forgetting her warm smile. We exchanged words and sat down . When she told me that she has a boyfriend. I felt my heart bleed. I felt it break into pieces. But I will never give up on her.

(My heart was racing right now. I was so confused. I thought he was my friend. He has never shown me that he loves me. I read the next page .)

Today I had a wet dream about Lalimi. I will send people to...

(As I was reading. I heard a car driving in. I put the diary back. I locked the I office and put the key back where I found it. I went

to the kitchen. He got in.)

Khule: It smells nice in here.

Me: Erm..yeah...I'm done c...cooking.

(I decided to drink a glass of wine.My voice was sharky .)

Khule: I bought snacks. We can now watch a movie .

Me: Sure.

(We went to a room that a big screen. And comfortable mats on the floor. We set down. I drank another glass of wine.)

Khule: Are you okay.

Me: y...yeah.

(Should I ask him? .No i shouldn't.)

Khule: So what type of movie you want to watch.

Me: ermm...Horror will be fine.

Khule: Nah...let's watch something Romance and paranormal.

Me: Okay...fine by me.

(The movie started playing. It was very awkward. Especially when the sex scenes play. The bottle of wine was about to finish.)

Me: Ermm...can I ask you something?

Khule: Sure.

(He gave me his charming smile. I cleared my throat.)

Me: Is it possible love a friend?...I mean the person who is your friend?

(He turned quickly. Yeah the wine.)

Khule: Ermm...I don't know. But my my friend is married to someone who was once his friend.

Why are you asking.

Me: It's nothing.

(He placed his hand on my cheeks.)

Khule: Talk to me . Why?

(I just kept quiet)

Khule: Do you also feel the same way?

Me: What?

Khule: Do you also feel the same way about me?

Me: I have a boy...

(He shut me up with a kiss. My stupid self returned it . After some time I stood up.)

Me: I think you should take me back to the hospital.

Khule: Let's have dinner first.

Me: ermm...you can

Khule: Dinner please before you go.

(I went to the kitchen and dished for the both of us. I was eating so fast. I want to be out of here right at this moment. I choked. He stood up and brought water for me. I drank it as he was brushing my back.)

Khule: Eat slowly.

Me: Ermm...I'm full now. Please take me back.

Khule: You had wine. I don't think the nurses will be

...

Me: no...I will drink water.

Khule: Come on ...you will use the guestroom.

(I stood up and went to the kitchen. I drank a glass of water. He wrapped his hands around my waist.)

Me: Show me the guestroom.

Khule: okay.

(He showed me.)

Me: Goodnight.

(I locked the door before he could even start talking.)

Mat's POV

I wonder who Lali went out with. Maybe she went out with him. She even left her phone. I wanted to tell her the good news . Austin has woken up. And he wants to see her.

Austin: How's Nick?

Me: He is still in coma.

Austin: Lali is not back yet?

Me: Yeah.

(I looked at the time. It was 8pm.)

Austin: Who did she go out with?

Me:(I cleared my throat) A friend. ..she went out with a friend.

Austin: Nomhle?

Me: Nomhle?...Yeah...yeah her.

(I can't tell him she went out with khule. Guys get jealous easily. So I don't want him to get mad.)

Me: ermm..let me leave you to rest.

Austin: Okay.

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:23] Lynne: insert 56

Nomhle's POV

Yesterday I went to visit but she wasn't in the hospital. Mat said she went out with a friend. As we were still talking Austin walked in. He asked me where is Lali because Mat said she went out with me. I told him when I last spoke to Lali. I also told him that maybe he's out with Khule . Well he became angry right at that instance. Mat kept giving dead looks . I'm sure Lali has something with Khule. Lali is so beautiful she can get any man she wants. But why did she choose my Khule. She has a very handsome boyfriend Austin. And yet she's busy with Khule. Anyway I woke up and took a bath. After I was done I got dressed than walked downstairs. I made a quick breakfast for myself. I than went to the office. Financially I'm doing great. My businesses are running smooth. I got to the office. Everyone now respect me. At first they were

like" We won't be ruled by kid . "

Lali's POV

I woke up and took a bath. I went downstairs. Khule was busy preparing breakfast.

Me: Hey...

Khule: Goodmorning.

(There was total silence after)

Me: Can you drop me off at the hospital?

Khule: Okay...let's have breakfast first.

Me: No...I really need to go now.

Khule: Is it about the kiss?

Me: Ki...kiss?...what kiss?

(I know about the kiss. It was a mistake .)

Khule: Yesterday...we kissed.

(I laughed)

Me: What?...why can't I remember. I must have had alot of wine yesterday. Anyways we're friends we're not supposed to do that.

(His face dropped. He started dishing up. After we were done eating he dropped me off at the hospital. I went to my ward. I changed my clothes.)

Me: Let me go and check up on Austin.

(I got inside his ward. He wasn't on the bed. As I was still confused. He got out of the bathroom. With a towel wrapped on his waist. His abs were out there . He looked so handsome. I threw myself to him.)

Me: Wow!...I know you were going to come back to me.

(I tried to kiss him but he pushed me and got dressed.)

Me: Are you okay?

Austin: Where were you yesterday?

Me: I was at a friend's place.

Austin: Friend?...Which friend?

Me: Khule...we met when I was in Mauritius.

Austin: Ohh ...so you spent the night with him.

Me: Yes ...he's my friend after all.

(He kept his face firm.)

Me: Why are you so angry?

Austin: You know when I woke up from the coma. I thought the first person I was going to see was you. I was very disappointed. And the fact that you were with a guy the whole night.

Me: I wasn't...

Austin: SAVE IT LALI! J ust save it.

Me: I don't really understand why you're angry. You know exactly that I love you with my whole heart. I love you. And only you. You and I are soulmates that can never be changed...

(Ondreaz and Alpha got in. The Alpha looked at me than he started sweating. He help his chest than set down. Austin went to him.)

Austin: Dad?...are you okay?

(The Alpha nodded. Meanwhile Ondreaz's eyes were popped out and glued on Austin. It's like he couldn't believe that he's alive . I stood next to him and whispered)

Me: Hey...are you okay?

(He didn't answer)

Me: I know that you and Tayler tried to kill Austin.

(He looked at me)

Me: And I'm coming for you both.

The Alpha: Can we have privacy as a family.

Me: Sure ...I will come back later Austin.

Khule's POV

After dropping Lali off I went back to my house. I went to my room. I was looking at her pictures on my wall.

Me: Why Lali? Why can't you be mine? ...I love you. And I also know that you love me . The kiss we had proved that you also feel the same way about me .

(As I was still talking to Lali's picture my mother called.)

Her: Lele!

Me: Mama.

Her: How are you?...

Me: I'm good.

Her: When are you coming back home?

Me: I don't know. Not anytime soon.

Her: Have you talked to her.

Me: Not as yet.

Her: You need to talk to her. I don't want to see you in that condition you were in. When Emihle rejected

you. You need to sit her down and let her know how much you love her.

Me: I will.

Her: Okay...bye my son. Hope to see you soon .

Me: Bye.

(My mother and I share a very strong bond. I tell her everything about my life. I also told her about Lali. I even showed her the pictures of her. She liked her. And she also complimented her. Lali is very beautiful. Her beauty attracted me. My phone rang . It was Nomhle. I ignored it at first. After that I decided to answer it)

Me: Ms Khumalo.

Her: Khule...hey.

Me: How can I help you?

(She kept quiet for some time.)

Her: I'm just checking up on you.

Me: Okay.

Her: I was wondering...if we can go out for dinner.

Me : ermm...I

Her: Please.

Me: Okay fine.

Her: At my house .

Me: Okay.

(She dropped the call. I like spending time with Nomhle. She's so bubble. Her beauty is nothing compared to Lali's.)

Austin's POV

I was really angry when I found out that Lali was out with a guy. I know she's very beautiful and every guy wants her. So I get jealous easily. But after talking to her . I felt less angry.

And the fact that she told me the truth. Anyway we decided to visit Nick. He was still in coma.

Me: He's strong. I know soon he will be breathing on his own.

Alpha: Yeah.

Me: Dad...it's all your fault.

(Dad's eyes popped out . I'm sure he thought I didn't know.)

Me: I know that you were responsible for Lali's memory loss. We all got hurt while trying to fix the damage you did. Why dad?...why did you do it? Knowing exactly that she's my mate.

(He kept quiet)

Me: Why do you hate her so much? ...what is it that she did to you to make you mate her.

(He went and looked out through the window.)

Me: Dad...she's so kindhearted. I don't understand why you would hate her.

Dad: Son...You won't understand.

Me: Make me understand.

Dad: Back then . Simon told me that your mate will be the death of me. He said she's going to kill me .

Me: And you believed him. Wow dad I thought you were smart. You know when he held us captive. He told me every deceptive things he has done. He even told me that he fooled you. He thought we weren't going to make it.

Dad: What?

Me: Yes...he said he wanted revenge. You all kicked him out of the Oegrate. He wanted revenge.

Dad: He broke the Oegrate rules. We had to banish him.

Me: Well...that doesn't matter now . He's dead .

(He chuckled)

Dad: Did she really kill him?

Me: Yeah...even though we didn't see her do it.

Dad: She's powerful and strong.

Me: She sure is .

Dad: Son...I'm sorry...

(Ondreaz cleared his throat. He's been quite that I forgot that he was here.)

Ondreaz: I have to go somewhere. It's urgent. I will see you all later.

Me: Okay.

(He went out.)

Dad: As i was saying . I'm sorry for everything. I have put you through. I let fear control me. I also trusted that scumbag Simon. I hope you find a place to forgive me.

Me: I forgive you .

Dad: I would like to meet Lali. Maybe let's have a dinner at the Oegrate than invite her over.

Me: She will be very happy. Thanks dad.

Mrs Kane's POV

Tomorrow I'm flying back to South Africa. Mr Elsome and I are on the same page. I told him everything and also gave him the address of where we stay. He gave me his number so I can keep him updated. About the venue and time of the wedding. Something is strange with him. He has the same eyes and nose as my husband. If I knew his older brother I would say it's him. But though he's surname is Elsome so that's impossible. When I told him about my husband his facial expression changed. Maybe he knows him or something. Anyway I was back at the hotel busy packing my clothes .

Nomhle's POV

I was done cooking and set the table. The theme was red and white .I went upstairs and took a very long bubble bath. After I was done. I put on my red silk sheath dress. I did my makeup and applied red

lip stick . I heard it draws the attention of a man very fast. I won't wear shoes so I went downstairs . The door bell rang. I opened it was him. He looked at me from head to toe. I just smiled.

Me: Hey...

Khule: (He cleared his throat) Hi...you're. ..you're looking beautiful.

Me: Thanks...please come in.

(I closed the door . We went to the dining table.)

Khule: It looks beautiful here. But not more than you .

(I blushed. We started eating . He would compliment me every single minute. We were now having a desert.)

Khule: Do you remember the girl I told you about...the one i told you i love.

(My heart started racing . I nodded. I did a little prayer." God can it not be Lali)

Khule: It's Lali. I love her so much.

(I felt like a bomb was thrown on my face. I felt hot and poured a glass of wine for myself. I gulped it down . My time preparing this dinner. Why why Lali.)

Me: Ermm...I think you should get going.

Khule: Are you okay?

(I nodded . He stood up and went to me. I stood up he wiped my tears.)

Khule: Why are you crying?

(Bloody tears. How can they embarrass me like this.)

Me: It's nothing please leave.

(He cupped my face and started kissing me . I kissed him back. I stop him)

Me: Why are you doing this to me. Why are you playing with my feelings like this.

(I was literally crying. He put my head on his chest.)

Me: Am I not beautiful enough for you to love him.

Khule: Hey...don't do that to yourself. You're beautiful. You're every guy's dream.

Me: But not you.

(He cupped my face again)

Khule: I like you.

(He smashed his lips on my . It was a very long kiss. He carried me and I wrapped my legs around him. He carried me to my room. When we got there. He started undressing me . I also did. I layed back on the bed. He went on top of me and started kissing me from neck to my belly button... No ...i won't let him play me again.)

Me: please stop.

Khule: Are you okay?

Me: Please leave

Khule: I thought you wanted it too.

Me: No please leave.

Khule: Okay.

(He got of me and started getting dressed. After

that he left. I went to the shower. I took a very cold one. I cried my lungs out.)

Me: I love him...why can't he love me back.

(After that I dried myself and took my phone. I called Max.)

Him: Hey.

Me: (i sniffed) Hi ...can I have it.

Him: Are you sure

Me: Yes

Him: okay i will deliver it to your house.

Me: Thanks.

(Well when I was still grieving my mother's death. Coke(cocaine)helped me so much . I quitted it when I was fine. But I need it again. After sometime my door bell ringed.i went downstairs.)

Max: Here.

Me: Thanks...I will transfer the money to you tomorrow.

Max: Okay.

(I took it and went to the kitchen counter. I poured it there. I went and took my purse upstairs. I took my bank account and started. Making it flat. After that I rolled a hundred rand. And started sniffing it . It felt so good . For a moment I forgot about my problems.)

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:23] Lynne: Insert 57

Lali's POV

I woke up and took a very long bath. Well Austin is going to pick me up . We're going to the Oegrate.

There will be a family and guess what I'm invited. Well I don't really know how I should feel about all of this. The Alpha hated me . He hated me with all his guts . Now he's inviting me for dinner . I hope he's not up to something. The wedding preparations are going very well . Mrs Kane is back. She's always happy and also looking forward to the wedding. She was also helping Kayla to choose the dresses for bridesmaids. After I was done bathing I put on my white swing dress and it was below the knees . I took a black hand bag and went downstairs. They were having dinner.

Dad: Pass my regards to Mat's dad.

Me: I will bye everyone.

(I told dad that Mat's driver will pick me up. Mat and I are going out. I haven't told him about Austin as yet . Well I was standing outside when Austin's car pulled up. I opened the door and sat on the front. He than drove off.)

Austin: You're looking good.

Me: Thanks.

(He held my hand.)

Austin: Aren't you nervous?

Me: About what?

Austin: Well...about meeting my family?

Me: Why would I be nervous?...Am I supposed to be
?

(He chuckled)

Austin: You're one weird girlfriend. A normal girl
would be scared .

(I just laughed)

Me: It seems like you have forgotten that I'm not
just a random girlfriend nor a random beast. I'm an
Adila.

(We looked at each other than busted into laughter.
)

Me: What? ...I'm not threatened by small things.

Austin: Are you calling my family small things?

Me: No...that's not what I meant...

(He parked the car on the side of the road.)

Austin: What did you mean than?

(Okay...what's with the sudden change of mood.)

Me: Ermm...I was just saying...

(Before I could continue he smashed his lips on mine. It wasn't a slow kiss but it was deep and passionate . He stopped.)

Austin: I miss you.

(I pushed him)

Me: (Smiling) please drive ! We're already late .

(He started the car . He was driving fast at the same time busy rubbing my thigh.)

Me: Are you okay?

Austin: You know I'm not...so don't ask me please.

(I just laughed. Alot has happened lately. My relationship with him moved so fast in such a way

that we mated on our first date. Maybe Simon messing with my destiny and also unmating us happened for a reason. I need to get my life together. Pursue my dreams. Be a successful person. Maybe we can mate again after all of that. After all he's my soulmate. I will spend the rest of my life with him. So we better not rush things. Khule has been sending me messages. The last one he sent in the morning was saying. " Have you remembered about the kiss..." . He has been sending messages saying how much he loves me . I don't know why he's doing this. He knows exactly that I have a boyfriend. I wonder what made him fall for me. Because we were good friends. Anyways we arrived at the Oebrate. I came out of the car. It was abit cold so Austin gave me his jacket. We went in. They were sitting at a very long table. There was different food placed on the table. We went in. Austin pulled a chair for me and I sat down. A women spoke)

" Finally they're here . Can we eat now. "

Austin: Ermm...mom...This is Lalimi...my girlfriend.

Me: Hello.

(She ignored me and started dishing for herself. Well she has an attitude. I'm not about to entertain her. Ondreaz wasn't present.)

Alpha: I wish my other sons were here. To have dinner with all of us.

(Nick hasn't woken up. But we still haven't lost hope .)

Alpha: So Lali dear...please tell us about yourself ?

(Dear?...I wonder when will people realize that asking someone to tell about his or herself really annoys. I cleared my throat.)

Me: I you already know me . I don't think there's a need for me to introduce myself.

Austin's mom: Where is Emilia?

(Was that even necessary. How can she ask that while I'm here. I looked at Austin)

Austin: Emilia and I broke up.

Mom: mmh...that's a shame. I really liked her.
Maybe you let your mate go?

(We all looked at her.)

Mom: Maybe she is your mate.

Austin: she's not.

Mom:And how do you know that?

(Austin kept quiet)

Me: Because I'm his mate.

(She started coughing. I think she choked. She drank water than stood up. She went upstairs. The Alpha followed her.)

Austin: I will be back.

Me: What?...How can you leave me here alone.

Austin: I need to talk to my mom

Me: Hello(I waved in front of his face) it seems like you have forgotten that I'm in a place of wolves.

Austin: You're the Adila...I'm sure you can take care of yourself.

(He walked away. I clicked my tongue. Whatever. Well I stuffed myself with food . It's been a while since Austin hasn't come back. I decided to call Mat . Mat's dad was cremated. I must say I'm proud of her. She healed so fast . She's a strong young woman.)

Mat: Hey girl. ..how is it going?

(I told her everything.)

Mat: What?...That's unlike her. She's the kindest of them all .

Me: Maybe I'm not worth of his son.

Mat: But you didn't choose to date him . Fate made you his mate.

(I just sighed)

Me: Are you in the hospital?

Mat: No...I went to visit him in the morning. I think I will stop now . It feels pointless. He's not waking up . I'm starting to lose hope.

Me: don't....he will .(Austin came down) I have to go now dear. Bye.

Mat: Bye.

(I hugged up .)

Austin: Come.

Me: Where are we going ?

Austin: To sleep.

Me: Oookay .

Tony's POV

I'm now back at home. I'm in my room. Addison was fast asleep. Her head was on my chest . I don't know what has happened to me . I can't stop thinking about Mat . Every single day. When I'm with her . I feel different. Everything seems right. When I hug her. I feel like holding her for the rest of my life . Her cute small eyes .

Addi: Why aren't you asleep?(Her voice was sharky)

Me: I'm having insomnia.

Addi : Mhh...sorry.

(She drifted off to sleep again. I took my phone and logged in on Instagram. I searched Mat and yes I found her. I started looking at her pictures. What am I doing? I closed my eyes for some time . I put addi to a pillow and went to the window. I opened it . It was cold but at this time I just need this coldness. Why am I suddenly feeling this way . What's happening to me . I decided to call her. It rang for some time . When I was about to drop it she answered.)

Mat: Tony?

(I cleared my throat)

Me : hey...

Mat : Are you okay?

Me: Yeah...I wasn't feeling asleep so I decided to call you .

Mat : Okay...

(if feels like I'm not in control of my own self.)

Me: how is Nick?

(She sighed)

Mat: He's still the same. I'm starting to lose hope.

Me : Nick is a very nice and strong guy. I'm sure he will make it.

(Well we talked for sometime.)

Mat: It's now 3am and we have been talking.

Me: Sorry hey...

Mat: No...it's fine.

Me: I think you should rest now. It's late.

Mat : Bye.

Me: Bye.

(She hunged up. I was smiling . I went to bed and slept.)

Alpha's POV

I don't really know why my wife doesn't like Lali . Yesterday Austin and I tried to calm her down . I went to the bathroom and took a bath. After I was done I went downstairs for breakfast. My wife, Austin and Lali were already there.

Me: Goodmorning everyone.

Austin: Morning .

Me: Did you all sleep well

Lali: Yes ...we did.

Austin's mom: Son...when is she leaving?

Austin: After breakfast....we're going.

Me: Please Lali...do visit us again.

(I have seen that Lali is actually a good daughter. She deserves to be with Austin. I mean she's powerful, Strong and beautiful . Having an Adila as a part of our family will very good. We will be

protected. Everyone finished eating.)

Austin: We're going now . Bye mom.

(He kissed her on her cheek.)

Lali: Bye everyone.

Me: Bye my daughter.

(Her eyes popped out.)

Me: What?...you're my daughter.

(She looked at me for sometime than they left .)

Austin's mom: You like her right?

Me: Why wouldn't I?

(She kept quiet.)

Me: My love ...Austin loves her . He loves her so much. They love each other. I have seen the way they look at each other. Can we not stand on the way of their happiness please. I tried to separate them . But look they're back together again. They belong together. J ust like you and I.

(She stood up and left. I need to find out . What's

really eating her. I know her. She's not like this .)

Lali's POV

We were on the way back .

Me: Your mom doesn't like me hey...

Austin: She likes you.

Me: (I chuckled) Really? ...but the way she was talking at the table doesn't show that.

(He kept quiet)

Austin: Let's check Nick up...than I can drop you off.

Me: Okay.

(We drove into the hospital. We went to his ward. When we got in it was dark . Austin switched the light on. The room felt cold . I felt the hair on my back stand up .)

Me: Can you feel that too?

Austin: Yeah...it's very cold in here but the air conditioning is off.

(We went to Nick . I touched his hand. Suddenly my heartbeat increases. I than have a headache.)

Austin: Lali? Are you okay?

(I was slowly losing balance. Austin took me . We sat on the couch.)

Austin: Drink water.

(I drank it with my eyes slightly opened.)

Austin: Don't close your eyes...please babe .

(After sometime I felt better.)

Nick: A...ustin..La .li

(We stood up so quick and went to him . His eyes were bloodshot red.)

Me: Nick?...Are you okay...

Nick: The..They...are coming for ...everyone.

Austin: who are you talking about.

Me: What? Who Nick?

(As we were still trying to ask him. His eyes popped out . He was looking at the corner. Austin and I turned but we saw nothing. When we looked back at Nick. Black liquid was coming out of his mouth. His eyes had blood. He was no longer breathing.)

Me: Nick...Nick no! .Call the doctor please.

Austin: Let's wipe him first.

(We did . After that we called them . They came and asked us to wait outside. There was something in Nick's room. I'm sure of that. Something very powerful because I wasn't able to see it . Nick said " They are" ...which means it's a bunch of people. Could it be Ondreaz and Tayler?... I doubt. But I will ask them. The doctor came out . We rushed to her.)

Doctor: I'm very sorry. He's no more. When we checked up on him . It seems like he died long time ago. His organs were even starting to decompose.

Me: what? ...but he spoke to us. He spoke to us before we called you all.

Doctor: I don't have a scientific explanation for that. But he's no more. Please excuse me . We have to

take him to the mortuary.

(The doctor left.)

Austin: It can't be...he spoke to us.. we both heard him right?

Me: Yeah...I'm also confused.

(We went to the car . He drove me home)

Me: I can sleep at your house if you want to.

Austin: no...I'm fine. I'm going to the Oebrate to get mom and dad.

Me: Okay.. bye.

(We kissed than I went inside. I asked the helping aunt)

Me: where's everyone.

" They all went out. But miss Zia is in her room. She's sleeping. "

Me: Is she okay.

" She has been feeling sick lately. "

Me : let me go and check up on her.

(My mind has been very occupied to even notice that Zia wasn't feeling fine . I went to her room. She was asleep. I sat next to her. Her face looked pale . Like she was crying. I woke her up.)

Me: Sorry.

Zia: It's fine (She sat up straight) I have been sleeping.

Me: Are you okay?

Zia: Yeah...I was just feeling tired. So I decided to sleep.

Me: You look beautiful.

(She chuckled)

Me: You really are glowing....did you somehow change your face cream.

Zia: No...I'm still using the same one.

(She really is.)

Me: Anyway. ..Let me leave you to rest

Zia: Bye.

(I went to my room . I called Mat .)

Mat: friend.

Me: Hey...I have something to tell you.

Mat: Okay...it sounds serious.

Me: Can you please come over.

Mat: Okay I'm coming. I will bring my clothes.

Me: Sure.

(They loved each other . And I'm about to drop a bomb on her .)

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:24] Lynne: Insert 58

Delayed post

Lali's POV

I have never seen Mat this broken. She has always

been a very strong girl. At this point I don't know how I should comfort her. We were on our way to the Oebrate for Nick's funeral. She has been very quiet. I cleared my throat.

Me: Are you okay?

(She was looking outside the window. She just nodded. I brushed her hand)

Me: This will pass too. You just need to stay strong .

Mat: You know...when I lost my mother . I thought about committing suicide. Eventhough dad was there but I just couldn't imagine my life without her. She was everything to me. Dad was there for me. We grieved together. I have now lost him too. When dad died I taught myself how to live with the pain of losing him. And now it's Nick.(She sniffed) . The saddest part is I didn't see him . I didn't even get a chance to say goodbye to him. He was such a good boyfriend.

Me: Nick's death took me by surprise. I thought by now I would have found the people that killed him)

(I did pay Ondreaz and Tayler a visit. I was suspecting that maybe they are the ones that killed Nick. I have tried using my powers to find out . But I found nothing. And it's starting to worry me. Anyways we drove inside the Oegrate. I parked the car . One lady came to us .)

" This way"

(We followed her . She took us to what looked like a cemetary. It was so full. We went and stood at the front. Nick's coffin was slowly moving down. After that it became very windy . I turned back and saw a men wearing all black. He was white and had glasses on. There was a lady and a men standing next to him. I felt my hair at the back standing up. Exactly how I felt when Austin and I were with Nick. All the wolves started roaring. It than started raining. Everyone was now going away. Mat and I followed Nick's family. Those people I saw made their way to a car. It had no number plate. It was making me very uncomfortable. It's like there's more about those people . Anyway we went inside. Food was placed on the table. We sat down. I

haven't seen Ondreaz . Could it be that he didn't come to Nick's funeral. We started eating. Ondreaz's wife got in.)

Her : I have been trying to call him. His phone is switched off.

Alpha's wife.: I have also been trying to call him. I wonder where he is...why would he not come for his brother's funeral

(Austin has been very quiet. He looks so broken and shattered. As I was still eating my phone rang...it was Gladis . I stood up and went upstairs . I went to a balcony .)

Her: Lali.

Me: Granny...how are you.

Her: I don't know.

Me: Why?...is everything okay?...are you feeling sick.?

Her: No...I can't really describe how I'm feeling. Lali there's something I need to tell you.

Me: Okay.

Her: You see...dear since your destiny was messed up...Things won't go according to how you were told.

Me: what do you mean by that?

Her: Well...whatever you were told about your life...it won't go like that anymore.

(I kept quiet)

Her: Like...maybe you were told that you were going to have a son...there are more chances that ...that will not happen. See Lali dear...Simon tried to change your destiny. By that he messed up so many things. So many things are...

Me: Hello!...hello!

(I hunged up. I think it's because of the bad weather. I went back downstairs. Everyone was done eating. They were just talking . I sat down next to Mat.)

Alpha's wife: So Lali tell me...what did you gain?

Me : Excuse me?

Alpha's w: What did you gain by killing my son. Why did you kill Nick?

(Everyone looked at me)

Me: W...what?

Alpha: What are you talking about?

Alpha's W: Yes...Austin told me what happened on that day. You killed him. He was fine until you touched him with your evil hands. You killed him you little witch.

Me: Austin...why would I kill Nick...he was so kind and supportive. He was friendly to everyone. Why would I even kill him. I didn't kill him. Austin tell her...tell her that I didn't kill him.

Austin: Lali...I think it will be best if you leave.

(He stood up and went out. His mother followed him. Instead of bring sad. I was angry. Angry at the fact that Austin wasn't saying anything. We were both with Nick that day. He saw what happened. Yes I did touch Nick. But that doesn't mean i killed him.)

Alpha: Ermm...I'm sorry about that.

Me:No it's fine. Mat are you staying behind?

Mat: No...I'm coming with you.

Alpha: Travel safe .

(My face felt so hot. I was very angry. I went to the car and started it. I was driving very fast.)

Mat: Don't you think I should drive?

Me: I'm fine.

(i continued driving. After a while i stopped the car. I went out and released a very loud roar. Mat and I changed the seats . She was now driving. I have never been angry like this. Is it because I love Austin alot. He was sitting there not saying anything.)

Mat: I know you didn't kill him.

Me: Austin....He...he

(I felt an urge to cry.)

Mat: he's still hurting about Nick's death. Forgive him. They were very close.

Me : I know but he could have said something.

Mat: yeah...that he was wrong. But forgive him. He's

still grieving.

(After a while we got home. I went straight to my bedroom. I took a cold shower as i was craving for blood. After I was done I put on my pjs and slept. As I was sleeping I saw those people I saw at Nick's funeral in my dream. They were standing and looking at me. After a while they started laughing. Their laughing felt so real. It was very loud that I held my ears. I felt someone shaking me. It was Mat. I slowly opened my eyes)

Mat: Are you okay?...

(I thought about the dream I was having.)

Me: Yeah...

(After that I couldn't sleep. So I decided to read the book that Gladis gave me. Mat has already drifted off to sleep. I read it until I reach the last page. The page was torn . How come?...Because if I remember clearly Gladis said I can't tear it off. I took it and put in the safe. I will ask Gladis about it tomorrow.)

Ondreaz's wife POV

I woke up and drove straight back to the city. Well I need to find out why Ondreaz didn't come to Nick's funeral. After hours I finally got to the city. I bought McDonalds and went home. I parked the car and went inside. I shouted :

Me: Hunny!...Hunny I'm home.

(Nothing. I went to the kitchen. I put the takeaways on the counter and went upstairs. There was a trail of blood on the floor. My heart started racing. I followed it. It directed me straight to Ondreaz's office. I went there with my heart pounding. Well it had been five days since I haven't seen Ondreaz. I left five days ago for Nick's funeral. I opened the door. I went in. I held my mouth as I saw Tayler on the floor. His head was separated from his body. The smell was very bad. Which means he was killed long time ago. I slowly closed the door with my heart still racing . I turned back and there was a

black liquid on the floor. It was also leading some where. I followed it . It led me to the main bedroom. The one that Ondreaz and I use. I opened the door. When I went in . I immediately threw up. Tears started making their way out of my eyes. I held my chest as I felt light my heart was starting to stop . My legs failed me . I fell on my knees.)

Me: No...this can't be.

(Ondreaz's body was cut into pieces. His head was hanged on the light. ***Were coming out of his mouth. The smell was unbearable. I stood up and went downstairs. I poured myself a glass of wine . I decided to call Austin.)

Him: Hey.

Me: A...Austin.

Him: why are you crying?...is everything okay?

(I told him everything.)

Him: We're coming right now.

(He hunged up . I started crying. Who could have done this. After a couple of hours. The Alpha, His

wife and Austin walked in. I showed them everything. Mom passed out. We carried her to the room downstairs. Austin started checking her up. After some time she woke up. We were all sitting on the bed.)

Alpha's W: who...who could do that to my son...we have just buried Nick...now this.

(She was crying.)

Alpha: When last did you see him.

(I thought for some time than remembered that . When I was going to the Oegrate Lali came here to see Ondreaz. I told them)

Alpha's W: I knew it....what have we done to her...Why is she doing all this.

(Austin became pale at the same time. He went out. I heard a car driving off.)

Alpha : Are you sure about what you told us?

Me: Yes...She said there is something important she needs to ask him.

(The Alpha nodded.)

Lali's POV

I was bathing and listening to music at the same time. My phone started ringing. I wiped my hands and took it. It was Austin.

Me: Austin.

Austin: I need to see you.

Me: Okay...

Austin: I will pick you up in 15 minutes.

Me: Okay.

(I dried my body and put on tracksuits. I went out . His car was already parked outside. I went in. He drove to his place . He looked very angry. He parked the car than we went inside. He closed the door behind him.)

Austin: wait for me in the lounge.

(I went there. I have never seen Austin like this. He came back with a bottle of whiskey and two glasses.)

Me: I don't drink whiskey.

Austin: Than today you will drink it.

(He poured for himself and I. He handed me the glass and I took it.)

Austin: Five days ago....you went to see Ondreaz right?

Me: Yeah...I had to ask him something.

Austin: and what's that

Me: I can't tell you.

Austin: mh... I want to know so please tell me.

Me: You won't believe me...

Austin: Talk.

(His voice was so firm and intimidating. I looked down.)

Me: well do you remember when there was war at the Drugiomin. And you were harmed.

(He nodded)

Me: They were responsible for that. They wanted to kill the both of us. So on that day I went to ask them...if they were the one's that killed Nick. And they denied.

Austin: Can I ask you something Lali?

(I raised my head and looked at him.)

Austin: If they admitted that they did kill Nick...were you going to kill them?

Me: Yes...absolutely yes...I actually wanted to kill them for trying to kill you.

(He stood up and went to the kitchen. I followed him. I hugged him from behind.)

Me: I'm angry at you...Why didn't you say anything to your mom...why didn't you tell her that I didn't kill Nick.

(He removed my hands and faced me.)

Austin: Ondreaz and Tayler are dead.

Me: What?...When?

Me: What happened to them?

Austin: CAN YOU PLEASE STOP ACTING. I know that you killed them. Why? Why Lali?...Why would you brutally kill someone's son like that .

Me: Wow. ..wow Austin. You know what bye

(I tried to walk away but he held my arm)

Austin: You're not going anywhere. Until you tell me why you killed them?...I'm even starting to think that you really killed Nick. I thought I knew you better. But it's clear I don't.

Me: Yes that's true. You don't know me. It's clear you don't. Because if you knew me well. You wouldn't be accusing me of something I didn't do . I didn't kill anyone.

(His phone rang . He went out and I heard his car driving off. I asked the driver to take me to Ondreaz's house. I went there. I got in . The house felt very cold. I made my way upstairs being led by

a trail of blood. I went to a room. It looked like an office . I saw Tayler's body in the floor after that I went to the room where a dark liquid was leading me to. I got in and the dream I had started playing in my head. Could they be responsible for all of this. But why am I not able to use my powers.

Mrs Kane's POV

I was in Zia's room with her. She has been very sick. That she was even vomiting. She came back from the bathroom

Me: How are you feeling now?

zia: worse...

Me: You have been sick for quite some time....don't you think you should consult a doctor

Zia: I'm fine mom.

Me: You have been saying that...but you get worse

every single day

Zia: Mom I'm fine.

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:24] Lynne: Insert 59

Lali's POV

This is getting out of hand. I was back at home with Mat in my bedroom.

Mat: Tomorrow...it's your birthday.

Me: Yeah...I thought I was going to spend it with Austin.

Mat: We need to find them. The people that killed them.

Me: I have been trying to think . I have tried using my everything. I can't seem to find out.

Mat: Who could it be? Maybe it's the Alpha's enemy.

Me: The most painful thing is Austin thinks I'm behind their murder.

(As we were still talking Zia walked in. She has gained weight. She's even glowing.)

Zia: Kayla is calling everyone downstairs.

Me: We're coming.

(We put on our shoes than went downstairs. Mat and I sat on the same couch. Tony kept stealing glances of Mat.)

Kayla: Lali...it's your birthday tomorrow right?

(I nodded)

Kayla: Since the wedding is in five days. Maybe we can take a mini vacation to celebrate your birthday.

Me: Ermm...That's too much. Like really. We can just have a family dinner.

Kayla: No...that's not up for discussion. Your dad and I have decided that. We have booked a private jet to Durban. We will fly at 6pm.

Me: I really appreciate that...but like I said . We can just have a...

Zayn: Come on Lali...we want fresh air. And some of us can get ourselves beautiful girls.

Jase: yeah man.

(I don't really feel like going with everything going on. I feel like I need to here. Especially since it's my birthday. I wanted to spend it at the Drugiomin. But what can I say. Kayla's word is final.)

Me: Okay...fine

Kayla: Now you girls go and pack your clothes.

Austin's POV

I was at Ondreaz's house with his wife. She has been crying since yesterday. I don't really know what to say to her. They loved each other.

Her: I have always admired Lali. I took her as my

own sister. And now she does this. How can a woman...especially a young woman kill someone like that. I have never thought Lali would cause me this much pain.

Me: I'm sorry.

(Mom walked in .)

Mom: She will pay. She will pay for killing my sons.

(At this point I don't if I should defend Lali or not. I loved her so much. But after what she did. I'm starting to doubt my love for her . Being an Adila is making her an coldhearted person. I never thought Lali could be the reason I lose my brothers.)

Alpha: What's if it's not her. We have enemies too.

Mom: I wonder how she has blinded you. You heard for yourself. That Lali was here. She is the last person who saw Ondreaz and his friend. I don't know what else I should say to you. So you can see that Lali isn't a good person. Just like her granny. She enjoys causing people pain.

(We all kept quiet. Father looked at her)

Alpha: Now I see why you hate her...so this is all about her granny?

(Mom stood up and went upstairs. Dad went out . I wonder what happened with Lali's granny.)

Ondreaz's W: You know...he used to warn me about Lali.

(I just looked down.)

Me: Ermm...Should I get you something to eat?

Her: No...I'm fine

Me: I will be back.

(I stood up and went to my car. I than drove off. I need some fresh air.)

Mrs Kane POV

I was on the phone with Mr Elsome.

Him: I have just landed. Which hotel is the best.

(I told him.)

Him: when is the wedding?

Me: In five days.

Him: The venue?

Me: I will send you the directions .

(He hunged up. J ust five days. Five days my dear Kayla. You came here thinking you can just take my husband from me. You thought I was going to keep quiet. I was having a glass of wine and packing my clothes. After I was done I went to the walk in closet. I looked at the dress I will be wearing on the wedding. It is perfect. Perfect for the events that will take place. I'm just hoping for everything to go according to my plan. I went back to my bedroom. I took the suitcase and went downstairs. I sat on the couch since I guess I'm the only one ready. It's now almost 6pm. Mr Kane walked in.)

Mr Kane: Hey.

Me: Hi...

Mr kane: Is everyone ready?

Me: I don't know.

(He went upstairs. Few days left my love. After a while they all gathered downstairs. We used different cars . We than got to the airport. We made our ways to the jet. We got in .)

Mat's POV

I looked at Lali. She didn't look well. Zia, Lali and I were sitting together. Well Addison has left. Her parents took her with . Since she has finished school.

Me: Are you okay?

(She shrugged her shoulders.)

Me : Hey...talk to me.

Lali: I don't know hey. I somehow feel like I'm doing the wrong thing by leaving. It's like I'm living some people in danger. It's like some one needs my help.

Me: I know that feeling too hey .

Zia: I feel like vomiting.

Me: Here drink some what.

(She did. There's something strange about Zia. She has been acting very strange lately. If she's not sleeping or eating she's busy vomiting.)

Me: How are things between you and Odin?

(She cleared her throat)

Zia: He's back with Avani.

Lali: what?...and what about you?

Zia: Remember we weren't dating. We were just having fun.

Me : But you love him right?

Zia: I did...not anymore. I want nothing to do with him.

(She said looking at her tummy. Lali and I looked at each other. After some time she drifted off to sleep. I whispered to Lali.)

Me: Could it be possible that Zia is pregnant?

Lali: No...I don't think so. I would have felt it if there was going to be a new baby in the family.

Me: are you sure?

Lali: Yeah...when kayla was pregnant. I felt it.

Me: Than why is she behaving like a pregnant woman.

(She shrugged her shoulders.)

Lali's POV

We finally landed in Durban. It was early in the morning. So we checked into this hotel. Zia, Mat and I were sharing the room. I took my phone and tried to call Gladis. Her phone rang unanswered. I will try her again during the day. Kayla walked in.

Kayla: we're going to the beach. That later we can have dinner.

Mat: Okay.

(She walked out.)

Me: You see...this trip is very useless. We should have just stayed at home and had dinner there.

Zia: Let's go ...before she comes back.

(We went downstairs. I was just wearing my denim pants and white t shirt.)

Kayla: Did you bring swimwear?

Me: No...

Kayla: Okay. ..you will buy one.

(I don't know. I wasn't enjoying all if this. We did go to the beach , museum and all those places.

Everyone looked happy but I just didn't feel like being happy.)

Sommer's POV (Ondreaz's wife)

We woke up and prepared to go to the Oegrate. Well Ondreaz once said that he wants his body to be cremated when he dies. We will do the same with Tayler since he has no one. Their bodies were took. I called the cleared company to clean all the blood. We were now on our way to the Oegrate. We finally arrived and did all the necessities. After that we had dinner. I couldn't really eat . I just drank a glass of wine and walked to Ondreaz's house. I don't really get this. And I will never. Nick, Ondreaz and Austin have their houses in here. Whereas the Alpha live with his wife in the mansion. I mean there are plenty of rooms in there. Anyway I got in and I sat on the couch. Austin walked in. He had a plate full of food.

Austin: I brought you this.

Me: you shouldn't have...I'm fine. I'm not hungry.

(He sat next to me.)

Austin: You need to eat. If you don't you will get sick.
We don't want to lose you too.

Me: At this point I don't have the reason to live. I
feel like there's nothing left for me in this world.

(Well Ondreaz and I didn't have any baby. After
trying alot to get pregnant and failing. We decided
to see a doctor. And I discovered that I can't have
babies. I was very heartbroken. I felt like I'm
useless to him. But than he supported me .)

Austin: Don't speak like that. You know when my
wife died. I also felt like that.

Me: How did you manage the pain of losing her.

Austin: It was difficult. But than Lali(He cleared his
throat.)

Austin: Eat before your food gets cold.

(I started eating.)

Lali's POV

I wish we could go back home now . We were having dinner. There was also a big cake on the table. We finished eating than they started singing " Happy birthday to you" . Well they did their small speeches. I wasn't really interested.

Kayla: Your gifts are at home.

(I just smiled)

Me: When are we flying back?

Dad: Tomorrow morning.

Me: Okay...

(Everyone was enjoying themselves. I went upstairs . I took my phone I tried calling Gladis again this time it took me straight to voicemail. I hope she's fine. The room became cold. I looked at the windows they were opened. I closed them. It felt a bit better. I went to bed. I looked at Austin's number. Should I call him?... i took a deep breath than called him. At first he didn't answer.)

Me: Hello.

(He kept quiet for sometime.)

Me: Austin.

Austin: Lalimi.

Me: How are you?

Austin: What do you want?

(I felt my heart break a thousand times.)

Me: Nothing.

(I dropped it . A message from Khule came through.
It was so long I just read the last part that said "
Happy birthday" . He called.)

Khule: Happy birthday to you(He was singing. I
wasn't really having it.)

Me: Thanks.

Khule: I was hoping that we could go out ...to

celebrate your birthday.

Me: I'm in Durban.

Khule: When you come back

Me: Okay...bye.

(I hunged up and decided to sleep.)

Please like and comment

[06/23, 08:24] Lynne: insert 60

Lali's POV

Today it's the wedding day. We didn't sleep a wink as Kayla mom wasn't feeling well. When we came back from Durban I called Gladis and we did talk. She told me she was fine and everyone else was . Unfortunately our conversation was cut by the network. But after the wedding is over I will go and visit everyone at the Drugiomin. I was done getting dressed. And my makeup was done. I went to the

room Kayla mom was getting ready in. I knocked and went inside. She looked so beautiful. The lady who was doing her makeup was almost done. So she asked her to leave us for a few minutes. I went to her and hugged her from behind.

Me: You look...breathtaking my dear.

Kayla: Thanks

Me: How are you feeling now?

Kayla: I'm feeling better.

(She stood up .)

Kayla: You know Lali dear...everytime when something bad is about to happen I feel like this. I just feel sick but don't know nor understand the sickness I have.

(I looked confused)

Kayla: Yeah I know...it's confusing right...I just feel weak and restless. You know when I was getting married ...I felt worse than like this. The night before I was vomiting blood and had a running stomach.

Me : I will make sure everything goes well.

(She sat down)

Kayla: Lali please promise me... promise that you won't tell anyone and you will die with what I'm about to tell you.

Me: I promise...

Kayla: Well the person I was married to was an Arnest.

Me: And what is that...

Kayla: I know it's going to sound weird but please don't freak out.

Me: Okay?

Kayla: He is an Arnest. He feeds on human. He is a combination of different creatures.

Me: D..Different creatures? How is that possible?

Kayla: Well he told me that...years back when him and his brother were still close. They got involved with dangerous people. Those people wiped the whole family up. They lost everyone in their family.

And the strangest thing is they died in a very strange way. Their skin would just become dry and black liquid would come out of their mouth. Than they will die. It was him and his brother left. The only option they had was to become Arnests so they can defeat those people. They were made Arnests.

Me: How?

Kayla: I don't know how exactly...but all I know is. it took them a month on how to control the Arnest powers. And another month on how to use them.

Me : You said dark liquid would come out of their mouth?

Kayla: Yeah that's what he told me.

(But Nick died almost the same way. Could it be that those people are responsible for Nick's death. I need to find out. Anyway that makeup lady came back. She did touch ups on Kayla's face . After she was done we made our way to the venue where the wedding was going to take place. My mind wasn't here. I was still thinking about what Kayla mom told me. We arrived a song " Here comes the bride "

Started playing. I was holding the tail of her dress. As we were walking to the front people were standing up. They were also throwing flower petals at us . Dad met her halfway. He took her hand and they both went to stand in the front. I made my way to the front. I sat next to Mrs Kane. She was holding Troy(Dad's son and Kayla)

Me: You look happy.

Mrs K: Really?

Me: Yeah.

Mrs k: I am very happy dear. Why wouldn't I be?

Me: No...I was just saying.

(Everyone was here . Except for Zia.)

Me: Where is Zia?

Mrs K: She stayed behind...she wasn't feeling Well.

Me: okay.

(The matrimonial started. Few verses were read. It was now time for the vows. Dad said the following while holding a pure diamond ring against Kayla mom's finger:

Dad: i know we have known each no for long. But I can write a book about you. You're everything a man wants. You're so kind , caring and loving. You treat my children like they're your own. When I first I laid my eyes on you. My heartbeat increased. I couldn't even here what you were saying. Neither was I able to remove my eyes from you. I just knew it that you were the woman for me.

(Mrs Kane kept checking time. It's like she's waiting for someone to arrive)

Dad : When we first met. We were both going through alot . Your smile and voice made me forget about my pain and problems. After sometime I couldn't get through to you. I was heartbroken. I

was also unable to stop thinking about you. But destiny brought us back together. We found each other. We expressed our feelings for each other. That's when our love story started. You're the best thing that has ever happened in my life. With this ring I promise to love and take care of you. I promise to make sure you live your life to the fullest and also support your dreams. Make sure you're always happy.

(He slid the ring on her finger. And kissed her. This man can't wait hey. Everyone laughed. It was Kayla's turn now.)

Kayla: I don't know where to start. (She kept quiet for sometime. It's like she was in some kind of pain) When...

Kayla's POV

I don't really know why I feel like this. Could it be that my former husband is here. Anyway I continued speaking. Just when I was about to put a ring on his finger. The hall became windy. The windows and the two doors started making noise. Everyone was confused. The weather outside changed. It started raining and there was storm.

"What's happening?"

"We have never seen something like this before "

"Let leave"

(People started talking to themselves. Some were leaving. I was having sharp pains in my stomach. Lali came to me .)

Lali: Are you okay?

(I nodded no. She brought me water. I drank it. Everyone had left. Kane was behaving strange. He was making weird sounds. Lali went to him)

Lali: Dad...dad are you okay?

(He didn't say anything . He was slowly moving towards the door. We all followed him. When we got out a man was facing the side. He was standing in the middle of the rain and storm. Just by looking at his back. I could see that it's him. Mr Elsome. My ex husband. I passed out the very same moment.)

Lali's POV

I don't really know what is going on . I ran to Kayla who has just passed out. Zayn and Tony took her inside. I stood a little far from dad. The clouds were very dark . The person who was standing there turned. When his eyes met with my father's. Something very strange happened . I saw two smoke like dark figures fighting. The storm was extremely bad . Things were getting worse. I didn't understand what was going on. I didn't even know how my father changed into that. Could it be what

my mother told me I was going to find out about dad?...what is he? . Things were getting very bad. I transformed and roared very loud from deep inside my stomach. The sky became clear. I saw dad and this man staring into each other. I transformed to myself.

Dad: What are you doing here?

(His voice sounded different. It was like a group of people said that.)

Dad: What do you want Stein?...

" I didn't kill you...because you're my brother. I came to take what's mine".

(Brother?)

Dad: What's yours?

" Kayla...she's my wife. I love her and I will forever will.)

(So that's Kayla's ex husband she was telling me about and he's my father's brother. Meaning dad is also an Arnest. Why didn't I see that... Now i know

why he didn't freak out when I told that I'm a beast. But if so ...if he's also a creature. Why did he kill mom. There is something he's hiding from me .They were still talking.)

Dad: You dragged me into your shit...because of your dumbness we lost out family members. Because of you I'm like this. I'm this thing.

" You had a choice.

Dad : Choice?...Don't fuck up with me.

Mr Kane's POV

This is the worst day of my life. I never thought not even in my wildest thought have I ever thought I would ever see Stein. I made an oath that when I see him. I will kill him. But I can't. He's my brother after all. The only person from my family that is still alive. But I will never forgive him for his carelessness. I hate him. He's the reason I became an Arnest. He got involved with the Lushiens. Those

people are very heartless. The saddest part is that they don't even touch you to kill you. They use their powers where ever they are. We had to defeat them or else we were also going to die.

Me: I thought I made it clear that I never want to see you...

To be continued. ..

Please like and comment

--Sorry my loves I will continue writing tomorrow. There is no electricity where I am and my phone battery is low. I will post tomorrow again.

Very sorry.

[06/23, 08:24] Lynne: Insert 61

Narrated

Everyone was now inside the hall. Kayla was still unconscious. Mat went home as Zia called her. She said she wasn't feeling well and was also unable to walk.

Stein: Listen here . Im here to take my wife with me . Dark or blue I'm going back with her.(He said that with his voice firm and Intimidating)

MrK: Kayla doesn't love you. She no longer loves you. She's mine and no one can separate us. You failed to take care of her. You cheated on her . You don't deserve her.

(Stein chuckled)

Stein: Says someone who was cheating on her wife . I don't have the whole day.

(He started walking towards where Kayla was laying . Before he could reach him Tony tried to attack him. Stein was too powerful for Tony. He

sent him across the room. Tony hit the back of his head on the floor. His head started bleeding than he passed out. Mrs Kane ran to him)

Mrk : (Shouting) Do not start something that you won't end. I'm warning you.

Stein: Listen here..dear brother.

Mrk: I'm not your brother . I buried you along with my family .

Stein: Bla bla whatever...Kayla is mine and she will forever will. I know you're weak. You have always been the weakest in the family. So your threats are just harmless .

Mrs Kane: This was not the plan. Look now you have hurt my son.

(Everyone looked at her.)

Mrsk: W...well...what..what I meant is...

(Before she could utter more words Mr Kane blew a dark smoke to her. When it reached her. She started suffocating and was barely speaking.)

Mrs Kane : H...honey...I'm sorry. I

(I was lights out for her. It was now Lali , Her father and Stein still walking.)

Stein: Impressive...I see you can still use your powers.

Mr Kane : Get lost before I kill...

(Stein laughed)

Stein: K...kill me . I know you're not capable of doing that.

MrK: I see you don't know me .

(Stein in a very high speed went to Kayla. He carried her bridal style.)

Mr K : PUT HER DOWN!

(He said that running towards him. Stein put Kayla down and met him halfway. They turned into the dark smokes again . The weather changed. It started raining so hard there was also a storm. After a while Mrk was laying on the floor with blood coming out of his mouth and nose .)

Lali: Dad...know that I'm not doing this for you. I'm doing it for Kayla mom.

(She than transformed and went straight to Stein. When she was trying to attack him. She transformed and started coughing as the smoke was suffocating her. As she was still trying to catch her breath Stein started blowing smoke on her. She flew across the room. Luckily enough she didn't hurt herself. She stood up and tried to gather her powers. Stein saw that and tried to attack again. This time he was himself. A large dark smoke came out of his mouth. It made a cycle. It was moving to Lali's direction. When It was halfway her. Mr Kane stood up and ran and stood in front of Lali. The smoke hit him. He fell on his knees and slowly lost balance he fell with his stomach. Lali didn't hesitate. She used her Adila powers. In less than a minute. Stein was strangled into death. Lali kept moving her hands as Stein was being strangled. He finally lost his breathe and died. Lali sat down and caught her breath. Tony woke up. He went to his mom still holding his head as it was bleeding. She wasn't breathing.)

Tony : Lali.

Lali: Let's take them to the hospital.

(They took Mr and Mrs Kane's body into the car and drove to the hospital. When they got there. Mr Kane was took to the examine room.)

>>Meanwhile Nomhle was curled up in a corner in her bedroom. She was shaking . She took her phone and called the person who was selling coke to her.

Nomhle: Ermm...Hey.

" You're now left with 3 days to pay. If you don't pay I will be forced to take major steps.

(Nomhle swallowed hard.)

Nomhle: Y...you will get your money.

" When?"

Nomhle: Ermm...I have taken a loan. They are still processing it. I will pay you when I get it.

" I will be waiting "

Nomhle: Erm...c..ca..can you please give me some. You will add on the amount I owe you.

(The person she was talking to hunged up. She had a very bad headache. She kept moving around. Not knowing what to do. The businesses have been doing very bad. She has also lost too many employees as they haven't been receiving any salary. She dialed Lali's number. It rang unanswered. Until she gave up.)

Lali's POV

We arrived at the Hospital. Tony parked the car and went to call the nurses to come with the stretchers. They came and took Dad and Mrs Kane's bodies. We followed them . Tony went to the reception to do the necessities

Nurse: please sit here . While the doctor check them up .

(I sat down . Tony came back.)

Me: Your head...it should get bandaged.

Tony : I'm fine...I'm just worried about mom. What happened?

Me: I will tell you after you have treated your bleeding head.

(Tony stood up and went to a nurse. The nurse took him in some ward. After a while he came back.)

Me : Is it painful?

Tony : A little...I have already drank the pills for pains.

Me: Okay...

(I told him everything. I decide to call Mat. I want to know how Zia is doing. It rang unanswered.)

Me : She's not answering.

Tony : Try her again.

(This time she answered.)

Mat : Where are you guys?... I'm at the venue where the wedding was taking place. But there's no one here.

Me : We're in the hospital.

(She kept quiet for sometime.)

Me : Hello...are you okay?

Mat : I will call you back. A black car just drove in.

Me: A black car...

(I thought of the one I saw on Nick's funeral.)

Me : Mat...I think you should leave.

Mat : Wait...let me go to them...

Me : MAT LEAVE ...NOW!...

Mat : I'm on my way to it . Wait a minute.

Me : MATILDA. PLEASE LISTEN TO ME. DON'T GO TO THEM.

Mat : Do you know them...

Me : I don't...but they could be the oppressors.

Mat : Hold on... I will call you now.

Me : MAT!

(She hanged up)

Me : She never listens . She's too stubborn. Tony I

will be back right now.

(As I stood up the doctor came out. We went to him)

Doc : Ermm...Mr Kane is out of danger . But his body is not responding. His whole body has stroke.

Me : What?

Tony : And mom?... Mrs Kane.

(The doctor looked down. I did a very short prayer. I know she hates me and all. I also know that she was responsible for what happened. But I don't want anything to happen to her. The doctor cleared his throat.)

Doc : unfortunately...when she came here. She was already dead. But we're unable to find nor see the cause of death. But we're still doing tests. I'm very sorry.

(I looked at Tony. His facial expression showed pain. Tears were forming. I brought him close to me and hugged him. He let it all out. It's really painful. Tony is not a person who shows his

emotions. He than let go.)

Me : And K..Kayla...

Doc : She's fine. It seems she had a heart attack.
And her pulse is very weak. Can I go now?

(I nodded. As I was about to sit down. A man came out another ward. He was wearing all black and had a black mask on. He was also carrying a briefcase. I don't know but I felt my fangs coming out. As he was walking he left drops of blood on the floor. The blood was coming out of his briefcase. I stood up.)

Me : T...Tony can you see that?

Tony : What?

(I pointed on the floor and the guy.)

Me : B...Blood.

Tony : Blood?...what blood?

Me : There Tony...there's blood.

Tony : (Calmly said) Lali please...it's not funny. I'm not in the mood.

(He than stood up and went out. Am I seeing things again. But there's blood there. I went to the ward that men came out from. I opened the door and went in. And Zia was laying on the bed.)

Me : ZIA!

(I went to her. I held her hand trying to check her pulse. She moved and opened her eyes.)

Me : Z...Zia are you okay?

Zia : L...Lali w..we all going to d...

(Blood came out of her eye as a tear.)

Zia : Die.

(She said that and a dark liquid started coming out of her mouth.)

Me : NO...NO NOT YOU AGAIN.! ZIA PLEASE DON'T CLOSE YOUR EYES. PLEASE DON'T LEAVE.

(I said that trying to wipe her mouth. But she indeed closed her eyes. A sob escaped my mouth. Suddenly the room started becoming windy. And it blew a sheet that was covering Zia's body. And her stomach was opened. She had nothing inside. No

intestines. Nothing. I held my mouth. And screamed my lungs out. As I was sitting down. There was a glass of water near the window. It started shaking it fell on the floor and broke. I went to the window. And the same guy was standing outside. He was looking straight at me. He smirked than got inside his black car and drove off. I didn't hesitate. I went to the exit door. I went to our car. Luckily the key was on my pocket. I started the car and drove after the car. I was following it)

Me : I'm coming for you ...you motherfucker.

(We were on the high way. I was following it. My mind was filled with all the closest people to me I have lost. I took my phone and tried to call Austin . I was in tears . He answered.

Him : I'm in a meeting. What do you want?

Me : A..Aust...

Him : I will get back to you.

(He hunged up. I tried to call him again . His number was now taking me straight to voicemail.)

Me : He switched it off.

(I followed this car. I don't know but a flash of thought came into my mind. I thought of Gladis. I don't know but I felt an urge of seeing her. It's like my heart was missing her.)

Me : I will call her later.

(The car slowing down. I drove next to it as we weren't on the busy road now. I lowered my window. I couldn't see inside of it as the windows were dimmed. I started hooting . The window was slowly going down. He was concentrating on his driving. I kept hooting. He turned. Our eyes met. I don't know what happened to me. It's like my whole body couldn't move. The car was also loosing control. I looked at him again unable to do anything. He smirked and drove off. As he was driving off everything went back to normal. I followed him. I

